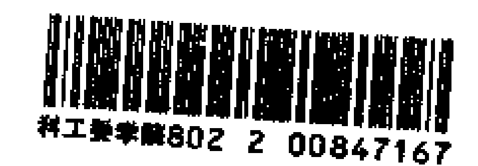
翻译的技巧

THE TECHNIQUE OF TRANSLATION

钱 歌 川 编 著







翻譯的技巧

THE TECHNIQUE OF TRANSLATION

by

Chien Gochuen

錢歌川編著



中国对外翻译出版公司

1980·北京

翻 译 的 技 巧

钱歌川编著

中国对外翻译出版公司影印、发行

北京 太平桥大街4号

顺义大营印刷厂印刷

787×1092 1/32. 18 8/32 印张

1984年11月北京印刷

定价：2.00元

序

這本小著前後寫了十年之久，在我七十生辰的當月，總算全部脫稿，可以付諸剞劂了。

我開始在大學裏教翻譯課，是在國立臺灣大學，後來因移硯他校，停了一個相當長久的時期，直到一九六四年應聘南來星洲，先在義安學院，繼在新加坡大學，今在南洋大學，每年都教翻譯，而且成了我的專科。在海外和在國內，教翻譯是不同的。因爲國內的大學，是把這門課開設在外文系裡，而且是高年級才有的，可是在星洲，翻譯是中文系的課程，各年級都有，這當然是爲配合當地需要的緣故。國內把這門課開設在外文系，教的人比較不大吃力，星洲因爲是中文系的課程，教時就比較要困難些。大家都知道在我國或星洲，談到翻譯，大抵是指中英對譯。中文是我們的母語，無論如何，總比英文要好得多，所以學生到了外文系三、四年級時，英文也學到了相當的程度，可以自由表達了，這時來學翻譯，無論是中譯英或英譯中，都能寫出通順的文字來，問題只在對內容的含義，可能有譯得不恰當的地方。在星洲的情形可不同了，因爲讀中文系的同學，英文好的不多，教翻譯的人，先得講解英文，事倍功半。

本書除第三編的一小部分外，其餘都是在星洲寫成的。九年來不斷地加以增補修訂，始有今日的面貌。當然我不敢自詡內容已臻完善，不過我已盡了最大的努力，使之切合學生的需要，可以作爲翻譯教本。第一篇教學生用各種各樣的英文句型來翻譯，使之熟悉英文的寫法，以補救英文較差的缺憾。如每週三小時，兩小時講解，一小時練習，本編是足夠一年之用的，第一編所注重的是中譯英，而第二編則把重點移到英譯中的上面，分門別類的介紹英文的慣用句，各種特殊的表現法，除加上適當的漢譯外，並詳爲解說，每種句法皆附有習題，以供練習之用。學生學完一種表現法後，即進行習題翻譯，如此一再實驗，定能有所心得。第

二編的內容也超過可供每週三小時用一年的教材。以上兩個年度的教程，仍不外是奠定基礎的準備工作，要到第三年才正式進入實際翻譯的階段。

第三編的主體爲長篇的中譯英和英譯中，這便是我們通常所遇到的翻譯材料。除此以外，另備一些可供講解的教材，以助學習。在第三編的頭上，有英文類似句的硏究，又有容易譯錯的文句及其正確譯法，這些都是極有用的資料，不易蒐集到的。在長篇翻譯的教材中，中文方面有淺近的白話，和艱深的文言。在翻譯文言文的時候，必須有一番準備工夫，譯者得先把文言譯成白話，然後才好譯成英文，否則難免差誤。在英譯中方面，則未採用古文，完全選的近代人的作品，內容也不限於文藝方面，而包含哲學，政治，語文，人生問題，原子彈的恐怖，甚至局外人對越戰的看法等各方面，以便譯者可接觸到英文表現的各種面貌。書末附錄現在生存的英美名家代表作的節譯，更可看出現代英文的趨勢，並得以此爲踏脚石，進而直接閱讀現代文學名著。

過去出版的有關翻譯的書，無論中外，大都是講理論的，偶有談實際的也只是擧出幾個例子而已。像本書這樣有系統，有方法，來硏究翻譯的書，似乎還不多見，也可說是破天荒之擧，如能對初學者有所裨益，則編者多年的辛勞就得到酬報，而感到滿足了。書中錯誤，在所不免，仍希讀者，不吝指正。

一九七二年春 歌川識於南洋大學

目　次

附 錄：

第 一 編

漢譯英與英文句型

壹、由要素來分的造句

(1) 漢文易寫英文難通

漢譯英必須採用英文的句法，來表達漢文的意念，不可照漢文直譯，如照漢文的句法直譯，則譯出來的不像英文。爲避免寫成中國式的英文，首先就要把英文的一些基本句型學會，而且要記在心上，當我們動手翻譯時，便能運用自如，隨便採用那種句型，都合乎英文的慣用句法了。

我們既能說中國話，又能讀中國文，在翻譯上對於漢文方面是不會有很多困難的，問題只有英文這一方面，因此我們在漢譯英的時候，還是要從英文着手，要把寫作英文的基本句型，來作爲翻譯的工具。

現在我們先來學會以要素爲主的五種英文的句型，作爲學習翻譯的第一步。因爲任何英文句子，總不外是這五種句型當中的一種，現代英文是沒有第六種句型的。這五種句型是由動詞的不同而分別出來的，所以我們在研究五種句型之前，要先把英文動詞的種類搞淸楚一下。

五種句型是以要素(element)來分的，那麼在英文句子中有些什麼要素呢？那一共有四個要素，即主語(Subject)，述語(Predicate)，賓語(Object)，補語(Complement)。任何一個句子，必須有主語和述語。另外一些句子，除主語述語外，還有賓語或補語，或賓語補語同時都有。決定一個句子是不是要有賓語補語的，就在動詞，而且動詞是兩個基本要素當中的一個。所謂述語，原是敘述一件事物的動作或狀態的，結局就是動詞。這是任何一個句子非有不可的基本因素。學英文把動詞的用法學

會了，英文就學通了十分之八、九了。

(2) 動詞的種類和變化

一個英文動詞本身雖只有現在形、過去形、過去分詞形和現在分詞形四種形式，例如「看見」這個動詞，則有 see, saw, seen, seeing 四個不同的變化，但這四種形式運用起來，也可變出十六種不同的時態，即

1. He sees (現在)
2. He saw (過去)
3. He has seen (現在完成)
4. He had seen (過去完成)
5. He is seeing (現在進行)
6. He was seeing (過去進行)
7. He will see (現在推量)
8. He would see (過去推量)
9. He has been seeing (現在完成進行)
10. He had been seeing (過去完成進行)
11. He will have seen (現在完成推量)
12. He would have seen (過去完成推量)
13. He will be seeing (現在進行推量)
14. He would be seeing (過去進行推量)
15. He will have been seeing (現在完成進行推量)
16. He would have been seeing (過去完成進行推量)

這便是英文動詞的變化和用法。奇數是現在，偶數是過去。所謂「完成」是英文特有的動詞時態，它本身又有現在、過去、未來之分，現在完成所代表的時態，是從過去到現在，過去完成是指過去的過去，未來完成是說未來的過去。所謂「進行」是眞正的現在，卽正在進行中的動作，英文的現在時態，只是一種經常的現象而已。所謂「推量」卽指未來的事現在加以預測，並不怎樣確實的。

所謂現在、過去、未來三種基本的時態，每種又包含得有單純的，以前的，以後的三個時期，現舉例說明如下：

I. PRESENT

1. Simple present:

   I take three meals a day.

2. Before-present:

   I have finished my meal.

3. After-present:

   I am about to start my meal.

II. PAST

1. Simple past:

   Last Wednesday at two o'clock my plane left.

2. Before-past:

   Last Wednesday at two o'clock I had just returned from London.

3. After-past:

   Last Wednesday at two o'clock I was about to give my speech.

III. FUTURE

1. Simple future:

   Next Wednesday at two o'clock I will land at New York.

2. Before-future:

   Next Wednesday by two o'clock I will have landed at New York.

3. After-future:

   Next Wednesday at two o'clock I will be about to land at New York.

再就性質來說，英文動詞又可大別爲兩類：自動詞 (Intransitive Verb) 和他動詞 (Transitive Verb)。自動詞是說明主語的動作或狀態的，它自身已能完成一個意念，不必要補足什麼要素，而成爲一個完整的動作。例如唐詩人賈島的名句：

「鳥宿池邊樹，
僧敲月下門。」

譯成英文時，便是

Birds dwell in a tree by the pond.

A *monk knocks* at the door under the moon.

又如，

「皓月當空。」

The *moon shines* brightly.

「凉風起天末。」

A cool *breeze sprang* up in the sky.

「日出於東而落於西。」

The *sun rises* in the east and *sets* in the west.

「到了春天美麗的花朵開遍原野。」

In spring beautiful *flowers bloom* in the open country.

「我今天覺得好多了。」

I feel much better today.

「我對他那貴重的援助非常感謝。」

I am deeply indebted to him for his valuable assistance.

在以上例句中有主語 Birds 及其述語 dwell
在以上例句中有主語 monk 及其述語 knocks
在以上例句中有主語 moon 及其述語 shines
在以上例句中有主語 breeze 及其述語 sprang
在以上例句中有主語 sun 及其述語 rises
在以上例句中有主語 sun 及其述語 sets
在以上例句中有主語 flowers 及其述語 bloom
在以上例句中有主語 I 及其述語 feel
在以上例句中有主語 I 及其述語 am

前七例是說明主語的動作的，後二例是說明主語的狀態的。

他動詞就不同了，若單說 have, make 等字時，意念是不完全的，必得再加上賓語，才能表出一個完全的意念，例如：

「我在新加坡有許多熟人。」

I have many *acquaintances* in Singapore.

「我早已跟他結識了。」

I made his *acquaintance* long ago.

「我害了重傷風。」

I have taken a bad *cold*.

「我帶着照相機到檳城去玩了一星期。」

I made a week's *trip* to Penang with my camera.

所有的他動詞都要有賓語，否則不成句，因爲他動詞沒有賓語就不能表示出一個完全的意念來，上舉四例：

主語	述語	賓語
I	have	acquaintances
I	made	acquaintance
I	have taken	cold
I	made	trip

這兩種動詞又可以再細分爲四種，卽：完全自動詞(Complete Intransitive Verb) 與不完全自動詞 (Incomplete Intransitive Verb)；完全他動詞 (Complete Transitive Verb) 與不完全他動詞 (Incomplete Transitive Verb)。現在分別舉例說明如下：

完全自動詞本身已能表示一個完全的意念，無須再加補語，例如

「昨夜下了大雨。」

It rained heavily last night.

「一輪明月在東方昇起。」

A beautiful *moon has risen* in the eastern sky.

「在晴天衆鳥歡鳴。」

In fine weather *birds sing* merrily.

在以上各例句中除主語和述語外，便沒有其他的要素了，那就是說，沒有賓語或補語，有的只是無關重要的形容詞，副詞，或形容詞片語，副詞片語之類罷了。如第一句中的 heavily 是副詞，last night 是副詞片語。第二句中的 a 和 beautiful 是形容詞，in the eastern sky 是副詞片語。第三句中的 in fine weather 是副詞片語，merrily 是副詞。這些都是修飾語，不是文句不可缺少的要素。所以這種完全自動詞的句

子，在語言學上稱爲 favourite sentence（最普通的句子）．因爲它只需要「動作者＋動作」就行了。

不完全自動詞本身不能表出一個完全的意念，必須補上另外的字才能成句。你單說 He is，即「他是」，聽者必然要問「他是什麼」？又如你說 He becomes，即「他變得」，聽者必然要問「他變得怎樣了」？我們如果在這兩種說法的後面，加上 rich 一字，意念便完全了。即變成 He is rich.「他是有錢人」。He becomes rich.「他變得有錢了」。這個 rich 的字，在文法上就叫做**補語**。又因爲這是補足主語的意味的，所以稱爲**主格補語**（Subjective Complement）。加上補語的不完全自動詞，便能表示出一個完全的意念來了。

「他是一位教師。」

He is a *teacher*.

「他好像很誠實的樣子。」

He seems quite *honest*.

「他直到最後都是很忠實的。」

He remained faithful to the last.

「天氣變得很熱了。」

It has become much *warmer*.

「她漸入老境。」

She is growing (or *getting*) *old*.

「那謠言證實了。」

The *rumour proved true*.

「霜葉紅於二月花。」

The frosted maple *leaves have turned red*, much redder than the flowers in spring.

在上面的例句中，有三個要素，舉出如下：

主語	述語	補語
He	is	teacher
He	seems	honest
He	remained	faithful
It	has become	warmer

She	is growing	old
rumour	proved	true
leaves	have turned	red

完全他動詞是不要補語的，但它非有賓語不可。有時採用一個賓語，有時採用兩個賓語。先看採用一個賓語的造句。這是任何他動詞都可以用的，只要有賓語，就可造出一個句子來，別的字多也無用。

「樹大招風。」

Tall *trees catch* much *wind.*

「我們每天學英語。」

We study English every day.

「我昨天在理髮店遇見他。」

I met him at the barber's yesterday.

「他的法國話比英語說得好。」

He speaks French better than *English.*

在上面的例句中，有三個要素，舉出如下：

主語	述語	賓語
trees	catch	wind
We	study	English
I	met	him
He	speaks	French; English

採用兩個賓語的完全他動詞，又叫做授與動詞 (Dative Verb)。這是由「授物與人」(give something to a person)或「授人以物」(give a person something)的基本觀念而產生的。這個「人」與「物」，都是句子當中的賓語，所以就變成一個句子有兩個賓語了。通常「物」是直接賓語 (Direct Object)，「人」是間接賓語 (Indirect Object)，因為眞正給的是物，接受那物的才是人。

「把貨物交給我，我就會付你錢。」

Give *me* the *goods*, and I will give *you* the *money.*

「她問那孩子叫什麼名字。」

She asked the *boy* his *name.*

「醫生不許他的病人喝酒。」

The doctor forbade his *patient wine.*

「我羨慕你的健康。」

I envy *you* your good *health.*

「請你幫我一個忙好嗎？。」

Will you do *me* a *favour?*

「付一塊錢給車夫。」

Pay the *driver* one *dollar.*

「他們對我們並無惡意。」

They meant *us* no *harm.*

通常是把間接賓語放在直接賓語之前，如果為加強語氣等原因而把直接賓語放到前面去的話，就要在間接賓語前加介詞 to, for, of 等而做成一個片語，例如：

「我寄了一封信給她。」

I sent *her* a *letter.*=I sent a letter *to* her.

「我為她買了一襲新衣。」

I bought *her* a new *dress.*=I bought a new dress *for* her.

「我想求你一件事。」

I wish to ask *you* a *favour.*=I wish to ask a favour *of* you.

這樣一來，採用兩個賓語的授與動詞，就變成採用一個賓語的普通動詞了。句中的 to her, for her, of you, 都是介詞的片語，等於一個形容詞的作用。不過有人還是把它視為兩個賓語的句子。

單有賓語還不能表示一個完全的意念，必得再加以補語的，便是不完全他動詞。這種動詞含有使動的作用，是有所作為的，所以又稱為作為動詞 (Factitive Verb)。例如：

「他使父母快樂。」

He *made* his *parents happy.*

「總統任命他為將官。」

The president *made him* a *general.*

結果是父母感到快樂(His parents were 〔*or* became〕 happy.)，那人成為將軍 (He was 〔*or* became〕 a general.)，這都不外是那動詞有所作

爲的結果。第一句中的 happy是形容詞補語 (Adjective Complement), 第二句中的 general 是名詞補語 (Noun Complement), 二者都是補足句中的賓語的, 所以就叫作**賓格補語**(Objective Complement), 跟上面說過的主格補語不同。

英文的動詞, 自動或他動, 完全或不完全, 都不是固定不移的, 任何一個動詞, 常有變化發生, 一定要看它用在什麼句子中, 才能確定它的性質乃至它的意義。例如:

(a) 「駝鳥不能飛。」
The ostrich cannot *fly*. (這個 fly 是自動詞)。

(b) 「我會放風箏。」
I can *fly* a kite. (這個 fly 是他動詞)。

同是一個自動詞, 也有完全及不完全兩種用法, 例如:

(a) 「車輪徐轉。」
The wheels are *turning* slowly. (這個 turn 是完全自動詞)。

(b) 「樹葉轉黃。」
The leaves are *turning* yellow. (這個 turn 是不完全自動詞)。

同是一個他動詞, 也有完全及不完全兩種用法, 如

(a) 「我們用葡萄造酒。」
We *make* wine from grapes. (這個 make 是完全他動詞)。

(b) 「把你的故事說得有趣一點。」
Make your story interesting. (這個 make 是不完全他動詞)。

又如

(a) I *think* it is right. (完全他動詞)。

(b) I *think* it right. (不完全他動詞)。

英文的自動詞照規矩是不能接上一個賓語的, 不過有時用一個介詞爲媒介, 也可以接用賓語, 如

「人人都笑我。」
Everybody laughed *at* me.

「思君令人老。」
To think *of* you makes me old.

(3) 動詞與五種句型

所有的英文句子，歸納起來，不過五種句型構造，即是

1. 第一句型的自動構造 (Intransitive Construction)。

這需要用四種要素中的兩種基本要素：

"Subject + Predicate"

例句：「車輪轉動。」

Wheels *turn*.

2. 第二句型的不完全自動構造 (Neuter Construction)。

這需要用四種要素中的三種要素：

"Subject + Predicate + Complement"

例句：「牛奶變酸了。」

Milk *turns* sour.

3. 第三句型的他動構造 (Transitive Construction)。

這也需要用四種要素中的三種要素：

"Subject + Predicate + Object"

例句：「人們轉動車輪。」

Men *turn* wheels.

4. 第四句型的授與構造 (Dative Construction)。

這雖則只用到三種要素，但賓語這個要素，得分為間接與直接兩個：

"Subject + Predicate + Indirect Object + Direct Object"

例句：「牝牛給我們牛奶。」

Cows *give* us milk.

5. 第五句型的不完全他動構造 (Factitive Construction)。

這是要動用四種要素的：

"Subject + Predicate + Object + Complement"

例句：「打雷使牛奶變酸。」

Thunder *turns* milk sour.

而這五種句型，如下表所示，又都是由動詞出發的，可見動詞對英文造句是何等的重要呀。

- 動詞
  - 自動詞
    - 完全自動詞……………………………………(第一句型)
    - 不完全自動詞＋補語……………………(第二句型)
  - 他動詞
    - 完全他動詞
      - ＋一個賓語………………(第三句型)
      - ＋兩個賓語………………(第四句型)
    - 不完全他動詞＋賓語＋補語…………(第五句型)

(4)　第一句型的自動構造

"主語＋述語"

從英文的造句法(Syntax)上來看，每個句子都必須具備主語和述語兩個部分。表示思想主題的是**主語**，述說動作、狀態、性質等的是**述語**。

這兩個部分是任何英文句子不可或缺的，如果在句中不見了這兩個部分，或其中的一個部分，那只是在字面上臨時把它省略了，並不是原來就不存在的。例如：

「走開！」Go away! ——這個命令句譯成英文時是把主語的 you 省略了，原應作 You go away! 的。又如

「一個多麼漂亮的姑娘！」

What a pretty girl!

這個驚歎句譯成英文時，是把主語的 she 和述語的 is 省略了。原應作 What a pretty girl she is! 的。

「我很快就會再寫信給你的。」

Write you soon again.

這個平敘句譯成英文時，是省略了主語的 I 和助動詞的 will 的，原應作 I will write you soon again. 的。根據以上的例子，就可知道沒有主語述語的句子，只是臨時省略，原來的句子是非有不可的。主語述語對文句既有這般重要，我們決不可加以忽視，在閱讀時找出文句，尤其是長的文句的主語述語，對我們了解文義，是有極大的幫助的。

對於第一句型的句子(注)，普通都是把它分做兩個部份，例如 These

(注)　當然不限於第一句型，任何句型，任何複雜的文句，都可分成兩個部分，例如 The boy who just came in, the one in the blue suit, | studied English in Canada for two years when he was a child.

pretty little birds sing very merrily. 一句，普通把 These pretty little birds 四字看作主部的 Subject，把 sing very merrily 三字看作述部的 Predicate. 主部的中心一定是一個名詞，或名詞同等語，所以那個名詞才是主部的本體，英文叫作 Subject-word（主語本字）。在上例中的 Subject-word 是 birds，這便是我們讀書時第一個要找出來的字。同樣地述部的中心，一定是一個動詞，所以這個動詞才是述部的本體，英文叫作 Predicate-verb（述語動詞）。在上例中的 Predicate-verb 是 sing。我們讀書時第二個要找出來的字就是它。把一句長文的主語和述語找出來，無異提綱挈領，抓住要點，對文句的主動者及其動作，已經有所了解，整個句子的含義，便可掌握到十之七八了，因爲其餘的大都是修飾語，在文法上是無關重要的。

在第一句型的構造中，常見的有下列三種形式：

1. S.+Vi:

   Birds sing.

2. S.+Vi.+Adverb (Adverb Phrase):

   Birds sing merrily (in the tree).

3. S.+Vi.+Adverb Infinitive:

   John has gone to buy books.

現在我們再舉出一些第一句型的例子，來看它是怎樣發展的。

「在量上有所得，在質上必有所失。」

If *anything gains* in quantity, *it* must *lose* in quality.

「勿做得不償失的事。」

Do not *pay* too dear for your whistle.

「在教室裏上課時不要講話。」

You must not *talk* in class.

「你來此有何貴幹？」

What have *you come* here for?

「昨夜發生火災。」

A *fire broke* out last night.

「當我到車站時正下大雨。」

It rained heavily when *I arrived* at the station.

「他的弟弟考取了南洋大學。」

His *brother succeeded* in the examination of Nanyang University.

「他爲着轉地療養昨天到金馬崙去了。」

He went to the Camelon highland yesterday for a change.

「我想考取所以拼命用功。」

I studied with might and main not to fail in the examination.

「因爲戰爭的緣故物價天天上漲。」

The *prices go* up every day owing to the war.

「這些果木樹明年就要開始結果子了。」

These *trees* will *begin* to bear next year.

「對人客氣是不會吃虧的。」

It pays to be polite.

「我明天午後三時到四時之間來看你。」

I will *come* to see you between three and four tomorrow afternoon.

「只有人類會說話。」

Man alone can *speak*.

「我通常是早上七時起牀。」

I generally *gets* up at seven in the morning

「王君不久即將出洋研讀數學。」

Mr. Wang will shortly *go* abroad to study mathematics.

習　題　1

試將下列各句譯成英文，句中須用完全自動詞。

1. 健全的思想寓於健全的人格。
2. 我們不是爲食而生，乃是爲生而食。
3. 合則留，不合則去。
4. 說話不要支吾其詞。
5. 在中國學年爲八月一日起到七月三十一日止。
6. 我兄弟前天由此放洋，下月半前後可抵倫敦。
7. 他可能很快回來，不過我不能說一定。

8. 貓在黑暗中也能看見。
9. 這把小刀好切得很。
10. 那工作做了不合算。
11. 這些雞已經開始生蛋了。
12. 我的朋友是站在我一邊的。
13. 太陽好像是圍繞着地球在走。
14. 因爲太暗我看不清楚。
15. 走了約莫一個鐘頭，我們到達了目的地。
16. 勤則不匱(左傳)。
17. 臥不安席，食不甘味，心搖搖如懸旌(國策)。
18. 下喬入幽(孟子)。
19. 東風解凍。
20. 臣無祖母，無以至今日；祖母無臣，無以終餘年；祖孫二人，相依爲命。(李密)。

(5) 第二句型的不完全自動構造

“主語＋述語＋補語”

第二句型的造句和第一句型不同的地方，就是句中多了一個補語的因素。這是與不完全自動詞有連帶關係的。凡是遇到不完全自動詞的時候，就有加上補語的必要。補語主要是由形容詞或名詞構成的，但用別的詞類也未嘗不可，關鍵是在動詞，如果那動詞是不完全的自動詞，則在其後接上的任何字都是補語。

不完全自動詞的代表動詞是“be”，說 I am, you are, he is 等，意念都是不完全的，必須加上一個表示身分或狀態或性質的字眼上去，才能成爲完整的句子。這個表示身分或狀態或性質的字眼，便叫作補語。華文也是一樣，單說「他是」是不能成爲一個句子的，必須加上表示身分的名詞，或是表示狀態或性質的形容詞才行。例如說「他是一個什麼人」，後面就要接上名詞的補語，若說「他是什麼狀態或性質」，便不能接名詞，而要接形容詞的補語了。到底要接名詞或是要接形容詞，在下筆之先必須想想才不會弄錯，因爲「他是一個學生」(He is a student.) 是

說明他的身分的，用上一個名詞，當然簡單明瞭，沒有問題。至於「他在生病」，是說他的狀態的，可就不能用名詞了。如果用名詞而譯成 He is illness. 就是錯的，必須改說爲 He is ill. 才通，因爲 illness 是名詞，ill 才是形容詞。表示狀態或性質必須用形容詞作補語，表示身分才用名詞。用名詞作補語的，我們可以說「他是學生」，同樣也可以說「學生就是他」。但用形容詞作補語時，我們却不能說「他是病」，當然「病也不是他」，用公式表出時，He = student. He ≠ illness. 中國語在形容詞的尾上用一個「的」字，等於形容詞的尾綴，這是很重要的。「他是勤快的」，或簡單地說「他勤快」，英文譯成 He is diligent. 中英文都是通順的。如果說，「他是勤快」，中文句子就不完善了，因爲「勤快」是一個抽象名詞，不是一個形容詞，如果「他是勤快」，那麼，豈不「勤快就是他」了。須知他並不等於勤快，一方是人，一方是一種性質，二者是不能相等的。英文也是一樣，我們不能說 He is diligence. 因爲 he 並不是 diligence，所以不可以用名詞，中英文都要用形容詞，中文用「勤快的」，英文要用 diligent 才對。

現在我們再舉一例，來作進一步的說明。

(a)「他是誠實的」。(He is honest.)

(b)「他是一個誠實的人」。(He is an honest man.)

(a) 句的補語是形容詞(honest)，(b) 句的補語是名詞(man)。(a) 句是答覆「他是怎樣」的，所以說，他是誠實的；(b) 句是答覆「他是什麼」的，所以說，他是人。因此，(a) 句必須用形容詞，如果說成 He is honesty. 就錯了，因爲他並不是誠實那回事。(b) 句中的 honest 一字，只是用來修飾 man 的，不是主要的因素。(a) 句中的 honest，便是補語，爲四種要素之一。附帶要注意的一點，man 是一個普通名詞，依照文法的規定，普通名詞如非用複數，就必須加冠詞，所以，如果說成 He is man. 或 He is honest man. 就錯了。一定要說 He is a man. 或 He is an honest man. 才行。如果補語的名詞變成複數的話，這個冠詞就用不着了，如：

(a)「他是聰明的。」(He is clever.)

(b)「他是一個聰明的孩子。」(He is a clever boy.)

(a)「他們是聰明的。」(They are clever.)

(b)「他們是一些聰明的孩子。」(They are clever boys.)

以上用作形容詞或名詞的補語，是與句中的主語有關的，所以又稱主格補語。

上面已經說過，補語並不限於名詞和形容詞，其他的詞類，都可以用作補語，只要那動詞是不完全的。任何一個不完全的動詞，都需要加上補語，不管那補語是一個怎樣形式的字眼，其他詞類用在補語的地位上即變成補語了。不過名詞和形容詞，仍是補語的兩大因素，其他只能算是同等語。 Noun-Element＝Noun and Noun Equivalent. Adjec-ive-Element＝Adjective and Adjective Equivalent.

茲將可構成主格補語的字眼分類舉出如下：

1. 名　詞：He is a *teacher*. (他是教師。)
2. 代名詞：It's *me*. (是我。)
3. 形容詞：We are *ready*. (我們準備好了。)
4. 副　詞：He is *out*. (他出去了。)
5. 不定詞：He seems *to be* honest. (他好像是誠實的。)
6. 分　詞：I got *hurt*. (我受傷了。)
   It is *interesting*. (這很有趣。)
7. 動名詞：Seeing is *believing*. (看見才相信。)
8. 片　語：He is *at home* in history. (他精通歷史。)
   It is *of no use* to try further. (不用再幹下去了。)
9. 子　句：The pen is *where it was*. (筆在原來的地方。)

上面說過 He is diligence. 一句是不通的，應說 He is diligent. 才可以，因爲非用形容詞不可，但英文的形容詞，常可用 "of＋名詞" 所構成的形容詞片語來代替，如 useful 可用 of use 來代替，useless 可用 of no use 來代替，故上舉第八項中的第二例，也可以說成 It is useless to try further. 所以上面說的 He is diligence. 那個不通的句子，只消加上一個 "of"，而說成 He is of diligence. 也就通了。這個 "of＋名詞" ＝形容詞，也是常用的一種補語，再舉數例如下：

「這本雜誌是很有用的。」

This magazine is *of great use.* (=very useful)

「這些書對我毫無價值。」

These books are *of no value* to me. (=valueless)

有些沒有形容詞的名詞，當然更要用 of-phrase 了，如

「這些東西都是同樣的價錢。」

These articles are *(of) the same price.*

「這兩個茶杯是同樣大小的。」

These two cups are *(of) the same size.*

茲再將需要有主格補語的不完全自動詞分別舉例說明如下。需要主格補語的代表動詞是 "be"，此字原作「存在」解，用作動詞時本身幾乎沒有什麼意思，而只擔承把主語和補語聯繫起來的任務吧了。從它這種任務來看，用文法上的專門術語說，叫做 Copula=linking verb (聯繫詞)。在 "be" 以外的動詞，也多少有帶着 Copula 的任務的，所以這樣的動詞，也都要有補語才行。例如 lie，意爲「用某種狀態躺着」，引申爲「在某種狀態中」；seem 意爲「好像在某種狀態中」；remain 意爲「維持某種狀態不變」。此外還有由變化而成爲某種狀態之意的自動詞 become，grow 等，也可以作爲需要補語的動詞來用。

(一) 用屬於 be 一類的動詞來翻譯：

「這朵玫瑰花很香。」

This rose *smells* sweet.

「這紙很粗糙。」

This paper *feels* rough.

「他那時看去好像耽於冥想似的。」

He *looked* reflective for a few moments.

「他的聲音聽來好像很憤恨的樣子。」

His voice *sounded* resentful.

「他好像不是尋常的乞丐。」

He *seemed* no ordinary mendicant.

「也像一切羞怯的人一樣，他有時顯得傲慢。」

Like all shy men he sometimes *appeared* arrogant.

「他直到四十歲都還沒有結婚。」

He *remained* unmarried till forty years old.

「他醒來躺着很久才起牀。」

He *lay* awake a long time before getting up.

「我很敬重他。」

He *stands* high in my estimation.

「他生爲聖徒，死爲烈士。」

He *lived* a saint, and *died* a martyr.

（二） 用屬於 become 一類的動詞來翻譯：

「那兩個人一天天變得更親密了。」

The two were *becoming* more intimate every day.

「我的預言成爲事實了。」

My prediction *has come* true.

「那棵樹長得愈來愈高了。」

The tree *grew* taller and taller.

「我希望他很快康復。」

I hope he will *get* better (or recovered) soon.

「他在不久的將來就會成爲一個優秀的工人的。」

He will *make* a capital workman one of these days.

「於是他突然變得嚴肅了。」

Then he suddenly *fell* grave.

「我的頭髮變白了。」

My hair *has turned* grey.

「那狗發狂了。」

The dog *has run* mad.

「這個新發明會成爲對全人類有用的吧。」

This new invention will *prove* useful to all humanity.

「一聽那話她臉色登時變得蒼白，直白到嘴脣了。」

On hearing that, her face *went* white to the lips.

（三） 爲着要顯示 seem 等字中所潛在的 Copula 的意味，不妨加上 to be 的字樣進去。

「鳥鳴山更幽。」

It *seems to be* more lonesome in the mountains when birds are singing.

「他顯得很年輕。」

He *appears to be* young.

「那終會成功的。」

It will *prove* to be successful.

「那謠言變成事實了。」

The rumour has *turned out to be* true.

「如果你繼續這樣懶惰下去,你總有一天要後悔的。」

If you *continue to be* idle, you will be sorry for it some day.

這類的自動詞是可以反映出說話者的心情的, 如 He seems to be ill. 一句話, 是表示說話的人不願直接肯定地說出 He is ill, 而只是用 seems to be(好像是)作爲推測之辭。

在第二句型的構造中,有下列十二種形式:

1. S.+be-V.+Noun:
   Jack is a schoolboy.
2. S.+be-V.+Pronoun:
   The umbrella is mine.
3. S.+be-V.+Adjective:
   He is kind.
   Your story is interesting.
4. S.+be-V.+to-Infinitive:
   I am to start tomorrow.
5. S.+be-V.+-ed+to-Infinitive:
   I am pleased to meet you.
6. S.+Vi.+Noun:
   He became a merchant.
7. S.+Vi.+Adjective:
   He got angry.
   He looks happy.

8. S.+Vi.+-ing:

The boy came running.

He stood waiting for me.

9. S.+Vi.+-ed:

He looked pleased.

He went home disappointed.

10. S.+Vi.+Prep.+-ing:

The prices go on rising.

11. S.+Vi.+Adjective+to-Infinitive:

He felt very happy to see me elected.

It remains much to be done.

12. S.+Vi.+Adjective+that (if, whether, where, when, why, etc.) Clause:

I feel certain that he is coming with me.

Are you sure if (whether) John is going with us?

He looked blank when he was informed of his dismissal.

習題 2

試將下列各句譯成英文,句中須採用不完全自動詞。

1. 我們選擇朋友時非十分謹愼不可。
2. 美國人好活動而富於獨立精神。
3. 那大學的入學試題很難,我不知能否考取。
4. 她覺得有點窘,不知如何是好。
5. 良藥苦口利於病。
6. 他立志堅定不移。
7. 他始終都用心在聽講。
8. 這個辦法並不一定永遠有效。
9. 眞假常不能被人認識。
10. 世事尙待證明。
11. 他依然怏怏不樂,一聲不響。
12. 她坐着沉思了好幾分鐘。
13. 他似乎知道那個事實。

14. 那以後他們就滿足了。

15. 中國人的態度是對西方行爲的一種反感。

16. 在世界上相距最遠的東西兩端的地方，經過多少世紀，實際上完全不知道彼此的存在。

17. 他的遊記是一種非常有趣味的記錄。

18. 很少旅行家的記錄有馬可孛羅寫的那樣生動，那樣有內容的。

19. 似乎有稍加說明的必要。

20. 不做時代落伍的學生，對當前的出版物是不能忽視的。

6） 第三句型的他動構造

"主語＋述語＋賓語"

這是用完全他動詞加上一個賓語而構成的句子。在這個句型中新出現的一個因素，就是賓語。構成賓語的，都是名詞或名詞同等語，例如：

1. Do you know *Mr. Chang*? (Noun)
2. I like *him* very much. (Pronoun)
3. I like *to read*. (Noun Infinitive)
4. I like *reading*. (Gerund)
5. I know *how to swim*. (Noun Phrase)
6. I know *that he is an honest man*. (Noun Clause)

主語和賓語一定是非名詞莫辦的，因此我們可以說，任何字句一登上主語或賓語的寶座，它就變成名詞了。

賓語並不一定是在動詞後面的，有時也會跑到動詞的前面去，如 *What* did Jack build? This is the *ship* that Jack built. 並不一定每次都如 Jack built a *ship*. 一樣在動詞後面。

他動詞的賓語從意義上看，有三種不同的字彙。即：

一、爲表示結果的賓語，如我們分明是在紙上寫字，結果却寫成了一封信，因而我們就說寫信 (write a letter)。再如我們挖土，結果挖成了一個洞，我們就說挖洞 (dig a hole)。

二、爲表示一般意義的賓語，有 things, matters 等，例如 If she

is really bad, it simplifies *things* very much. (Galsworthy: Fraternity)(她要是眞的壞，那事情倒簡單多了。)

三、爲模擬賓語(sham object) "it"。這是英文的一種慣用法，它本身根本沒有什麽意思，也不是專指一件什麽事物，如 He lords *it* over his inferiors. (他對部下如君臨一般高傲不堪。) If you are found out, you will catch *it*. (如果你被他們看到，你就要挨駡的。)

有些句子我們中文是要用自動詞的，而英文則慣用他動詞來說，因爲我們很少用事物來作他動詞的主語的，英文爲說話求簡起見，常愛以事物爲主動者，這類造句很多和我們說法不同，宜加注意，例如：

「你來此何事？」

What has *brought* you here?＝What have you *come* here for?

「從這條路去，就可以到火車站。」

This road will *take* you to the station.

＝If you follow this road, you will *get* to the station.

「什麽事使他這樣生氣？」

What *made* him so angry?＝Why did he *get* so angry?

「你肯幫助我的話，我就一定會成功的。」

Your assistance will *make* my success certain.

＝If you assist me, my success will *be* certain.

「看到這個使我想起以前的好日子。」

This *reminds* me of the good old days.

＝When I see this, I think of the good old days.

「我們靠希望而生存。」

Hope *keeps* us alive.＝We *live on* by hope.

「衣食足而後知禮義。」

Wealth *enables* men to be courteous.

＝If men have wealth, they *are* able to be courteous.

「因爲天氣壞，我們未能動身。」

Bad weather *prevented* us from starting.

＝We *could* not start because of the bad weather.

他動詞後面所接用的賓語，中英兩種語文的表現法也有不同的地方。現分五項將英文特異之處說明如下：

(一) 具有「奪取」意義的動詞

凡被奪取的目標，在中文的說法應該是「物」，而在英文則要說「人」。在被奪取的物品之前加一個 "of" 的介詞，造成一個片語接在「人」的後面。

「強盜搶了他的錢。」

A highwayman *robbed* him of his money.

同樣的用法還有下列種種情形。

「他把海上的強盜一掃而光。」

He *cleared* the sea of those robbers.

「憂煩的習慣奪去了我們的和平和安樂。」

The habit of worrying *robs* us of peace and comfort.

「我學了很多，足以診好我從前的好幻想的毛病」。

I have learned enough to *cure* me of my old fancies. (Stevenson)

「我將永遠無法完全放棄這種感覺。」

I shall never be able entirely to *divest* myself of this feeling.

「國王剝奪了他一切的榮譽。」

The king *stripped* him of all his honours.

「他忘不了過去那種痛苦的回憶。」

He could not *rid* himself of the painful memories.

「你來了省得我去麻煩寫一封長信。」

Your coming *relieves* me of the bother of writing a long letter.

「他只求自己獲得享樂，不管是從誰奪取得來。」

He does not care whom he *deprives* of enjoyment, so that he can obtain it.

(二) 具有「供給」意義的動詞

在英文的表現法中，不能直接把所供給的事物作爲賓語，必須以介詞 with 爲媒介，才能說出那事物來。同時只有受到供給的人才能成爲

賓語。如「供給某人金錢」爲 supply him with money,「車上載草」爲 load a cart with straw,「在玻璃杯中倒滿清水」爲 fill the glass with water.「給人食物」爲 provide a person with food,「供給我許多消息」爲 furnish me with a lot of information,「把那本書呈獻給他」爲 present him with the book,「賜予接見」爲 favour me with an interview,「把秘密告訴她」爲 trust her with a secret 等等。

(三) 具有「作成」意義的動詞。那時句中的 "of" 所引出的名詞,便是作成什麼的材料,如「愚弄他」,英文說 make a fool of him, 便是把他當作材料, 作成一個愚人。又如「專攻英文」爲 make a special study of English. 意即把英文當作材料來作出一種專門的研究。

(四) 不把直接接受動作的人身上某一部分作爲賓語, 而要把那個人當作對象來說,是大處着眼的意思。

「他輕拍我的背。」
He *patted* me on the back.
「他抓住我的衣領。」
He *seized* me by the collar.
「他命在旦夕。」
Death *stared* him in the face.
「他緊緊握着我的手,不讓我走。」
He *held* me by the hand firmly and would not let me go.
「我抓住了他的胳膊。」
I *caught* him by the arm.
「他拉着我的衣袖。」
He *pulled* me by the sleeve.
「她打他一記耳光。」
She *strikes* him across the face.

在受到動作的人體上某一部分的前面,一般只用冠詞 the, 不用人稱所有格的形容詞,如 my, his 等,但有時也可以用,不過用法稍古,如「她吻了他的面頰」,說 She kissed him on his cheek.「他敢於用最溫柔的態度執了她的手」說 He presumed in the gentlest manner to take

her by her hand. (Lamb, Tales from Shakespeare) 說 I caught him by the hand, 英文的味道特別濃厚，若照中文的說法，改爲 I caught his hand, 也未嘗不通，不過兩者之間是有 nuance 的不同的。

（五） 有許多動詞我們中文都是作自動詞用的，而英文却是他動詞，後面要接賓語，例如：

「不幸降臨到他身上。」
A misfortune *befell* him.
「這種式樣的衣服對你很適合。」
This style of dress *becomes* you well.
「二者大小相似。」
They *resemble* each other in size.
「半小時內我們就到檳城了。」
We can *reach* Penang in half an hour.
「據說那屋子有鬼。」
They say ghosts *haunt* that house.
「不要走進這房間去。」
Don't *enter* this room.

英文的自動詞在下列四種情形中，便可當作他動詞用，後面直接接上賓語：1. 接用同系賓語 (Cognate Object)，如「他過了幸福的一生」(He *lived* a happy *life*.) 2. 具有使動的意味 (Causative Sense)，如「農人種稻」(The farmer *grows* rice.) 3. 接用介詞 (Preposition)，如「你在看什麼？」(What are you looking *at*?) 4. 伴有補足字(Complement)，如「我們時常談一通夜」(We often talked the night *away*.)

1. 同系賓語

「我做了一個奇怪的夢。」
I *dreamed* a strange *dream*.
「他一睡不醒。」
He *slept* the *sleep* that knows no waking.
「我打了一場好仗。」
I have *fought* a good *fight*. (Bible)

「他吐了一口氣，才來唸了祈禱文。」

He *sighed* a *sigh* and *prayed* a *prayer*. (Scott)

不但自動詞如此，他動詞有時也可援用同系賓語，例如 tell a tale, sing a song, see a sight 等等。

在同系賓語上附有修飾形容詞時，通例可換成態度副詞（Adverb of Manner），如 live a long life=live *long*; live a happy life=live happily; die a natural death=die naturally; die a violent death=die by violence 等等。

有的賓語與動詞不同語源，但意義相通，也可視為同類，如 run a race; run a course; run one's career; fight a battle; blow a gale; strike a blow; ring a peal; wreak one's vengeance 等等。

漠然無所指的賓語 "it"，也可看做一種同系賓語，如

「我決心奮鬪到底。」

I am determined to fight *it* out. (=fight to the end)

「安哲羅勛爵很有爵爺的神氣。」

Lord Angelo dukes *it* (=plays the part of duke) well. (Shakespeare)

「我已慣於櫛風沐雨。」

I am used to roughing *it*.

「白人對土人如君臨一般。」

The whites lord *it* over the natives.

「我們是生來為君王效犬馬之勞的。」

We are born to slave *it* for our lord. (Thackeray)

「他到各地巡廻演出。」

He is starring *it* in the provinces.

「我們不得不冒雨而行。」

We had to walk *it* in the rain.

「你能游泳過去嗎？」

Can't you swim *it*?

在某些熟語中可將同系賓語略去，如 look thanks 為 look a look

of thanks 之略。

「他眼中現出言語無法表達的感謝。」

He looked the thanks he could not express.

「她以短劍相刺的目光望着我，而走出房間去了。」

She left the room, looking daggers at me.

「我問他是否滿意，他點頭表示首肯。」

I asked if he was satisfied, and he nodded assent.

「那人的字寫得好嗎？」

Does the man write a good hand?

用最上級形容詞時，多半也要把同系賓語略去。

「那婦人在那個時候看去最美。」

The lady was looking her best (look).

「她唱出她最好聽的歌聲來取悅他。」

She sang her sweetest (song) to please him.

其他如 do one's best (or utmost)＝do all one can do（盡全力）; see the last of anything＝see it no more（再也不見了）; hear the last of anything＝hear of it no more（再無消息）; breathe one's last＝expire（呼出最後一口氣，卽死去）。

2. 含使動意

「她把蠟燭竪在地板上。」

She *stood* the candle on the floor. (Dickens)

「我慢慢地帶馬走上小山。」

I slowly *walked* my horse up the hill.

「他們把船開到灘上去了。」

They *ran* the ship aground.

「他們使馬泅水渡河。」

They *swam* their horses across the river.

「那船上掛出降旗。」

The ship *was flying* the flag of truce.

「下次滿潮時船就可以浮起來了。」

The next tide will *float* the ship.

「巡洋艦把那運輸艦擊沉了。」
The cruiser *sank* the transport.
「他們過分地酷使了那些馬。」
They *work* the horses too hard.
「我躺下來好讓兩條疲憊的腿子休息一下。」
I laid myself down to *rest* my wearied limbs.

3. 援用介詞

「怎樣得到那個結果的呀？」
How was the result *brought about*?
「她在年輕的時候，追她的人很多。」
She was much *run after* in her youth.
「頑皮的孩子人人皺眉。」
Everybody *frowns at* a naughty child.
「愈有愈是想要。」
Possession makes one *wish for* more.
「愚人才不認錯。」
Fools *persist in* their error.
「我不知道眞有這樣的人。」
I do not *know of* any such man.
「我不會把這問題一直講下去的。」
I shall not *dwell on* the subject at any length.
「你最好有空的時候把那事情仔細想一下。」
You had better *think over* the matter at your leisure.
「我的母親反對這門親事。」
My mother *objects to* the match.
「娛樂不能妨害正事。」
Pleasure must not *interfere with* duty.

4. 加補足字

「做人不可醉生夢死。」
One must not sleep or dream one's life *away*.
「睡眠能恢復疲勞。」

You can sleep *off* your fatigue.

「別的客人都走光了他還不走。」

He sits *out* the other guests.

「他能說服別人聽從他的意見。」

He can talk people *over* to his own views.

「你自己去查字典吧。」

Look *up* the word for yourself in the dictionary.

「他們大叫把演講者轟下台來。」

They shouted *down* the orator.

「他使我厭煩死了。」

He bored me *to* death.

「他向我說出種種道理，使我非答應不可。」

He has reasoned me *into* compliance.

「我說得他把原來的決定推翻了。」

I have talked him *out of* his resolution

在第三句型的構造中也有下列十一種形式：

1. S.+Vt.+Noun:

   I keep a diary every day.

2. S.+Vt.+Pronoun:

   They know us very well.

3. S.+Vt.+-ing:

   I like playing tennis.

   I do not advise your seeing him at this time.

4. S.+Vt.+Prep. +-ing:

   Mrs Smith objected to our riding across the lawn.

   The girl insists on going to the movies.

   He persists in doing something in his own way.

5. S.+Vt.+to-Infinitive:

   I like to play tennis with them.

6. S.+Vt.+what (whom, which)+to-Infinitive:

   I don't know what to do.

I don't know what book to read.
We must know whom to choose.
I don't know whom to go to.
Do you know which to choose?
Do you know which way to take?

7. S.+Vt.+how (when, where)+to-Infinitive:
You must learn how to swim.
We must decide when to start.
She will show where to sit.

8. S.+Vt.+that Clause:
I hear that he is in Singapore now.

9. S.+Vt.+what (who, whom, which) Clause:
I know what his name is.
I know what I must do.
Do you know what answer he made?
Do you know who he is?
Do you know whom we chose?
I cannot see which (which way) is better.
We don't know which (which way) he took.

10. S.+Vt.+how (when, where, why) Clause:
I wonder how old that man is.
I know when (where) you were born.
No one knows why he did such a thing.

11. S.+Vt.+if (whether) Clause:
I wonder if it will rain tomorrow.
I don't know whether the news is true or not.

習 題 3

將試下列各句譯成英文，句中須採用完全他動詞。

1. 昨天的迎新會你出席了沒有？
2. 蘇君順利地進了牛津大學。

3. 王君文官考試優等及第。
4. 我們要奮鬪的話，就要奮鬪到底。
5. 在印尼他們剝奪了華僑一切的財產。
6. 他把我所要的一切都給我了。
7. 他抓住我的手，不讓我走。
8. 她假裝對我朋友說話，實際是說給我聽的。
9. 勤能補拙。
10. 我一定想要你來。
11. 他不用功，在學校裡又混過了一年。
12. 我旅行時總是坐的三等。
13. 他講演完畢時，聽衆大聲喝采。
14. 他在夜裡十一時十分鐘斷氣。
15. 你能像那老人一樣游過長江嗎？
16. 我給了那可憐的孩子一點錢去買東西吃。
17. 她寫了一封長信給我，談到她的將來。
18. 我們討論那個問題直到夜深。
19. 他承認她是對的。
20. 她提議我們應從頭來過一次。

(7) 第四句型的授與構造

"主語＋述語＋間接賓語＋直接賓語"

這是在一句當中用兩個賓語的造句法。普通的他動詞只要有一個賓語就行了，但這種他動詞却需要兩個賓語，即除了直接的賓語外，還需要有一個間接的賓語。那個間接賓語，在拉丁文中稱爲授與格 (Dative Case)，Dative 意爲英文的 giving. 因此對於要有間接賓語的這一類的動詞，就稱爲授與動詞(Dative Verb)。英文與拉丁文不同，間接賓語與直接賓語並沒有各自不同的形態，所以間接賓語並無所謂授與格的名稱，不過形態雖同，在意味上却是有這種授與格的存在的，因此在英文中也仍然保留着 Dative 這個名稱。

間接賓語通常是人，而直接賓語則通常是說的事物，如 That will

save *me* a lot of *trouble*. (那將省我不少的麻煩)。但偶然也有間接賓語不是說人的，如 He allowed his *imagination* full play. (他任意胡思亂想。)

通常是把間接賓語放在直接賓語的前面的，但有時爲着加強語氣，或使意義更爲明白起見，也可以把間接賓語移到直接賓語的後面去，不過在那時候，就得在間接賓語前加上 "to", "for", "of" 等介詞，而把它做成介詞片語，使之完全失去賓語的性質了，例如：

He gave me a book.=He gave a book *to* me.

He will buy me a knife. =He will buy a knife *for* me.

I wish to ask you a favour.=I wish to ask a favour *of* you.

He played our master a dirty trick. =He played a dirty trick *on* our master.

但兩個賓語如果都是簡短的代名詞時，間接賓語即令移到直接賓語的後面去，也不要加用介詞，如：

Her mother did not give it her. (她母親並未把那個給她。)

We rather shrank back when she proffered it us. (Caskell, Cranford) (當她提出那個來的時候，我們都退縮了。)

間接賓語移到了直接賓語的後面仍不加介詞，是因爲省略掉了，而且只有在簡短的代名詞如 it, me, her, him 等時才可省略，不省當然是可以的，如說 Please give it *to* her.(美國說法)。省略後便成爲 Please give it her. (英國說法)。凡遇到間接與直接二者全是短字，也可以說成 Please give her it. 但如直接賓語不是代名詞而是名詞時，要前後調動就非加介詞不可，那時我們必須說：

Please give the book *to* her.

若照平常的次序說 Please give her the book. 當然是可以的。應該注意的是，我們不可以說 Please give the book her. 因爲直接賓語不是代名詞，故 "to" 不能略去。間接賓語爲名詞，而不是代名詞時，也不能把 "to" 略去，如

I gave it *to* the beggar.

不能說 I gave the beggar it. 但可以說 I gave the beggar a coin. 或是 I gave a coin to the beggar.

如果間接與直接兩種賓語的音價(phonetic value) 相等,或直接的更輕,那麼,還是要維持原來的次序的,如

I grudge him you. (Shaw) (我不肯把你交給他。)

Do not send me those. (Onions) (不要把那些東西送給我。)

Bring me him down like a ripe apple. (Stevenson)(把他當作一個熟透了的蘋果一般,小心地帶到我這兒來。)

Tell him this. (Onions) (把這件事告訴他。)

間接賓語多半是人,而且是受惠者: (a) 他是獲得什麼東西,看到什麼東西,或聽到什麼東西的人 (the person to whom something is given, shown or told); 或是 (b) 別人爲他做了什麼的人 (the person for whom something is done)。這便是間接賓語爲數最多的兩大類。間接賓語如果不是受惠者,如

He asked me a few questions. (他問了我幾個問題。)

I can forgive him anything and verything. (一切我都可以赦免他。)

等句中的間接賓語,是不能得到任何利益的。這時節我們就不妨把兩個賓語都看作直接賓語。

授與動詞可以細分爲四類,卽授與(give)東西,告知 (tell) 事情,貢獻 (render) 服務,及施行 (perform) 恩惠(有關得失的)。前三類中的間接賓語都可以加 "to" 改成介詞片語,卽 to-phrase, for-phrase (有的文法家將此視爲一個間接賓語)等,如:

Give me the book.=Give the book *to* me.

Tell us a story.=Tell a story *to* us.

Do me a favour.=Do a favour *to* me.

唯有最後一類不能用 "to", 要用表示目的的介詞 "for" 來把間接賓語改寫爲介詞片語,如

Get me a glass of water.=Get a glass of water *for* me.

這種用法的動詞在現代英語中爲數極少，如果在古代的話，則幾乎任何動詞上都可以加一個恩惠的授與格 (Dative of Favour)，如 Open me the door. 今則說 Open the door for me. 他如 Shakespeare 說的：Heat me these irons hot. (趁熱爲我打鐵)等等都是的。

只有授與動詞如 give, bring, teach, show, ask, send, make, lend, owe, tell, sell, cost, read, write, offer, pass, pay, promise, choose, find, leave, get, play, reach, sing 等，才能接用兩個賓語，其他的他動詞則只能接用一個賓語。今就同義的動詞舉例比較如下：

(a) We *gave* him a watch. (=gave a watch to him)
(b) We *presented* him with a watch. (presented a watch to him)
(a) A litle was *given* him.
(b) A litle was *conferred* on him.
(a) He *teaches* us English.
(b) He *instructs* us in English.
(a) He *asked* me a question.
(b) He *put* a question to me.

1. 有授與意味的授與動詞——茲就其慣用句法例示如下：

「我在一個月前通知他解職。」
I have *given* him a month's warming (notice).
「我當面責備他是撒謊。」
I *gave* him the lie in his throat.
「公平地說，敵人是勇敢的。」
To *give* the devil his due, the enemy are quite brave.
「接到來函使我大爲高興。」
Your letter has *afforded* me much pleasure.
「他每月給他兒子五百元。」
He *allows* his son five hundred dollars a month.
「我在他頭上給以重重的一擊。」
I *struck* him a hard blow on the head.
「我將儘量給你幫助。」
I'll *lend* you all the assistance in my power.

「他傳言說要來。」

He has *sent* us word that he is coming.

「如果有什麼信件寄來請轉給我。」

Please *forward* me any letter that may come.

「他答應給我職務。」

He has *promised* me an appointment.

「我去烹點茶來給你喝。」

I will *make* you some tea. (=I will make some tea for you).

「她自製了一襲新衣。」

She *made* herself a new dress. (=She made a new dress for herself).

「她爲他做一個好妻子。」

She *made* him a good wife. (cf.「她會成爲一個好妻子的」。譯成 She will make a good wife. 句中的 make=become. 此句爲第二句型，卽"主語+述語+補語")。

2. 有告知意味的授與動詞：

「王先生教我們的英文。」

Mr Wang *teaches* us English.

「請你告訴我去車站的路好嗎？」

Will you please *show* me the way to the station?

「孩子們要我講故事給他們聽。」

The children *want* me to tell them a story.

「你唱支歌給我聽吧，在我離去之前。」

Sing me a song before I leave.

「讓我把他剛來的信唸給你聽。」

Let me *read* you his letter just received.

3. 有貢獻意味的授與動詞：

「運動是對你有益的。」

Exercise will *do* you good.

「喝少量的酒是無害的。」

A little wine will *do* you no harm.

「公平地說一句，他並不是壞人。」
To *do* him justice, he is not a bad man.
「請你幫我一個忙好嗎？」
Will you *do* me a favour?
「在我貧困時，他給了我不少的幫助。」
He has *rendered* me great help in time of need.

4. 有得失意味的授與動詞：

「我去替你買張戲票來。」
I will *get* you a ticket.
「你有了這張票即可入場。」
This ticket will *gain* you admission.
「我要儘量使你獲得好的條件。」
I will try to *procure* you the best terms I can.
「那本書使他出了名。」
The book *won* him a reputation.
「他太遲鈍了，以致失掉了那個機會。」
His slowness *lost* him the chance.

5. 還有一種變則的授與動詞，是只有間接賓語而無直接賓語的，與文法原則相反，故稱變則。

「這件衣服你穿了很合適。」
The dress *becomes* you very well.
「年輕人宜彬彬有禮。」
Modesty *becomes* a young man.
「我已有準備來應付可能到來的最壞的情形。」
I am prepared for the worst that can *befall* me.
「這幢房子花了我三萬元。」
This house *cost* me thirty thousand dollars.
「你好久才把英文學好的？」
How long did it *take* you to master English?
「這件衣我穿了五年。」
This coat has *lasted* me five years.

「我的英文知識給了我很大的用場。」

My knowledge of English *stood* me in good stead.

在第四句型的構造中有下列三種形式：

1. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+Noun:

   I gave John (him) the book.

   I bought John (him) the book.

   I asked John (him)the question.

2. S.+Vt.+Noun (pronoun)+how (when, where, what, which)+to-Infinitive:

   I taught John (him) how to drive a car.

   Did he tell you when to start?

   Please show me where to find them.

   He told me what to do next.

   He showed me which (which way) to choose.

3. S.+Vt.+Noun (pronoun)+that (what, which, who, how, when, where, why, if, whether) Clause:

   He told me that he did not know it.

   He asked me what was the right way to do it.

   Will you tell me which (which book) you have read?

   He does not tell me who is going with us.

   He does not tell us whom he is going to bring.

   He asked me how (where, when, why) I was going to do it.

   Will you ask him if (whether) he is coming with us?

習　題　4

試將下列各句譯成英文，句中須採用授與動詞。

1. 只有人類有天賦的說話才能。
2. 他讓了坐位給她。
3. 他父親留給他一大筆遺產。
4. 我把那錢付給他了。
5. 我來把信唸給你聽。

6. 你給我唱一支中國歌好嗎?
7. 我很羨慕你運氣好。
8. 我很恭維了他。
9. 敬祝成功愉快。
10. 我很抱歉給你許多麻煩。
11. 他們甚至連極微薄的報酬都吝不給我。
12. 我希望你不至拒絕我的請求。
13. 旅客只許帶三十磅的行李。
14. 中國古話說,女子無才便是德。
15. 他們對自己的國家沒有一點責任感。
16. 她要不是爲着對她孩子的愛她就願意死去。
17. 我並不羨慕闊人的財富,那使他們非常憂煩。
18. 公平地說一句,他一直是一個好丈夫,也是一個好父親。
19. 那個惡棍長久逃避追捕終於落網。
20. 微物請賜哂納爲幸。

(8) 第五句型的不完全他動構造

"主語+述語+賓語+補語"

這是英文造句中四種要素具備的句型。句中的他動詞是不完全的,所以有了賓語,還是不能使意念完全,必得再加上一個補語才行。例如:

「他使父母快樂」。

He made his parents happy.

句中的 he 是主語, made 是述語, his parents 是賓語, happy 是補語。因爲這個述語是不完全他動詞,所以單有賓語不够,還得加上補語。這種動詞英文又稱 Factitive Verb (作爲動詞)。這個 factitive 意爲 making 因爲它是有所作爲的。照普通的話說,它能使人做什麽,使人變得怎樣,比方說「人們選舉他爲市長」,就是使他做市長。「兒子使父母快樂」,就是使父母變得快樂。「我們叫他傻瓜」,就是使他成爲傻瓜。諸如此類,都是表示作爲、使成、變得等的意思。

We named him John. (=He was named John.)

They call him Jack. (=He is usually called Jack.)

They appointed him governor. (=He was appointed governor.)

They elected Washington president. (=Washington was elected president.)

They crowned William king. (=William was crowned king.)

由於上面的這些例子，可見在「作爲動詞」後的賓語，都含有被動的意思，這就是「作爲」的結果。使動是可以包括在被動中的，如云 He made his parents happy. =His parents were made happy. 意即他的父母被使快樂，被兒子使他們快樂。

我們還記得在第二句型的不完全自動構造中，也是需要採用補語的，卽是說不完全自動詞與不完全他動詞，都需要有補語以完全文句的意念，不過前者爲主格補語，後者爲賓格補語，比較如下：

不完全自動與主格補語	不完全他動與賓格補語
She became (was made) his wife.	He made her his wife.
She became (was made) happy.	He made her happy.

賓格補語也和主格補語一樣，可分 Noun-Element (名詞及其同等語)和 Adjective-Element (形容詞及其同等語)兩大類。還可細分如下九項：

1. They appointed Nelson *admiral.* (Noun)
2. I believed it *him.* (Pronoun) (注)
3. He painted the house *green.* (Adjective)
4. What time do you expect her *back*? (Adverb)
5. I have always found him *to be* a true friend. (Infinitive)
6. I kept him *waiting.* (Present Participle)
7. We call such a way of life "*eating* the bread of idleness".

(注) I believed it [to be] him. 的 to be him 爲 believed 的 Objective Complement, 而 him 又是 be 的 Complement, 用的 Objective Case. 其 Passive Voice 的 It was believed to be he. 中的 to be he, 是 was believed 的 Subjective Complement, 而 he 又是 be 的 Complement, 用的 Nominative Case. 他例如: We suspected the intruders to be them. The intruders were suspected to be they. 在 to be 的後面是主格和賓格都可以援用的。

(Gerund)

8. I found everything *in good condition.* (Phrase)

9. We have made him *what he is.* (Clause)

他動詞中可作「作爲動詞」用的有 make, elect, think, have, keep, find, leave, create, show, appoint, name, suppose, call, prove, believe, imagine 等字，而某些形容詞或名詞前後加 "en" 時，也可作成具有作爲意味的動詞，如

To enable = to make able

To enfeeble = to make feeble

To weaken = to make weak

To strengthen = to make strong

To lengthen = to make longer

To shorten = to make shorter

To widen = to make wider

To harden = to make hard

To soften = to make soft

To broaden = to make broad or broader

上舉的「作爲動詞」中有些字如 find, think, show, prove 等，實際原來是不定詞構造 (Infinitive Construction) 的省略形，即：

We supposed him [to be] dead.

We found him [to be] alive.

You must show yourself [to be] a gentleman.

He has proved himself [to be] worthy of confidence.

在這種句型中有時因聲調的關係，常要在賓語地位上用 "it" 來代替不定詞，而將不定詞移到別處去，因爲 to be 作補語用固可，作賓語用就有些拗口，應加用一個代名詞的 "it" 進去，才合乎慣用語法，如

「我覺得這樣做是我的義務。」

一句，如譯爲 I think *to do* so my duty. 則不順口，應改爲

I think *it* my duty to do so.

才妥。又如

「我認爲那個要實行很難。」

一句，如譯爲 I found *to put* it in practice very difficult 則不順口，應譯爲

I found *it* very difficult to put it in practice.

才合乎英語的慣用法(usage)。

同是一個他動詞可用作完全他動，也可用作不完全他動，如

(a) I found the book *easily*.

(b) I found the book *easy*.

在 (a) 句中的 found 爲完全他動詞，easily 爲修飾動詞的副詞，全句意爲「很容易地找到了那本書」。在(b)句中的 found 爲不完全他動詞，在賓語外，還得加一個補語，意念才能完全。第二句意爲「這本書我讀了覺得很容易」，即容易讀懂的意思。easy 是修飾 book 的，原是說 I found the book was easy，略去了 was 便成此型，而那主格補語便成爲賓格補語了。比較：

(a) I believed the untrue report. (完全他動詞)

(b) I believed the report untrue. (不完全他動詞)

(a) I make a point of siding with the weaker party. (完全)

(b) I make it a rule to side with the weaker party. (不完全)

(a) I made a workbox out of it. (完全)

(b) I made it into a workbox. (不完全)

英文還可以說成這樣的妙語：She made him a good husband because she made him a good wife. (因爲她成爲他的好妻子，所以也把他做成了好丈夫)。前面一個 made 是作爲動詞，後面一個 made 是授與動詞。

1. 認識動詞，即有心靈感覺 (mental perception) 的動詞，其賓格補語主要是表示性質的，如 think, consider, call, believe, imagine, find, prove 等。在那賓格與補語之間，有時可以加上 "to be" 的字眼，例如：

「我素來認爲他是誠實的。」

I have always thought him honest.

「軍隊覺得在酷熱下進軍幾不可能。」

The troops found it almost impossible to march in the great heat.

「那孩子走出學校進入社會時，並不以爲統治是荒誕的，權威是可笑的。」

When he leaves school and enters the world, the boy is not disposed to consider rule absurd and authority ridiculous.

「他確實不是邪惡的，不過人們易於想像他的性格是柔弱的。」

Vicious he could assuredly not be, but one easily imagined him weak in character.

「從那種娛樂的形式看來，好像可以判明他的誠實。」

Such a form of pastime seems to prove him sincere.

2. 感覺動詞，即有身體感覺(physical perception)的動詞，有 see, hear, feel, want, wish, like, hold, keep, leave, have, wear 等。

「現今我覺得我的生活有說不出的空虛。」

Now I feel my life unspeakably empty.

「他們都指望我死，想得我的錢。」

They all want me dead, and are hankering for my money. (Thackeray, *Vanity Fair*)

「她回答說她完全滿足於現況，不再想望別的什麽。」

She replied that she was quite contented and wished nothing different.

「她披頭散髮。」

She wore her hair loose.

「那消息使得我漠然地感到不安。」

The news left me vaguely uneasy.

「她請醫生替她檢查了眼睛。」

She had her eyes examined by the doctor.

3. 有些作爲動詞，在賓格補語之前，有加上一個 "as" 的必要。這個 "as" 是專爲那動詞而添附的，並無特殊意義。

「她認爲從那個根源可以產生任何好的事情出來，並非尋常的現象。」

She regarded it as extraordinary that anything good could come from that source. (Gissing, *Life's Morning*)

「他們認爲已經絕望，就把他放棄了。」

They gave him up as hopeless.

「我認爲他是一個很誠實的人。」

I esteem him as a very honest man.

「有人解釋說，這個是有傷達克夫人的人格的。」

Some persons understood this as an imputation on Mrs Ducker.

「從許多隨筆家及雜文家中，選出這些人作爲最能代表維多利亞朝的特徵的。」

These were selected, from among many essayists and miscellaneous writers, as most typical of the Victorian Age.

「在談論她的時候，巴氏夫婦說她羞怯那是不錯的。」

The Boxendales were not wrong in discussing her as shy. (Gissing, *Life's Morning*)

4. 有些賓格補語是表示由那動作的結果而產生的狀態。這類動詞多半有使動意味 (make, render, set, drive 等)，或表示一般的動作 (strike, beat, shoot, fold 等)。

「我要解除他的一切困難。」

I will set all his troubles right.

「我在那種地方看到她，眞使我驚訝得啞口無言。」

I was struck dumb with astonishment at the sight of her in such a place.

「休士那個傢伙是可以做出很卑鄙的行爲的。」

That fellow Hughs could make himself quite nasty. (Galsworthy, *Fraternity*)

「他決心對公衆開放他那美麗的花園。」

He decided to throw open his own beautiful gardens to the people.

「你那感恩戴德之心，使你不可能對你的恩人做出這種事來。」

Your gratitude should have rendered you incapable of such

conduct towards your benefactor.

5. 反身自動詞如要賓格補語時，也像作爲動詞時一樣，那補語是表示動作的結果所產生的狀態的。

「他說話把聲音都說啞了。」

He talked himself hoarse.

「大多數的人在那種情形中是欲罷不能的——他們都喝得爛醉如泥。」

Most people in that state can't stop—they drank themselves dead drunk. (Galsworthy, *Motley*)

「他們談得睡着了。」

They talked themselves asleep.

「我們必須擺脫這種古老的傷感的想法。」

We have got to shake ourselves free of the old sentimental notions.

「啊，我只是要求一點——請你清醒過來聽我說話。」

"Why, this is what I want—and just shake yourself sober and listen, will you?" (Eliot, *Silas Marner*)

6. 在採取賓格補語的他動詞中，如 see，原是指「看到的狀態」，現在却變成指「看到的時候」，而在狀態上加有時間的意味了。

「我還會再見到他活着的人嗎？」

Shall I see him again alive?

「我記得他年輕的時候。」

I remember him young. (Lawrence, *White Peacock*)

「她看到他的時候，他是年輕、驕傲、而又強壯的，現在他已年老，疲憊不堪，樣子可怕，而已經死了。」

She saw him young, and proud, and strong, and now he was old, and worn, and horrible, and dead. (Bennett, *Old Wives' Tale*)

在第五句型的構造中有下列九種形式。

1. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+Noun (Pronoun):

I thought him an honest man.

I thought your brother you.

2. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+Adjective:
   Her words made the man (him) angry.
3. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+-ing:
   I saw John (him) entering the room.
4. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+-ed:
   This word made his master (him) very pleased.
5. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+to-Infinitive:
   I want John (him) to come here at once.
6. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+zero-Infinitive:
   No one can make John (him) do the work.
   Will you please let me go in his place?
   I did not see anyone (him) enter the room.
7. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+as+Adjective (Noun):
   They represented him as reliable.
   We will consider Hamlet as an example of a Shakespearian tragedy.
8. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+Prep.+Noun:
   He put his affairs in order.
   I found him in good health.
   We consider this of the essence of the English character.
   I thought it of no use.
   He has set a new scheme on foot.
   I mistook him for my brother.
   Please make yourself at home.
9. S.+Vt.+Noun (Pronoun)+Clause:
   He has made the company what it is today.
   Call it what you will.

這五種句型只是一些不同的表達方式而已，所以我們可以用來表達同樣的一個意思，如

「戰爭使我們的生意蕭條。」

(1*st pattern*) Our business has suffered not a little through

the war.

(*2nd pattern*) The effect upon our business of the war has been striking.

(*3rd pattern*) The war has affected our business to a remarkable extent.

(*4th pattern*) The war has done our business much harm.

(*5th pattern*) The war has rendered our business dull.

習 題 5

1. 美國人民決不會選舉一個黑人做總統的。
2. 他們選舉王君爲議員。
3. 戶外運動使我們心身強健。
4. 世人都以爲他正直，實則他是一個騙子。
5. 我吃過晚飯照例出去散步一回。
6. 在別人沒有注意的時候，他走出那房間去了。
7. 我換了一張新牌照，又有三年好用。
8. 我們發現他躺在馬路邊上。
9. 他們正在我園裡偷水果，我把他們抓住了。
10. 我們的身體和衣服都要保持清潔，以免生病。
11. 那叫作所答非所問。
12. 我認爲他說的不適切。
13. 我感覺到那問題很難解決。
14. 我認爲把那件事情守秘密是賢明的。
15. 荀爽以御李(膺)爲榮。
16. 我把他看做我的恩人。
17. 他把國家的情形說得十分令人慨歎。
18. 他們把她描寫成天仙一般的美女。
19. 他的英文極好。
20. 我國向來尊重學問。

貳、由構造來分的造句

(1) 用單句來翻譯

所謂單句，英文叫作 Simple Sentence，是在一個句子中，只包含得有一個主語和一個述語的，例如

Birds sing. (鳥鳴。)

What have you been doing? (你在做什麽？)

What beautiful hair that little girl has! (那小女孩有多麼美麗的頭髮呀！)

單句並不一定是很短的，有時因爲修飾語加多了，也可以把句子拉得很長，現舉幾個例子如下：

Nearly all the boys in this class go somewhere for the summer. (幾乎班上所有的學生都要到什麽地方去過暑假。)

They saw a burning house, standing a little distance from the road, with some stately fir-trees in the foreground. (他們見到離開大路不遠的地方，有一幢房子起火了，在那房子前面長得有一排森森的樅樹。)

Caught in a shower on his way to his house in Lloyd Road, a tall English gentleman, a teacher of English in one of the most flourishing private schools in Singapore, began running, with some books under his arm, in order to catch a bus going at full speed about twenty yards ahead of him. (一個身材高大的英國人，是新加坡頂發達的一間私立學校的英文教員，在回返勞益路他的住宅去的途中，遇到了驟雨，他手臂下挾着幾本書，開始向前跑，想去搭乘在他二十碼光景前面以全速力在開行的那輛巴士車。)

我們由中文翻譯英文的時候，應運用英文各種慣用的句法，採取各種不同的方式，卽以單句而論，也是有許多方式可以用來把句子擴大的：㈠用補語的，㈡用賓語的，㈢用形容詞或副詞的，㈣用動詞片語的，

㈤用獨立片語的，㈥用副詞片語的，㈦用介詞片語的，㈧用名詞片語的，㈨用代名詞片語的，㈩用分詞片語的。所以在主語和述語以外，還可以增加許許多多的字句，因為上述十種方式，並不限於一句只許用一種，我們同時可以用上好幾種，如上舉最後的一個例句，caught in a shower 是分詞片語，a tall Enghish 是形容詞，a teacher of English 是同格名詞，running 是賓語，with some books under his arm 是副詞片語，in order to catch a bus 是介詞片語，going at full speed 是形容詞片語等等，所以原來只有主語 gentleman 和述語 began 兩個字，現却拉長到五十五個字了。

（一） 用補語的

不完全的動詞必須有補語，才能使句子表達出一個完全的意念來。自動詞用主格補語，他動詞用賓格補語。

(a) 主格補語

「他看去很年輕。」

He looks *young*.

「華盛頓小時是一個好孩子。」

Washington was *a good boy*.

「中國是要養兒防老的。」

In China a son should be *the staff* of his parents' old age.

(b) 賓格補語

「人民選舉他做總統。」

People elected him *president*.

「他使國家富強了。」

He made his country *wealthy and powerful*.

（二） 用賓語的

英文的他動詞是要加上賓語才能成句的。用賓語的句子可分下列六種譯法：

(a) 用一個賓語

「除你以外我沒有朋友。」

I have no *friend* but *you*.

「天生麗質。」

Nature has molded *her form* and *features* with masterly touch.

(b) 用兩個賓語

「那老人講一些有趣的故事給我們聽。」

That old man tells *us* amusing *stories*.

「一磅煙絲只够他吸兩個禮拜。」

A pound of tobacco only lasts *him* a *fortnight*.

(c) 用表結果的賓語 (Object of Result)

「她點燃了一把火。」

She lights a *fire*.

「他在木板上鑽了一個洞。」

He bores a *hole* in the plank.

「我在那上面畫了一朶花。」

I painted a *flower* on it.

(d) 用同系賓語 (Cognate Object)

「他發出了一聲短促的苦笑。」

He laughed a little short ugly *laugh*.

「他過着一種淒涼寂寞的生活。」

He is living a sad and lonely *life*.

(e) 用反身賓語 (Reflexive Object)

「他在晚會上感到很快樂。」

He *enjoyed himself* at the party.

「你應利用圖書館的書。」

You should *avail yourself* of the books in the library.

(f) 用保留賓語 (Retained Object)

凡有間接和直接兩個賓語的文句，如由主動改爲被動時，通常有兩種說法，即每次只能用一個賓語，間接的或直接的，作爲主語，其未用作主語的，就稱爲保留賓語，如

「我給了那孩子一枝自來水筆。」

I gave the *boy* a fountain *pen.*

如將上句改爲被動時態，則有下列兩種形式：

The *boy* was given a fountain pen by me.

A fountain *pen* was given the boy by me.

（三） **用形容詞或副詞的**

(A) 用形容詞的，又可分爲 (a) 敍述的用法，(b) 限定的用法，(c) 名詞的用法，(d) 副詞的用法，(e) 同格的用法五種譯法。

(a) 敍述的用法 (Predicative Use)

「這朶玫瑰花是紅的。」

This rose is *red.*

「他對那結果感到滿意。」

He was *content* with the result. (cf. contented)

「這値不得那樣麻煩。」

It is not *worth* the trouble. (cf. worthy)

專限於敍述用法的形容詞有：ill (cf. sick), well (cf. healthy), glad, sorry, exempt 等，其他還有以 "a-" 開頭的字，如 alone, asleep, awake, afraid, alike, ashamed, akin 等，例如：He was fast asleep. (熟睡)。也多半只有敍述用法。

(b) 限定的用法 (Attributive Use)

「這是一朶紅玫瑰花。」

This is a *red* rose.

「知足常樂。」

A *contented* person is happy with his status quo.

「他找到一個敢於和他相抗的敵人。」

He found a *worthy* enemy.

「兒童敎育必須由所能聘到的最好的敎師來施行。」

The education of children must be conducted by the best *attainable* instructors.

「沒有一件偉大的事不是由熱忱來做成的。」

Nothing *great* was ever achieved without enthusiasm. (Emerson)

(c) 名詞的用法 (Noun Use)

「他有審美的眼光。」

He has an eye for *the beautiful.*

「濶人也有他們的苦惱。」

The rich have their troubles too.

「級長阻止強者欺侮弱者。」

The monitors hinder *the strong* from bullying *the weak.*

「她是一個俗氣的富婆。」

She's one of *the vulgar rich.* (Gissing)

「他對周圍老少的人羣投以一瞥。」

He cast a look at the crowd of *old and young* about him. (對稱時可略去冠詞)

(d) 副詞的用法 (Adverbial Use)

「他們平安到達了。」

They arrived *safe.* (=They were safe when they arrived. 句中的 safe 爲補語)。

「紅顏薄命。」

He died *young.* (=He was young when he died. 句中的 young 爲補語)。

「我很想對你做得誠實一點。」

I want to act *honest* with you.

「看得輕鬆一點吧。」

Take it *easy.*

「我大爲嚇倒了。」

I'm *awful* frightened.

「那會很合我的式。」

That will suit me *fine.*

(e) 同格的用法 (Appositive Use)

「一個飢餓疲憊的獵戶睡在牀上。」

A hunter, *hungry and exhausted,* slept on the bed.

「他又憂傷又疲倦，慢慢地走回家去了。」

Sad and weary, he slowly walked home.

「他老是神經過敏，這時尤其如此。」

Always sensitive, he was especially so at this moment. (Gissing)

「她的面貌雖不難看却很平凡。」

Her features, though not *plain*, were insignificant. (Austen)

「仍然是綠的葉子被風吹得從灌木籬笆上飄落下來。」

The leaves, *still green*, were tossed off the hedgerow trees by the wind.

(B) 用副詞的，又可分爲 (a) 修飾動詞、形容詞或其他副詞，(b)修飾名詞或代名詞，(c) 修飾副詞片語，(d) 修飾全句，(e) 作形容詞用，(f) 作名詞用，(g)作補語用七種譯法。

(a) 修飾動詞、形容詞或其他副詞：

「她聽了那笑話開心地大笑。」

She laughed *heartily* at the joke.

「我現在已準備好了。」

I am ready *now*.

「她英語說得非常好。」

She speaks English remarkably *well*.

(b) 修飾名詞或代名詞：

「這事小孩子也能做。」

Even a child can do it.

「聖人也不免有過。」

Even Homer sometimes nods.

「只有你能猜。」

Only you can guess.

「已有大批人聚集在那裏了。」

Quite a crowd had already gathered there.

「唯有約翰知道這事。」

John *alone* knows about it.

「你還要什麼？」

What *else* do you want?

「我也有煩心的事。」

I, *too*, have troubles.

(c) 修飾副詞片語:

「我們及時到達。」

We arrived *just* in time.

「我在戰爭結束後隨卽來到新加坡。」

I came to Singapore *soon* after the war.

「正十時關大門。」

The gate is shut *exactly* at 10 o'clock.

「他差不多快渡過河去了。」

He is *almost* across the river.

「他旅行了世界一週。」

He has traveled *entirely* around the world.

(d) 修飾全句:

「簡單地說,事實就是這樣。」

Briefly the facts are these.

「很幸運地我去他正在家。」

Fortunately I found him at home.

「確實你是錯了。」

Certainly you are in the wrong.

「他愚笨地把那鵝殺了。」

He *foolishly* killed the goose.

「那眞是一個好計畫。」

That is an excellent plan *indeed*.

(e) 作形容詞用:

「這是下行車嗎?」

Is this a *down* train?

「在那邊那位紳士是他的父親。」

That gentleman *there* is his father.

「我在歸途中遇到了他。」

I met him on my way *back*.

「從這件事產生的不愉快情形，和吃了大肉的早餐，可能就是他對一般世界失去希望的原因吧。」

The unpleasant circumstances resulting from this together with heavy meat breakfasts, may probably have contributed to his desponding views of the world *generally* (Eliot)

「他一切都完了。」

All is *over* with him.

「我們一定要想辦法趕走這些蒼蠅。」

We must do something to keep the flies *off*.

「他把襪子穿翻了。」

He put on his socks wrong side *out*.

(f) 作名詞用：

「從這兒去有多遠？」

How far is it from *here*?

「今天是我生日。」

Today is my birthday.

「那個描寫了人生的浮沉。」

It described the *ups and downs* of life.

(g) 作補語用：

「火熄滅了。」

The fire is *out*.

「戰爭結束了。」

The war is *over*.

「薔薇開了。」

The roses are *out*. (=open)

「幕已揭開。」

The curtain was *up*.

（四）　用動詞片語的

英文動詞除單字（如 come 等）及羣字（如 will come 或 will have come 等）外，還有動詞片語（verb phrase），那是動詞和其他詞類，尤其是名詞，結合而成的一種片語，常另具特殊意義，所以我們特別列成一項，來供翻譯時採用。

「你不應該拿你小弟弟們來開玩笑。」

You should not *make fun of* your little brothers.

「明天市公會堂要舉行音樂會。」

A concert is to *take place* at the town hall tomorrow.

「我們沒有錢就生活不了。」

We cannot *get along* without money.

「他趕不上班。」

He couldn't *keep up with* the class.

「我期待着你的回信。」

I *look forward to* receiving your reply.

「你必得把所作的決定重新加以考慮。」

You must *think better of* your resolution.

「我規定在晚飯前出外散步一回。」

I *make a point of* taking a walk before supper.

「我不作弄天眞老實的人。」

I don't *play a trick on* innocent people.

「他的脚有什麼毛病。」

He *has something the matter with* his foot.

「我和那件事沒有關係。」

I *have nothing to do with* the matter.

（五）　用獨立片語的

獨立片語有三種，有用獨立不定詞構成的，有用獨立分詞構成的，有用獨立介詞構成的。茲分別採用翻譯如下：

(a)　獨立不定詞。這是用來修飾全句的。從文法上講，它和主句毫無聯繫。

「老實說，我並不喜歡他。」

To tell the truth, I do not like him.

「他可謂一部活辭典。」

He is, *so to speak*, a walking dictionary.

「使事情更糟的，天又下起雨來了」。

To make the matter worse, it began to rain.

此外還有 to speak candidly, to be frank with you, to be sure, to return to the subject, to be brief, to make a long story short, strange to say, needless to say 等等。

(b) 獨立分詞。這個與主語無任何文法上的關係，其形式有下列三種：

1. 分詞前帶有意味上的主語的

「太陽落山，孩子們回家去了。」

The sun having set, the children went home.

「有他在此，便無危險。」

He being here, there is no danger.

「工作做完，他們就回家了。」

The work done, they left for home.

「春天來了，我們到公園去散步。」

Spring coming on, we go to gardens to take a walk.

「他是我的長輩，我應當尊敬他。」

He being my elder, I should respect him.

2. 無人稱的獨立分詞

「嚴格地說，他並不算一個愛國者。」

Strictly speaking, he is not a patriot.

「以他的年齡而論，他是夠聰明的了。」

Considering his age, he is very clever.

「從各方面來考慮，他的命運是幸福的。」

Taking all things into consideration, his lot is a happy one.

其他如 judging from, talking of, 等皆是。

3. 由 with 引導的獨立分詞

「那小婦人慢慢前進，眼睛惡意地釘在那張粉紅色的紙上。」

The little woman advanced slowly *with her eyes fixed malevolently on the pink paper*. (Wells)

「這個小村莊是位於平坦雄偉的牧場和麥田的中央，前有一列白楊樹在風中搖曳。」

This little village was set midst flat breadths of pasture and corn-lands, *with long lines of poplars on the foreground bending in the wind*.

(c) 由表感情上之結果(resulting emotion)的 "to" 所引導的獨立片語。

「使我喜慰的，我發覺他還活着。」

To my joy, I found him alive.

「使我吃驚的，他居然把一切都說出來了。」

To my surprise, he confessed everything.

「使我失望的，他竟不同意我的計畫。」

To my disappointment, he did not consent to my plan.

「使我滿意的，是他終於解決了那個問題。」

To my satisfaction, he has solved the problem at last.

「使他悲傷的，他知道他父親去世了。」

To his sorrow, he learned that his father was dead.

(六) 用副詞片語的

「當心地寫。」

Write it *with care*.

「天黑了，我們才回家。」

We came home *after dark*.

「他現在住在本村。」

He lives *in this village at present*.

「親切地對待他。」

Treat him *with kindness*. (=kindly)

「我出外散步去了。」

I went out *for a walk.*

「他們匆匆回家了。」

They went home *in a hurry.*

「我們努力用功以求考取。」

We work hard *to pass the examination.*

「這本書太難懂。」

This book is too difficult *to understand.*

（七） 用介詞片語的

介詞片語有兩種形式皆可用來翻譯。一種是介詞片語 (preposition phrase)，另一種是介詞的片語 (prepositional phrase)。所謂介詞片語是一個名詞或形容詞前後都有介詞而構成的片語，如 by means of, on account of, at the mercy of, for the purpose of, in return for, in respect to, in love with 等等，而所謂介詞的片語，則爲介詞加名詞。其中的名詞實爲那個介詞的賓語，如 of diligence, in my hand, with pleasure 等等，其功用可修飾名詞，有時也可修飾動詞。

(a) 介詞片語

「他因生病，所以沒有來。」

He did not come *on account of* illness.

「他們遠赴臺灣。」

They went *as far as* Formosa.

「賈克由於不屈不撓的精神而獲得成功。」

Jack succeeded *by dint of* perseverance.

「思想由言語表達。」

Thoughts are expressed *by means of* words.

「旅人以驢代馬。」

The traveller is using an ass *as a substitute for* a horse.

「他和她結婚是看上了她的財產。」

He married her *with an eye to* her fortune.

「我喜歡小黑(狗名)，是因爲它的頭腦好。」

I love Blackie *for the sake of* his sense.

「他想要建房子，所以買了一塊地皮。」

He has bought a piece of land ***with a view to*** building a house.

(b) 介詞的片語

「一個品行優良的人受人尊敬。」

A man *of good character* is to be respected.

凡 of+abstract noun=adjective, of use=useful, of diligence=diligent, of freedom=free, of security=secure, of importance=important, of wisdom=wise, of kindness=kind, of beauty=beautiful 等等。

「蘋果放在籃子裡。」

The apples are ***in the basket.***

「國王死後政府改變了很多。」

After the king's death, many changed were made ***in the government.***

「瑪麗對他那樣不客氣使我感到羞辱。」

I am mortified ***by Mary's treating him so unkindly.***

「那個大建築工程已經開始五年了。」

The great structure has been ***under construction about five years***

「他的語言教授法是最新式的。」

He is very ***up to date in his methods of language teaching.***

「我們吃點鹿肉換個口味。」

Let us have venison ***for a change.***

「一個健康的人一般都是樂天的。」

A healthy man, ***as a general rule,*** is optimistic.

(八)　用名詞片語的

凡作名詞用的片語，便是名詞片語，例如：

「他是一個誠實的人。」

He is ***an honest man.***

「獅爲萬獸之王。」

The lion is *the king of beasts.*

「我喜歡打網球。」

I like *to play tennis.*

「我不曉得要怎樣辦。」

I did not know *what to do.*

「教育部批准了他出國深造。」

The Ministry of Education has ratified his going abroad for higher studies.

「母親很高興，他這樣快回家。」

Mother rejoiced at his *coming home so soon.*

（九） 用代名詞片語的

「夫妻應當互助。」

Husband and wife should help *each other.*

「人們喜歡互毆。」

People like to fight *one another.*

（十） 用分詞片語的

(a) 用現在分詞的

「在路上走着，我遇見了一個老朋友。」

Walking along the street, I met an old friend.

「因爲疲倦了，他躺下睡一會兒。」

Being tired, he lay down to sleep.

「用趾尖行走，我躡足走到了他的背後。」

Walking on tiptoe, I approached him behind.

「說完這個他遞了一封信給我。」

Saying this, he handed a letter to me.

「向右轉彎，你就可看到你要找的屋子。」

Turning to the right, you will find the house you are looking for.

「他說英語，時常說錯。」

He often makes mistakes when *speaking English.*

「情侶的時間是很長的，雖則感覺很短。」

For lovers' hours are long, though *seeming short.*

(b) 用過去分詞的

「划船划得疲倦了，我一定要休息一下。」

Fatigued with rowing, I must have a rest.

「極其細心建築出來的這些廟宇，是不容許加以冒瀆的。」

Built with infinite care, the temples are not allowed to desecrate.

習　題　6

試用英文單句譯出下列各句：

1. 太陽落山了，我們回家去。
2. 忙中有錯。
3. 我兩年前才認識他的。
4. 請代我謝謝他的禮物。
5. 言歸正傳，他們當天便結婚了。
6. 以貌取人，失之子羽。
7. 貪愛錢財是萬惡之源。
8. 他來看我目的在借錢。
9. 同盟國家互相猜忌。
10. 名譽與金錢無關。
11. 他賺了一大筆錢，他母親高興極了。
12. 寫完了那封信，我就出去散步了。
13. 他易於滿足。
14. 早起三朝當一天。
15. 病從口入。
16. 一寸黃金買不到一寸光陰。
17. 知人知面不知心。
18. 破帽之下多好人。
19. 智慧就在認識機會。
20. 人誰無過。

(2) 用合句來翻譯

所謂合句，英文叫作 Compound Sentence，是由兩個或兩個以上的獨立子句 (Independent Clause) 所構成的。採用這種句型來翻譯的時候，實比採用單句還要來得簡單，但要注意一點，子句與子句間要用對等連詞(Coordinate Conjunction) 來結合成爲合句才是。對等連詞約可分爲下列四種：

(一) 累積連詞 (Cumulative Conjunction)：有 and, both......and, not only......but also, no less than, as well as, furthermore, besides, moreover 等。

(二) 選擇連詞 (Alternative Conjunction)：有 or, either......or, nor, neither......nor, otherwise, or else 等。

(三) 反意連詞 (Adversative Conjunction)：有 but, yet, while, nevertheless, still, however, whereas, only, notwithstanding 等。

(四) 推論連詞 (Illative Conjunction)：有 for, therefore, so, thus, hence, wherefore, consequently, accordingly 等。

在以上的對等連詞中，有的並不是眞正的連詞，而是接續副詞 (Conjunctive Adverb)，又稱關係副詞 (Relative Adverb)，亦來用作對等連詞的，例如：

「那裡沒有一個人，所以我也就走了。」

There was no one there, *so* I went away.

「我們在那裡呆了一個鐘頭就回家了。」

We stayed there an hour; *then* we went home.

「你一旦露出任何恐懼的跡象，他就會攻擊你。」

Once you show any sign of fear, he will attack you.

「她是留學美國的，所以她英語說得好。」

She is an American returned student, *therefore* she speaks good English.

「這書一脫稿，我馬上和出版家訂好了出版合約。」

Immediately this was done, I completed an arrangement with my publishers.

「我很想去，不過我却不願冒着雨去。」

I want to go very much; *still* I do not care to go through the rain.

「他是一個聰明人，而仍不免常犯錯誤。」

He is a wise man, *nevertheless* (或 none the less 或 and yet) he often makes mistakes.

「我很願意做，只是我太忙了。」

I would do it with pleasure, *only* (=except that)I am too busy.

「我正要說話，鈴子就響了。」

I was just going to speak, *when* the bell rang.

此外還有原是不對等的連詞，如 as, until, while, when 等，有時也可拿來作對等連詞用，例如：

「他是一個美國人，我聽他說話就知道。」

He is an American, *as* I know from his accent.

「在此他又犯了一般以貌取人的通病，那過後就可以證明的。」

Here he fell into the common error of judging by appearances, *as* will be proved hereafter.

「那個嬰孩變得愈來愈虛弱，終於不久就死了。」

The little baby grew more and more sickly, *until* presently it died.

「一條輪船正用全速力在走，突然一下駛入淺水而觸礁了。」

A steamer was going along at full speed, *when* it suddenly got into shallow water and ran aground.

「他正想要用脚後跟踐碎那株小草，而一個新的念頭使他停下來了。」

He was about to crush the plant with his heel, *when* a new thought made him stop.

「某種習慣一直在形成而牢固起來，終至變得牢不可破。」

All the while a certain habit is forming and hardening, *until* at last we find ourselves helpless.

「有的人富，有的人窮。」

Some men are rich, *while* (=whereas) others are poor.

「當我在紐約的時候，我見過他好幾次。」

I saw him several times *while* I was in New York.

「我弟弟發了財，而我還依舊窮困。」

I have remained poor, *while* my brother has made a fortune.

「那帽子的顏色我雖則很喜歡，但形式我不愛。」

While (=Though) I like the colour of the hat, I do not like its shape.

上面最後兩例是由其前一例的基本用法逐漸引申出來的。

現將眞正的對等連詞的用法，例示如下：

「小紅低唱我吹簫。」

I played on the flute, *and* Hsiao Hung sang to it.

「他開始說話，全體肅靜。」

He began to speak, *and* all was still.

「過幾分鐘他就睡熟了。」

A few minutes more, *and* he lay sound asleep.

「趕快，那末你就可以趕上火車。」

Make haste, *and* you will catch the train.

「他在恐怖中從家中逃走了，從那以後我再沒有見到他。」

He fled from the house in terror, *and* I have never seen him since.

「你一定要把文書歸檔，否則你就不會受到信賴。」

You must have your papers on file, *or* no credit will be given.

「穿上你的外套，否則你會着凉的。」

Put on your overcoat, *or* you will catch cold.

「要麼進來，要麼出去。」

Either come in *or* go out.

「你必須說實話，或者什麼也不說。」

You must *either* tell the truth *or* say nothing.

「強使污物留下的話，不是引起皮膚病，就是傷害血液。」

Either the skin will become diseased, *or* the blood will be injured by being forced to retain its impurities.

「趕快，否則你就要遲了。」

Hurry up *or else* you'll be late.

「我沒有錢，我也不想有錢。」

I am not rich, *nor* do I wish to be.

「旣非他錯，也非我錯。」

Neither he is mistaken *nor* I am.

「約翰和我都沒有到會。」

Neither John *nor* I attended the meeting.

「他是一個能幹的人，但這問題對他也嫌太難了。」

He is an able man, *but* the problem was too hard for him.

「他的身體虛弱，但他仍要工作。」

He is not in good health, *but* he still wants to work.

「你現在必得離去，但下回你可以再來。」

You must go now, *but* you may come again.

「他不可能懶惰，因爲他有很大的進步。」

He cannot be idle, *for* he makes remarkable progress.

「油完了，因爲燈已熄滅。」

The oil must be out, *for* the lamp has gone out.

「林肯不但是黑人的朋友，也是弱者和無告者的朋友。」

Lincoln was *not only* a friend of the negroes, *but* a friend of the weak and the helpless.

「他不但給了我錢，還給了我一個裝錢的皮包。」

He gave me *not only* the money, *but also* a purse to put it in.

「事業的成功，不但要有精力，還得有耐性。」

Not only energy, *but* patience is necessary to success in life.

「你須聽話，否則你將受罰。」

Do what you are told; *otherwise* you will be punished.

「抓住那個機會，不然你將後悔。」

Seize the chance, *otherwise* you will regret it.

「有人喜歡吃肥肉，而另有人就討厭它。」

Some people like fat meat, *whereas* others hate it.

「他很聰明而他的妹妹就有點愚笨。」

He is clever *whereas* his sister is foolish.

「總督看了請願書，但他仍然拒絕赦免那孩子。」

The governor read the petition; *nevertheless* he refused to pardon the boy.

「他有學問又有經驗。」

He has experience *as well as* knowledge.

合句有時不用連詞而用標點也是可以的，尤其在古文中常有見到，例如：

Cowards die many times before their death; The valiant never taste of death but once. (Shakespeare, *Jul. Caes.* II, ii, 32f.) (對照意味)

John Told had drunk a large quantity of liquor, he was both merry and tipsy. (Powys) (因果關係)

Shakespeare was born in 1564; he died in 1616. (羅列一起)

A writer wants something more than money for his work: he wants permanence (繼續談論)

而聖經上的合句則連詞和標點都用得很多：

And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell; and great was the fall of it. (Matt. vii. 27)

合句有時既可借用複句的不對等連詞，則合句與複句豈不變得一樣的而沒有分別了，須知二者的分別並不全在連詞，還有其他重要的因素。凡用有限制用法的關係詞 (Relative) 的文句就是複句，用有非限制用法卽繼續用法的關係詞（通例在其前有 Comma）的文句便是合句，如：

He is the man *whom* I met in the train. (複)

I met Mr. A, *who* (=and he) told me the news. (合)

This is the place *where* I was born. (複)

Then my parents went to America, *where* (=and there) I was born. (合)

Then I went to Rome, *where* (=and there) I stopped for a week. (合)

This book, *which* (=though it) appeared about a month ago, has already gone through several editions. (複)

When at home, he shuts himself up in his study. (複)

在合句中連詞的位置多半是放在兩個子句之間, 如:

He is young, *and yet* he is prudent.

I was ill, *so* I did not go.

I knew it was him *the minute* I saw him.

但是複句的連詞就多半是放在附屬子句之前, 如:

Let us go to bed, *as* it is late.

Though he is poor, he is honest.

Brave *as* she was (=*Though* she was brave), she trembled.

Brave *as* she was (=*Because* she was brave), she attacked.

習　題　7

試用英文合句譯出下列各句:

1. 日暮途遠。
2. 不自由毋寧死。
3. 聰明人爲求知而讀書, 愚人則爲文憑。
4. 天將下雨, 因爲晴雨表漸見降低。
5. 幾家歡樂幾家愁。
6. 他自己家裏有很多事要做, 而他却來幫我的忙。
7. 他硬不肯聽, 要我怎樣去說服他。
8. 他分明知道打擾我們, 他還要說個不停。
9. 他借我五千元, 只還來兩千。
10. 當我對你說話的時候, 請你不要作聲。
11. 他有錢無處用, 而我無錢可用。
12. 他是唯一的候選人, 因此他當選了。
13. 他是很孚衆望的候選人, 結果他是會當選的。

14. 我憎恨他，而你只是不喜歡他而已。
15. 人生不滿百，常懷千歲憂。
16. 我必得把他的一份給他，因我已答應兩人平分。
17. 我到達車站的時候，火車已經開走了。
18. 他口中高談和平，而實際却帶給我們戰爭。
19. 我接受了他善意的勸告，所以我現在並不覺得新生活徒勞無功。
20. 這種工作也許別人可以，我是不能做的。

(3) 用複句來翻譯

所謂複句，英文叫作 Complex Sentence，是由兩個或兩個以上的獨立子句所構成的。構成合句的子句一定是對立的，而構成複句的子句，其中只有一個是主要子句(Principal Clause)，其餘的都是附屬子句(Dependent Clause)。在複句中所用的連詞，不是對等連詞，而是不對等連詞(Subordinate Conjunction)。這種不對等連詞，多半是放在附屬子句前面的。

依照外形分類，不對等連詞可分爲下列四種：

(一) 單純連詞 (Simple Conjunction): as, if, than, that, though, lest, when, since, while, etc.

(二) 複合連詞 (Compound Conjunction): although, because, unless, whereas, etc.

(三) 關聯連詞 (Correlative Conjunction): as......as, as......so, so......as, so......that, whether......or, etc.

(四) 片語連詞 (Phrase Conjunction): as soon as, as (or so) long as, as if, as though, in case, in order that, in that, for fear (that), the moment, etc.

英文連詞常用其他詞類來充任，如：

1. 名詞：*Next time* I see you, I will lend you the book. (下次我看見你的時候，我就把那本書借給你。)
   I'll tell him *the moment* he gets in. (他一來我就告訴他。)
2. 代名詞：*Whichever* you choose, I'll give it to you. (隨便你選擇

那一個,我都可以給你。)

3. 動詞: *Suppose* I were going away, should you be sorry? (我如離去,你會覺得難過嗎?)

4. 副詞: *Now* (that) you are here, you'd better stay. (既來之,則安之。)

5. 介詞: You will not have better health *without* you take better care of yourself. (你要是不更加講究衛生,你就不會有更好的健康。)

For all (that) you say, I still like him. (不管你怎樣說,我還是喜歡他。)

用介詞 without 作連詞,是古文或方言的用法,現代英文,多用 unless.

依照內容分類,不對等連詞可分爲下列三種:

(一) 用於形容詞子句的: who, whose, whom, that, which, when, where, why, etc.

(二) 用於副詞子句的:

1. 時間: before, after, as, since, till, until, when, while, as soon as, as (or so) long as, no sooner......than, scarcely)or hardly)......when, etc.
2. 地點: where, whence, whither, wherever, etc.
3. 方式: as, as if, as though, etc.
4. 比較: as, when, the, than, etc.
5. 原因: as, because, since, etc.
6. 目的: that, so that, in order that, lest, for fear, etc.
7. 結果: that, so that, so (or such)......that, so......but that, etc.
8. 條件: if, unless, provided (that), in case (that), on condition (that), in the event (that), supposing (that), suppose (that), etc.
9. 讓步: although, though, as, if, even if, notwithstanding (that), whether, etc.

(三) 用於名詞子句的 that, whether, if, who, which, how,

when, where, why, etc.

(一) 用於形容詞子句的譯例

「敬人者人恒敬之。」

He *who* respects others is constantly respected.

「昨天我們在戲院裡遇見的那人是我的老師。」

The man *whom* we met in the theatre yesterday is my teacher.

「作品獲獎的女孩是全班中年紀最小的。」

The girl *whose* work got the prize is the youngest in the class.

「我現在寫的這封信是一封英文信。」

The letter *that* I am writing is an English letter.

「這就是我所選定的書。」

This is the book *which* I chose.

「禮拜天是我最清閒的時候。」

Sunday is the day *when* I am least busy.

「我不知道你到底要到那裡去。」

I don't know the exact place *where* you want to go.

「那就是我喜歡讀中文的理由。」

That is the reason *why* I like to study Chinese.

「他在英國時,專門從事古堡的研究。」

While he was staying in England, he made a study of old castles.

「三尺童子無不識之。」

There is no child *but* knows him (=who does not know him)

「人孰無過。」

No man *but* errs (=who does not err).

「彼縱下愚,猶能知此。」

He is not such a fool *but that* he knows it.

「彼雖下愚,尚不至認敵爲友。」

He is not such a fool *but what* (=but that) he can tell a friend from a foe.

（二）用於副詞子句的譯例

1. 時　間：

「你買東西，非錢不可。」

When you buy things, you must have money.

「你不肯聽我怎能對你說明呢？」

How can I explain it to you *when* you won't listen?

「有生命就有希望。」

While there is life, there is hope.

「當我生病的時候，他代替了我的位置。」

He took my place *while* I was ill.

「在我寫這個的時候，你可以做點別的事情。」

While I am writing this, you can be doing something else.

「他還沒有到我就離開了。」

I left *before* he arrived.

「我離開了以後他才到來。」

He arrived *after* I left.

「我沒等待好久他就來了。」

I had not waited long *before* he arrived.

「等雨停了再說。」

Let's wait *until* (or till) the rain stops.

「我到新加坡差不多五年了。」

It is almost five years *since* I came to Singapore.

「我正要走的時候他回家來了。」

He returned home *as* I was leaving.

「一息尚存，奮鬪到底。」

So long as I live, I must fight it out.

「你現在已經很大了，應該學點禮貌。」

Now (that)(=As) you are a big boy, you must behave better.

「我一做完就發現錯了。」

Immediately (或Directly 或 The moment) (=As soon as) I had done it, I knew I had made a mistake.

「他一見到那個，就動身回家去了。」

He started back home *as soon as* he saw it.

He had *no sooner* seen it *than* he started back home.

He had *scarcely* seen it *when* he started back home.

He had *hardly* seen it *before* he started back home.

2. 地 點：

「精神一到，何事不成。」(有志竟成。)

Where there is a will, there is a way.

「誰也不去的地方，他也不喜歡去。」

He does not like to go *where* nobody is going. (Lynd)

「誰也不曉得她是從何處來的。」

No one knows *whence* she came.

「他隨遇而安。」

He will be happy *wherever* he lives.

「無論何處有口角，總有他在場。」

Wherever there is a quarrel, there he is sure to be.

3. 方 式：

「入鄉問俗。」

When in Rome, do *as* the Romans do.

「他說英語好像他父親一樣。」

He speaks English *as* his father does.

「我就是這樣去(不換衣服)。」

I'll go *just as* I am.

「他的行動好像很怕的樣子。」

He acted just *as if* (or as though) he were afraid.

「他對待我好像對待下屬一樣。」

He treats me *as if* I were his subordinate.

「種瓜得瓜，種豆得豆。」(因果報應，絲毫不爽)。

As you sow, *so* you shall reap. (*Proverb*)

「有其父必有其子。」

As is the father, *so* is the son.

「珊瑚非樹，鯨鯨非魚。」
Just as a coral grove is not a tree, *so* a whale is not a fish.

4. 比　較：

「那太太和她丈夫一樣高。」
The wife is as tall *as* the husband (is).
「太太沒有丈夫高。」
The wife is not so tall *as* the husband (is).
「她比她丈夫高。」
She is taller *than* her husband (is).
「他像他妹妹一樣親切。」
He is as kind *as* his sister (is).
「他又誠實又親切。」
He is as kind *as* (he is) honest.
「他妹妹誠實，而他就親切。」
He is as kind *as* his sister is honest.
「他像死人一樣。」
He is as good *as* dead.
「她與其說是漂亮，不如說是可愛。」
She is more attractive *than* pretty.
「與其說他不好交際，不如說他羞怯。」
He is more shy *than* unsocial. (=He is shy rather than unsocial).
「與其說他是活着，不如說他是死了。」
He was more dead *than* alive.
「我們登得愈高，氣候愈冷。」
The higher up we go, the colder it becomes.
「多多益善。」
The more, the better.
「愈近骨頭的肉，味道愈美。」
The nearer the bone, the sweeter the meat.
「欲速則不達。」

More haste, worse speed.

「他半閉着眼睛，好像在回想什麽。」

He half-closed his eyes *as though* trying to recall something.

「他說英語好像說自己的母語一樣地熟練。」

He can speak English with the same ease *as if* it were his mother tongue.

「我現在確信目下這個樣子最好。」

I am now quite certain that things are for the best *as* they are.

「她聰明的程度遠不及他的邪惡。」

She was not nearly so clever *as* he was wicked.

「你說你只有幾本書，但你這兒的書就比我的要多上五倍。」

You said you had a few books; but there must be five times as many here *as* I have. (Gissing)

「我們必須接受事物的現狀。」

We must take things *as* we find them in the world.

「他有一點過分愛好杯中物，正如水手們常有的現象。」

As is often the case with sailors, he was a little too fond of liquors.

「有急流一般的大的澎湃的聲音。」

There was a loud roaring *as* of rushing waters.

5. 原 因：

「因爲我們沒有錢，所以用不着去想度假的事。」

Since we have no money, it is no good thinking about a holiday.

「旣然你要去，我就陪你去吧。」

Since (或 As) you are going, I will accompany you.

「因爲他誠實，所以大家都喜歡他。」

He is beloved of all *because* he is honest. (原因)

Cf. He must be honest, *for* he is beloved of a . (理由)

合句用 for，複句用 because，但 for 不用於會話體 (conversational sty-le)，例如："They ate their food uncooked, *for* the use of fire was

unknown." 一句，到會話中則變成 "Why did they eat their food uncooked?" "*Because* the use of fire was unknown." 不可用 for.

「因爲下雨，我就沒有出門。」

I did not go out *because* it rained.

在否定後接用的 because 如作 though 解，翻譯時决無問題，如 You should not despise a man because he is poor. 譯爲「雖則他窮，你也不要輕蔑他。」或譯爲「不要因別人窮就輕蔑他。」都是一樣，錯不了的。但如遇到不作 though 解的否定後接的 because，就得特別當心了。因爲它可能有兩種解釋，例如：I didn't go because I was afraid.＝(1) I didn't go, and the reason was fear. (我怕所以我沒有去。)＝(2) I went, but the reason was not fear. (我不是因爲怕才去的。) 一義說「去了」，另一義說「沒有去」，竟發生完全相反的含義了。

「因爲他成績好，所以薪給高。」

He was well paid, *as* he had done the work well.

「你疲倦了，最好去休息吧。」

As you are tired, you had better rest.

6. 目　的：

「他們爲着怕趕脫火車，急急忙忙地走了。」

They hurried *that* (或 so that, in order that) they might not (說話時美國常用 wouldn't) miss the train.

「要想動手搞另外的，你就得先把這個做完。」

Finish this that (或 so that, in order that) you can start another.

「當心以免從樹上掉下來。」

Be careful *lest* (或 for fear (thst)) you should fall from the tree. (lest 用於寫作，說話時則用 for fear)。

「爲着要去早晨的新鮮空氣中把那問題仔細考慮一番，所以我出外散步了。」

I went out for a walk, *so that* I might think the matter over in the fresh morning air.

「爲節省時間，隊長親自裝上了馬鞍。」

The captain, *in order that* there might be no time lost, saddled his horse himself.

「我們通常只是爲求得別人的稱讚而稱讚別人。」

We usually praise others *only that* we may be praised.

7. 結 果：

「我太疲倦，隨即上牀去睡了。」

I was so tired *that* I went to bed at once.

「那使他大爲震驚，登時臉都白了。」

It gave him such a shock *that* his face turned white.

「他是那樣的一個撒謊者，所以沒有人喜歡他。」

He is such a liar *that* no one likes him.

「那是一個非常愚笨的計畫，誰也不贊成。」

It was a plan so stupid *that* no one approved of it.

「我們經過長時間一直走得很快，所以十分疲倦了。」

We walked very fast for a long time, *so that* we got quite tired.

「他去得很早，所以佔了一個好位子。」

He went early *so* he got a good seat.

「他說得那般清楚，我們每個字都聽得見。」

He spoke so clearly *that* we could hear every word.

「你站近些使我可以看清楚你的面孔。」

Draw nearer *so that* I can see your face.

「她說的話那般有趣，使我既不知道也未注意時間的流逝。」

She interested me so much *that* I neither knew nor heeled how time passed. (Caskell, *Cranford*)

「我微不足道，無可效勞。」

I am such a tiny thing *that* I am little use to you.

「沒有一個人老得不能學的。」

No man is so old *but that* he may learn. (However old a man may be, he may learn.)

「無論怎樣的難事久練自易。」

Nothing is so hard *but that* it becomes easy by practice.

「不雨則已，雨必滂沱。」（禍重不幸，禍每兩臨）。

It never rains *but* it pours. (=It never rains without pouring.)

「裁判雖屬公平，仍然有人不服。」

Justice is never done *but* some people will be found to complain.

「一定有事要發生的。」

It can not be *but that* something will happen. (=Something must happen.)

「人誰能免於過失。」

It is impossible *but that* a man will make some mistakes.

8. 條　件：

「你如果明天有空，請來我家坐坐。」

If (you are) free tomorrow, please come to see me.

「只要你一年內還我，我是可以把那筆錢借給你的。」

I don't mind lending you the money *provided* (that) you pay it back within a year.

「你要不是一個完全的笨蛋，你就不會那樣對待你叔叔的。」

Unless you are a perfect fool you will behave properly to your uncle.

「只要有二十個人肯捐一百元，我也就照捐不誤。」

I will subscribe a hundred *provided* twenty others will do the same.

「即令發生最壞的情形，至少她也就有一個安全的地方可作退步的。」

At least there will be a retreat secured for her *in case* the worst should ensue. (Thackeray, *Vanity Fair*)

「非我喝酒，他不罷休。」

Nothing will content him *but* I must drink.

「若非貧窮，我是決意要出洋去的。」

I would go abroad *but that* (=but for the fact that) I am

poor. (but for my poverty).

「無論如何必須達到我的目的。」(不達目的,事必棘手。)

It shall go hard *but* (=unless) I will accomplish my purpose.

9. 讓 步:

「雖則天氣很冷,他並沒有升火。」

(Al)though it was cold, he did not light the fire.

「不問他成敗如何,我們都要盡力幫忙。」

Whether he succeed(s) or fail(s), we should have to do our best.

「即令他窮,他看去很快樂。」

If he is poor, he looks happy. (if=even if)

「那怕我有錢,我也要工作。」

Even if I were rich, I would work.

「姑認這是眞的,又將怎樣?」

Granting (或 Granted) *that* this is true, what follows?

「天雖則黑了,我們還是找到了回家的路。」

Dark *as* it was (=Though it was so dark), we found our way back. (注意 as 前如用名詞,也要將冠詞略去,如 Poor piper as I am.= Though I am a poor piper.)

「他雖然嚇壞了,但並沒有倒下。」

Startled *though* he was, he did not lose his balance.

「糖雖是一種主要的食料,我們却不能以此爲生。」

Important *as* sugar is as an article of food, we cannot live upon it.

「那怕犧牲生命,他也要幹到底的。」

He will go through with it *if* it costs him his life.

「即令你向他提出,他也不會接受的。」

Even if you offer it to him, he won't accept it.

「他雖有時感受風寒,然其身體極爲強健。」

He is extremely strong—not *but that* (=though) he will catch a cold at times.

(三)　用於名詞子句的譯例

「他曾到此是確實的。」

That he was here is true.

Cf. It is true *that* he was here. (副詞子句)

「我想他在城裡。」

I think (*that*) he is in town.

「他說他要來的。」

He said (*that*) he would come.

「你不能來使我感到遺憾。」

I am sorry (*that*) you can't come.

「不曉得他在不在家。」

I wonder *if* (或 whether) he is at home (or not).

「我相信他說的不錯，而到現在爲止誰也沒有講過這島上的狀況。」

I believe (*that*) he was really right, and *that* nobody had told the situation of the island. (Stevenson)

「我不知道我能不能進大學。」

I don't know *whether* I shall be able to go to college or not.

「問他是不是到動身的時候了。」

Ask him *if* it is time to start.

「我不清楚是他要打梅先生呢，還是梅先生要打他。」

I am not clear *whether* he was going to strike Mr Mell, or Mr Mell was going to strike him. (Dickens, *David Copperfield*)

「他問我是不是有什麼要他做的事情。」

He asked me *if* I had any business he could arrange for me.

「他一再地問我在那裡我是不是有什麼事情要辦。」

He repeated the inquiry *if* I had any business there.

「他做出這樣的愚行來眞是遺憾。」

It is to be regretted *that* he should have committed this foolish act.

「他完全相信他父親會替他還債的。」

He had a perfect belief *that* his father would pay his debt

for him.

「誰是下屆美國總統尚未決定。」

Who will be the president of the U.S.A. next time is undecided.

「我問你在這三者之中最喜歡那一個。」

I ask you *which* of the three you like best.

「我要用你所喜歡的名字來叫你。」

I will name you *what* you like.

「我不知道他怎樣完成那工作的。」

I know nothing as to *how* he has finished his work.

「他要何時回家，連他太太都不知道。」

When he will come home is not known to his wife.

「我要把這個送給任何需要它的人。」

I will give this to *whoever* wants it.

「聽說他要來，我們都高興。」

The news, *that* he will come, gives us much pleasure.

「我確信他必成功。」

I do not doubt (but) *that* he will succeed.（這個來自法蘭西語的否定後的 but 是無意義的，下同。）

「我不否認他是勤快的。」

I do not deny (but)*that* he is diligent.

「他的年輕並不妨礙他教書。」

His youth hinders not *but that* he may teach. (=His youth does not hinder him from teaching.)

「沒有什麼事可以妨礙我完成目的的。」

Nothing shall hinder *but that* I will accomplish my purpose. (=Nothing shall hinder me from accomplishing my purpose.)

「或者如此，亦未可知。」

Who knows *but* it may be so?

習　題　8

試用英文複句譯出下列各句:

1. 我們都曉得時間就是金錢。
2. 我不知道這是眞的還是假的。
3. 這就是昨天對我狂吠的那條狗。
4. 我亟想知道他這個時候在不在家。
5. 自從他去年離開這裡以來我還沒有見到過他。
6. 他說話的神氣就好像什麼都懂得似的。
7. 你愈用功,進步愈快。
8. 你旣然這樣講,我就得相信呀。
9. 我們讀書是爲了求知。
10. 我打開窗子邀明月進來。
11. 他太狡猾所以沒有人和他做朋友。
12. 豹死留皮,人死留名。
13. 如果合算的話,我就接受那個工作。
14. 沒有人比不要聽的人更聾的了。
15. 如果你是上等人,你就要像個上等人的樣子。
16. 聽來也許覺得奇怪,我太有錢反買不起它。
17. 我並不羨慕他富有,那使他非常煩惱。
18. 憂愁使他變成這個樣子。
19. 在我們愉快地玩着的時候,時間過得很快。
20. 沒有互敬是不能有友誼的。

叁、由內容來分的造句

(1) 用平敍句來翻譯

平敍句 (Declarative 或 Assertive Sentence) 是敍述事實的文句，我們日常講話，大部分都是用的這種句子。如我在本書頭上講過的，英文的句型共有五種，其用字的排列次序為：

1. "主語＋自動詞"，如 Birds sing. (鳥鳴。)
2. "主語＋自動詞＋補語"，如 The rose smells sweet. (玫瑰花香。)
3. "主語＋他動詞＋賓語"，如 He has plenty of sense. (他富有見識。)
4. "主語＋他動詞＋間接賓語＋直接賓語"，如 He teaches us English. (他教我們英文。)
5. "主語＋他動詞＋賓語＋補語"，如 You must keep it a secret. (你必須保守秘密。)

英文句中用字的排列次序常有變化，並不一定照這五種句型的規矩來說。玆就慣用法找出一些變化的形式，來作為平敍句的譯法；至於普通五種句型所表現的平敍句法，因為前面已經詳細講過了，所以這兒不擬再說。

(一) There＋動詞＋主語

凡說到事物或人的有無時，在主語所含文字較長的情形下，為引起聽者對主語的注意起見，在應設主語的地位上，用 there 一字充數，而將眞正的主語移到後面去說，如

「桌子上有一本書。」
There is a book on the desk.
「後來他確知悔悟了。」
There came a time when he did repent.
「人們看到了一個奇異的光景。」

There was seen a strange sight.

「從前有一位大王名叫亞菲來德。」

Once there lived a great king whose name was Alfred.

「一切寂靜無聲。」

There fell a deep silence.

(二) 把條件句中的連詞省略，而將助動詞放在主語的前面去，本動詞的 be 及 have，也有這種助動詞同樣的用法。例如：

「如果你找到了，請告訴我。」

Should you find them, kindly let me know.

「她要有一個小孩的話，她就快樂了。」

Had she a child, she would be happy.

「他要是還在世，他會怎樣說呀！」

Were he alive, what would he say?

「我要是見到了他，我會責備他的。」

Did I see him, I would blame him for it.

(三) 副詞(片語)＋動詞＋主語

爲着引起讀者的注意或好奇心起見，又爲着保持字數較多的主語和動詞的密切結合起見，常把動詞放到主語的前面去。在這種情況下，也有採用 there 的時候。

「一個女郎和一條狗來到街頭了。」

Down the street came a girl and a dog.

「名單上還可加入下列的名字。」

To the list may be added the following names.

「在房間的當中，枝形吊灯下面，站着老家長喬戎。」

In the centre of the room, under the chandelier, stood the head of the family, old Jolyon.

「在他後面走進來一個身村高大的女人，體態豐腴，容儀端正，頭髮還是棕色的——那就是瓦麗斯夫人。」

Behind him had come in a tall woman, of full figure and fine presence, with hair still brown—Lady Valleys herself.

（四） 爲着加強副詞（片語）、補語、賓語或本動詞起見，常將這種字放在一句的頭上。

1. 驚歎詞變來的副詞及介詞，與同形的副詞及 here, there。

副詞＋ 動詞＋名詞 / 代名詞＋動詞

(a) 「鎗聲拍的一響，那鳥就掉下來了。」

Bang went the gun, and the bird fell.

「拍的一下又是一聲鎗響。」

Bang came another shot.

「皮鞭重重地抽去。」

Crack goes the whip!

(b) 「天花板掉下來了。」

Down came the ceiling.

「他走下去了。」

Down he went.

「老鼠都跳進去了。」

In plunged the rats.

「我們像一陣風似的走了。」

Off we went like the wind.

「笛聲一再高揚。」

On and on went the piper.

「行行復行行。」

On and on they went.

「那對夫婦一下就衝出去了。」

Out rushed the man and his wife.

「他們衝出去了。」

Out they rushed.

「馬車馳過去了。」

Over went the carriage.

「他拿着盤子走過去了。」

Over he went with the dish.

「蜻蜓轟然上升。」
Up went this roaring dragonfly.
「他們上去了。」
Up they went.

(c)「托孟來了。」
Here comes Tom.
「他來了。」
Here he comes.
「這是你的上衣。」
Here is your coat.
「這就是的。」
Here it is.
「那是你的手套。」
There are your gloves.
「那就是的。」
There they are.

注意：here, there 如作「在這裡」,「在那裡」解時，仍可放在句首，但字的排列要照普通的順序，如 *Here* the game keeper found the dead body.（獵場看守人在這裡找到了那屍體。）*There* Scott wrote all his works.（史各特就在那裡寫出了他全部的著作。）

2. 上述 1. 項以外的副詞及副詞片語。
副詞(片語)＋助動詞＋主語＋本動詞

「我們對於這個決定深爲後悔。」
Bitterly did we repent our decision.
「那情景我記得很淸楚。」
Well do I remember the scene.
「我曾指出時間是過得很快的，但是徒然。」
In vain did I point out how time was getting on.
「我們再也見不到他的面了。」
Never shall we see his face again.
「我做夢也未曾想到這樣的事。」

Never had I even dreamed of such a thing.

「對於這個使命我決不再向前移動一步。」

Not another step will I budge on this errand.

「直到那個時候我才實感到形勢的危險。」

Not till then did I realize the danger of the situation.

「他不但從來沒有踏進大門來過，甚至連在窗口也沒有露過面。」

Not only did he never cross the threshold, but he never so much as showed his face at a window.

「爲着別人去遊蕩，世界上再沒有比倫敦更好的地方了。」

Nowhere in the world is there such a place for an idle man as London.

「我們沒有想到會再也見不到他的。」

Little did we think that we should never see him again.

「他一進房來就破口大罵。」

Scarcely had he entered the room when he broke out in insults.

「那對他們最沒有興趣的了。」

Least of all is it to their interest.

「我看見過他好多次。」

Many a time have I seen him.

「這種光景我以前只見到過一次。」

Only once before have I seen such a sight.

「他只有一次對我說過話。」

Only on one occasion did he speak to me.

「遲遲地他才明白那火災是發生在他自己家裡。」

Only slowly did he understand that the fire was in his own house.

3. 補 語：

補語＋主語＋動詞

(a) 「羅杰始終是一個壞脾氣的傢伙。」

Cantankerous chap Roger always was.

「他們非常感謝我要援助他們。」

Very grateful they were for my offer of help.

「幸而我們知道她的名字。」

Lucky it is that we know her name.

(b) 「我的懊悔是痛苦而無益的。」

Bitter but unavailing were my regrets.

「我採取正當措施極爲有效。」

So effective it is that I have taken the right measures.

4. 賓　語:

賓語＋主語＋動詞

賓語＋助動詞＋主語＋本動詞

(a) 「我們雖然能夠知道過去，但對未來却只能推測。」

The past one can know, but *the future* one can only feel.

「我們高興地記得許多事情，也高興地忘却許多事情。」

Many things we gladly remember, *others* we gladly forget.

「金銀我都沒有，我所有的只有這些，現在都給你好了。」

Silver and gold have I none, but *such as I have* give I thee.

(b) 「他沒有給她說一句好話。」

Not a word did he say in her favour.

「不到最後一張紙印好，他們誰也不會有一分鐘休息的。」

Not a moment's rest will any of the men enjoy until the last paper is printed.

「只有兩個人死去了，沒有繼續受苦。」

Only two had merciful death released from their sufferings

5. 本動詞:

「你抱怨也得去。」

Growl you will and *go* you must.

「他說我們必須趕上她。」

He says *overtake* her we must.

「因爲我們必須找到那個解毒劑，不然就得發現民主政治是欺詐的。」

For *find* that antidote we must, or *discover* democracy to be

fraudulent.

「『如果你馬上打電報去，他是可以阻止的。』而他就是這樣被阻止了。」

"If you telegraph at once, he can be stopped." And *stopped* he was.

（五）　爲着和上文聯繫，某些字眼要放在句首。

「這種威脅他簡直無法實行。」

This threat he was quite unable to carry out.

「這到底是什麼我說不出來。」

What it is I cannot tell.

「這個議論的全程有賴於此。」

On this depends the whole course of the argument.

「我相信那些話是有預言意味的。在那些話中間有着勞工階級成功地進行鬭爭的秘密。」

I believe those words are prophetic. *In them* is the secret of a successful prosecution of the struggle of the working class.

「隨後就吹起逆風來了。」

Then came unfavourable winds.

「其次就是付款的問題。」

Next comes the question of pay.

「這便是此人的生平與性格。」

Such are the life and character of this man!

「醫生在他的（創辦醫院的）計畫書上這樣說。」

So the physician said in his prospectus.

「他加速了他的步伐，我也如此。」

He quickened his pace, and *so* did I.

「你們錯了，我們也錯了。」

You were wrong, *so* were we.

「『你現在一定要去睡覺呀。』『正是。你也是呀。』」

"You must go to bed now." "*So* I must. *So* must you."

「樹倒下來了，一定會死的。」

As the tree falls, *so* must it die.

「種瓜得瓜，種豆得豆。」

As a man soweth, *so* shall he reap.

「自作自受。」

As you make your bed, *so* you must lie on it.

「那件事他什麼也不知道。他的妻子也和他一樣。」

He knew nothing about it. *No more* did his wife.

「試想想田野的百合是怎樣生長的；它們旣不勞動，也不紡織。」

Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, *neither* do they spin. (Matt. 6:28)

「我也不必告訴你，我做這些事是憑什麼職權。」

Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

「那一切都是眞的，我們不可忘記。」

All that is true, *nor* must we forget.

「我不知道，我也猜不出來。」

I know not, *nor* can I guess.

「我不告你虛僞，更不告你欺詐。」

I do not accuse you of falsehood, *still less* (do I accuse you) of dishonesty.

習　題　9

1. 笨人無藥可醫。
2. 她每星期寫一封信回家。
3. 他把錢都花在買書上面了。
4. 闊人也和窮人一樣煩惱。
5. 這個禮拜下了不少的雨。
6. 現在是到了要思索的時候。
7. 她的縫衣機原來就是放在這裡的。
8. 在他後面接着來了長蛇似的兵馬。
9. 一捺機關地雷立刻爆炸。
10. 在蒙茅斯要塞陸軍通訊隊所養的鴿子是最代表的。
11. 人們最喜歡的就是名利。

12. 杯中只有一點水。
13. 罕有比這更爲忙亂的。
14. 他要看到了我，立刻就會認識的。
15. 他甫發言，聽衆就阻碍他。
16. 關於此事我們意見不同的地方就在此。
17. 他們得看護病傷的人。
18. 他不會成功的，雖則他從未這樣努力試過。
19. 知足的人是幸福的。
20. 那演說家如是說。

(2) 用疑問句來翻譯

疑問句 (Interrogative Sentence) 是發出疑問的文句，正好像肯定形 (Affirmative Form) 的句子大都可以變成否定形 (Negative Form) 的句子一樣，一般的敘述句也是大都可以變成疑問句的。例如「他禮拜天上教堂。」譯成：

He goes to church on Sunday. 是肯定平敘句，而
He does not go to church on Sunday. 是否定平敘句。
Does he go to church on Sunday? 才是疑問句。

感歎句有時也勉強可改成否定，不過只能改爲相反的意思，例如「這朵花多麼美呀！」How beautiful this flower is! 改爲否定時便成爲「這朵花多麼醜呀！」How ugly this flower is! 改爲疑問句則成爲 Is this flower beautiful? 意爲「這朵花美嗎？」和感歎句的含義(對此花之美大爲驚歎)大不相同了。

英文的疑問句，從用字的排列上看，有三種基本的構成形式。

1. 最普通的字序 (word-order) 爲：
"Predicate-Verb + Subject"

(a) 在下列動詞的場合，不用 Do-Form: Be (was; were), have (Past Tense 時偶然也可用 Do-Form), shall (hould), will (would), can (could), may (might), must, ought to, need (v. aux.), dare (v.

aux.) used to.

「你好嗎？」

Are you well?

「他來了嗎？」

Has he come?

「我們趕得上火車嗎？」

Shall we be in time for the train?

「你明天要來嗎？」

Will you come tomorrow?

「你能讀中文嗎？」

Can you read Chinese?

「我可以回家去了嗎？」

May I go home?

「你一定這樣快就要走嗎？」

Must you go so soon?

「我應該做這事嗎？」

Ought I to do this?

「他非急不可嗎？」

Need he hurry?

「你敢從那高牆上跳下來嗎？」

Dare you jump from the top of that high wall?

「他曾經住在這裡嗎？」

Used he to live here?

(b) 在其他的動詞的場合，就要用 Do-Form：

「你喜歡他嗎？」

Do you like him?

「你昨天看見他嗎？」

Did you see him yesterday?

2. 主語爲疑問詞或含有疑問詞時的字序爲：

"Subject + Predicate-Verb"

「什麼風把你吹來的？」

What brought you here?

「哈姆雷特是誰作的？」

Who wrote Hamlet?

「昨天有誰來了？」

Who came yesterday?

「什麼人(那一個)這樣說的？」

What (Which) man said so?

「要做什麼？」

What is to be done?

如果在 1. 型上再加疑問詞時，則仍依照 1 型的字序，不必改變。

「他說什麼？」

What did he say? (句中 what 爲 say 的賓語)

「你有多少孩子？」

How many children have you?

「他是那裡來的？」

Where has he come from? (句中的 where 爲 from 的賓語，from where 爲 Predicate-Verb 的 Modifier).

「你講的是誰？」

Whom are you talking of?

「你何時從英國回來的？」

When did you return from England? (句中的 when 爲 Predicate-Verb 的 Modifier).

3. 全照平敘句的字序，只消在句尾加上一個 Interrogation Mark (疑問號)，以表示疑問的意思就行了。說的時候，句尾稍加揚起。

「你還沒有去嗎？」

You are not going yet?

上面這三種疑問句的造型，還可以補充說明一下。屬於 1 型的疑問句，都是可以回答 Yes 或 No 的，在說話時，這類問話都要在句尾用升調(Rising Intonation)。至於 2 型的疑問句，就不能回答 Yes 或 No，因爲它所問的不是是非的問題，而是「是什麼」，「爲什麼」，「怎麼樣」，「那

一個」,「何時」,「何地」,「何人」等的問題。這類問話都是要在句尾用降調(Falling Intonation)的。至於3型已如上述,在說話時句尾要用升調,而文字的排列次序,完全和平敘句一模一樣,只在句尾多了一個問號而已。這一類型的疑問句,也可再細分爲下列兩類:

(a) 對於說話的人原是用不着要問的,不過爲愼重起見,再來問一下,例如:

「我想,你有錢吧?」

You have some money, I suppose? (Stevenson)

「這個我可以看吧?」

I may read this? (Dickens)

情形與此類似,而將疑問句的省略式附於平敘句之後,也是口語中經常見的。英文把它叫做 Tag-question, 通常那附加的疑問句是不要譯出的。

「你不喜歡讀小說吧?」

You don't like to read novels, do you?

「他去了美國吧?」

He has gone to America, hasn't he?

「你每個禮拜五都有英文課吧?」

You have English lessons every Friday, don't you?

「他們早餐吃茶點的吧?」

They have tea for breakfast, don't they?

「天氣很好呀。」

It's a fine day, isn't it? (J.K. Jerome)

(b) 凡表驚訝或怪異的時候,也可以用這種形式。

「你不想去?」

You don't wish to go?

「我的父親死了?」

My father is dead?

上面這種形式的句子,普通常用不定詞的造句來表達,例如:

「他欺騙我?」

He to deceive me? (=To think that he should deceive me!)

「一個英國人叛國？」

An Englishman betray his country?

「路易士跟布蘭芝結婚？」

Lewis marry Blanche? (Shakespeare)

「怎可放棄眞理的大義？」

How relinquish the cause of truth? (Goldsmith)

這三種疑問句的基本構成形式，Harold E. Palmer 把1型叫作 General Question（一般疑問），2型叫作 Special Question（特殊疑問）；而 Otto Jespersen 又把1型叫作 Nexus Question（敘述關係的疑問）。2型叫作 X-question（含有未知數的疑問）。至於3型就被 Onions 及 Curme 稱爲 Deliberative Question（深思熟慮的疑問）。

除此三種而外，還有一種所謂 Rhetorical Question（修辭的疑問），是指那些表面上是疑問句，實則什麼都不要問，而只是作爲一種反語來表示自己的相反的意見，好使對方接受而已。這種表現法實較平敘句更爲有力，更要充滿感情，例如：

「有什麼用？」

What is the use? (=It is no use.)

「誰不曉得？」

Who does not know? (=Everyone knows.)

「有人寫過這樣沒有意義的東西嗎？」

Was ever such nonsense written? (=Never was such nonsense written.)

在這種修辭的疑問中，肯定的疑問句相等於否定的平敘句，例如：

「黑人能够改變他的膚色，豹子能够改變它的斑紋嗎？」

Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? 如用平敘句說時，當然就變成 cannot 了。

否定疑問句相當於肯定平敘句，例如：

「這不好笑嗎？」

Isn't it funny? (=It is very funny.)

有時連句尾的問號都可以省去：

Yet, *are we not* like spoilt children who have so many new toys to play with that we have ceased to wonder at anything. (可是，我們真好像是不斷地給與許多新玩具的慣壞了的孩子似的，對任何東西都不感到新奇了。)

有時加上一個否定字的 not，也和沒有此字的句子一樣，結果變成同樣的意思，例如：

「他發現這個時極爲驚異。」

What was his astonishment on finding it? = How great was his astonishment on finding it! (感歎句)

What was *not* his astonishment on finding it? (修辭的疑問) = No astonishment could be greater than his was on finding it.

茲就四種疑問句分別舉例譯出如下：

(一)　一般疑問句

「今夜月亮圓了沒有？」

Is the moon full tonight?

「公衆不是最好的批評家嗎？」

Is the public not the best judge?

「你知道貓有九條命嗎？」

Do you know the cat has nine lives?

「英國人喜歡戶外運動嗎？」

Are the English fond of outdoor sports?

「他堅持要一意孤行嗎？」

Will he have his own way?

「她的眼睛是藍色的還是棕色的？」

Has she blue eyes or brown eyes?

「你從前認得他嗎？」

Used you to know him?

「他應該馬上動身嗎？」

Ought he to start at once?

「衣服穿得太髒是對人的一種無禮。」

Isn't untidy dress a form of discourtesy?

「他這樣愚笨眞令人吃驚？」

Isn't it surprising that he should be so foolish?

「你的意思是拒絕嗎？」

Am I to understand that you refused?

(二) 特殊疑問句

「誰會想到這樣呀？」

Who would have thought so?

「一部車子裡能够坐多少人？」

How many passengers can ride in one carriage?

「你手裡是什麼？」

What have you in your hand?

「從這裡到車站那條路最近？」

Which is the shortest way from here to the railway station?

「那本書你在那裡找到的？」

Where did you find the book?

「她爲什麼要這樣說？」

Why did she say so?

「她何時起生病的？」

Since when has she been ill?

「你對於中國電影覺得怎樣？」

How do you like Chinese movies?

「假期何時開始？」

When will the holidays begin?

(三) 熟慮疑問句

「他還沒有來嗎？」

He is not coming yet?

「那房間裡什麼也沒有？」

Nothing was found in the room?

「我並不感興趣。」

We were not amused, were we? (Queen Elizabeth)

「那眞奇怪呀。」

That's queer, isn't it?

「我要尊敬你嗎？」

I honour thee?

「他不會說英語？」

He doesn't speak English?

「你不吃蛋糕？」

You don't eat cakes?

「再不要了嗎？」

No more?

「他把約會忘記了。」

He to forget the appointment?

「他是一個君子人？」

He a gentleman? (=He is not a gentleman.)

「你不去開會嗎？」

You are not going to the meeting?

(四)　修辭疑問句

「還有什麼麻煩？」

What is the trouble? (=It is no trouble.)

「誰不喜歡名利？」

Who does not care for fame and wealth? (=Everybody likes fame and wealth.)

「你能忘記那可怕的光景嗎？」

Can you forget that terrible scene? (=You cannot forget that terrible scene.)

「本性難移。」

Can man change his nature?

「世界上有這樣的事嗎？」

Has ever such a thing happened in the world?

「我不應該留我兄弟在此。」

Am I my brother's keeper? (=It is not my duty to keep my brother.)

「我不在乎。」

What do I care? (=I don't care.)

「我有足够的錢嗎？」

Have I money enough? (=I haven't enough money.)

習題 10

1. 這有什麼關係？
2. 你那支手杖是那裡買的？
3. 難道你不以兒子爲榮嗎？
4. 他是幹什麼的？
5. 這本書你花了多少錢？
6. 你打算僱用那一位？
7. 有什麼你要的東西我可以替你找來嗎？
8. 有誰不犯過失？
9. 有很會游泳的女子嗎？
10. 發生了什麼事情嗎？
11. 你喝點啤酒好嗎？
12. 你有些英文書嗎？
13. 給我一點葡萄酒好嗎？
14. 你說莎麗要跟誰結婚？
15. 你知道空中樓閣是怎樣一回事？
16. 明天我要去講些什麼呢？
17. 附近有公共汽車嗎？
18. 你想她什麼時候可以回來？
19. 他在英國住上十年之久還不懂英文？
20. 如果我坐三點半的車去，可以趕上嗎？

(3) 用命令句來翻譯

命令句(Imperative Sentence)是表示命令、請求、忠告、願望、禁止等的文句,普通是對第二人稱說的,所以常把對方的主語 you 省去,中國話也一樣不說「你」,單說動詞就行,例如:

「進來!」
Come in.
「不要鬧。」
Be quiet.
「把門關上!」
Shut the door!
「快說!」
Speak!
「過來!」
Come here!
「快走,瑪麗,快走!」
Run, Mary, run!

有時爲着要和別人區別,特別有指明對方的必要時,也可以把主語說出來,例如:

「你同我到車站去。」
You go with me to the station.

茲就命令句的各種形式,逐條例解如下:

1. 最普通的形式是略去第二人稱的主語。

「把握時機。」
Make hay while the sun shines. (Proverb)
「回去照我吩咐你的去做好了。」
Go home and do what you are told.
「請把麪包遞給我。」
Pass me the bread, please.
「要誠實呀!要誠實呀!要誠實呀!」

Be true! Be true! Be true! (Hawthorne)

「把書拿出來看。」

Show the book. (C. Bronte)

2. 否定的命令句常要加用助動詞的 do, 有時也可保留主語。普通是表示禁止的意思。

「不要這樣大聲說話。」

Don't talk so loud!

「孩子們,不要懶惰。」

Don't be idle, my boys.

「你不要去把這個秘密告訴他呀。」

Don't (you) go and tell him the secret!

「你不要就開始。」

Don't you begin it.

「决不要撒謊。」

Never tell a lie.

「你不要管我。」

Never do you bother yourself about me. (Eliot)

「不要怕。」

Fear nothing.

「不要動。」

Don't you stir!

「不要爲他着急。」

Don't you worry about him.

「不要爲我難過。」

Don't you go feeling sorry for me.

「不要爲一吻所欺騙而自尋苦惱。」

Suffer not yourselves to be deceived by a kiss. (Patrick Henry)

在古文中或詩中雖有否定詞仍然可以不加 do, 如美國詩人 Longfellow 的詩句:

Tell me not, in mournful numbers,
Life is but an empty dream!
(毋作悲哀語，謂人生若夢。)

3. 肯定的命令句常加上一個助動詞的 do 字，以加強語氣，表示懇請。

「務請你到這裏來。」
Do come here!
「請不要吵鬧。」
Do be quiet!
「務請你去。」
Do go, please.
「求你賞一文錢吧。」
Do give me just one penny!
「求你坐一會兒吧。」
Sit down for a moment, pray, do!

4. 命令句法在古時是不略去第二人稱的主語的，不過那時常把主語放在動詞後面，例如 Go and do thou likewise. (你去照樣行罷。) Enter ye in at the strait gate. (你們要進窄門。) So speak ye, and do so. (你們就該照這律法說話行事。) 以上這些引用的句子都是聖經上的，由於這種用法遺留下來，現代英文中便有 mind you, look you, mark you, speak you 等等慣用語句：

「你要當心，他還沒有付款。」
Mind you, he hasn't paid the money yet.
「讚美主。」
Praise you the Lord!

5. 在現代英文中爲加強語氣或代表對照起見，也還是可以保留第二人稱的主語的。特別提出對方來說，以便喚起對方的注意。

「我不曉得要怎樣說。諾拉，你去吧。」
I don't know what to say, Nora, you go!

「『你在此看守她,』醫生對他的助手說,『我要八點鐘才能回來。』」

"You watch her," the doctor sa d to his assistant, "I shan't be back before eight."

「你注意我說的話。」

You mark my words!

「你不要惹那條狗。」

You let that dog alone!

「你坐下來吃你的早餐好了。」

You sit down and get your breakfast!

「你聽我的勸告,不要去。」

You follow my advice and don't you go! (Emphasis)

「你要當心呀,你聽到了嗎?」

You be careful, you hear? (Emphasis)

「這個我搞不好,你來試試看。」

I cannot manage this; you try. (Contrast)

「約翰,你先坐下吧,有人會再去拿些椅子來的。」

You take that seat, John, and someone (=one of you present) fetch a few more chairs. (Contrast)

「啊,請你們那個進去告訴她一聲吧。」

Oh, please, someone (=someone of you) go in and tell her.

6. 對於第一人稱和第三人稱的命令句,就要加用 let 一字,而把主語變成賓語。

「讓我看看。」

Let me see!

「讓我們走吧。」

Let us go!

「讓他進來。」

Let him come in!

「讓他們向前走。」

Let them walk on.

「我們在這裏停留一個禮拜吧。」

Let us stay here a week.

如果是懇求的話，還可以在 let us 前加 do 或 don't 的字樣，如：

「啊，請讓我們吧。」

Oh, do let's!

「不要讓我們那樣做呀。」

Don't let us do that!

Compare:

Let's 〔lets〕 go. （我們去吧。）

Let us 〔letʌs〕 go. (=Set us free) （讓我們走吧。）

Let us 〔letʌs〕 know (=Tell us) the time of your arrival. （告訴我們你到達的時間。）

Let's let him go.(=Let's allow him to go.)（讓我們允許他去吧。）

Let it be distinctly understood (=Understand 〔it〕 distinctly) that I will stand no nonsense. （要明白我是不會容忍胡鬧的。）

Let me see! What is the name of that man? （讓我想想看他姓什麼。）

Let me not hear of it any more. （我不要再聽到這個了。）

Let's not do what is wrong. （讓我們不要做錯事。）

Let's go for a walk, shall we? （我們去散散步吧。）

以下則形式 (Form) 上爲間接命令，而意味 (Sense) 上卻是直接命令：

Let the pupils beware of bad company. (Boys, beware of bad company.) （學生不要交壞朋友。）

Let any one of you, who can answer this question, hold up his hand. （你們任何人，誰能回答這問題的舉手。）

Now let's every one go to bed that we may rise early. (Walton) （大家早早去睡，我們明天好早早起身。）

7. 命令句中的假設語氣的用法：

在 Older English 中命令句的主語如係第一人稱或第三人稱的時候，就用假設語氣現在 (Subjunctive Present) 來表示。今日在詩中及少數慣用語句中，還有這種用法的遺留。

「他們說我做錯了。讓它去吧。」

They say I have done wrong. Be it (Let it be) so.

「讓我們向前進吧。」

Move we (=Let us move) on. (Scott)

「不要爬得太高,以免跌得太重。」

Climb we not (=Let us not climb) too high,/Lest we should fall too low. (Coleridge)

「我們的路在那邊;讓我們蜿蜒爬上高處。」

Thither our path lies; wind we(=let us wind) up the heights. (Robert Browning)

這種形式在現代口語中也有遺留下來的痕跡可尋。那些帶有命令形 (Imperative Form) 的假設語氣現在 (Subjunctive Present), 可用作讓步的意思。

「不管天氣如何,我都要去。」

I will go, be the weather what it may (=whatever the weather may be).

「不管花多少錢,我都要買。」

Cost what it may (=Whatever it may cost), I will buy it.

「不管你怎樣說,他都不聽。」

Say what you will (=Whatever you may say), he does not mind us.

「無論他們怎樣努力去幹,也決不會成功的。」

Try as they may (=However hard they may try), they will never succeed.

「無論他們怎樣掙扎,釣鈎已鈎牢在它們鰓上了。」

Do what they might (=Whatever they might do), the hook was in their gills. (George Meredith)

「可以說強盜已被擊潰了。」

Suffice it to say that the robbers were defeated. (Farley)

「金窩銀窩,不如自己的狗窩。」

Be it ever so humble, there is no place like home.

「不管是什麼事情，始終都要說實話。」

Be the matter what it may, always speak the truth.

8. 命令句法的時態在性質上原是現在，不過偶然也有用完成式的，那當然是爲着加強語氣而用的。

「算了吧。」

Be gone!

「够了，不要再這樣胡說了。」

Have done with such nonsense!

9. 命令句的特殊用法。

(a) 爲表示條件有時也可以用命令語氣：

「只要你看管小錢，大錢就會看管自己的。」

Take care of the pence, and the pounds will take care of themselves. (=If you take care of the pence, the pounds will take care of themselves.)

「只要你敢走近我一步，我就要打碎你的嘴。」

Take a step near me, and I'll smash your mouth.

「你說呀！不說我就開鎗啦。」

Speak! or I fire. (=If you do not speak, I [will] fire.)

(b) 表示假設等。

「假如你有了一筆錢，例如一千鎊吧，你會用來做點什麼？」

Suppose (=If) you had a sum of money—say (=for instance) a thousand pounds—what would you do with it?

「下星期休假一天何如？」

Suppose we take a holiday next week.

「他連日常必需品都沒有，遑說什麼奢侈品。」

He lacks the bare necessaries of life, let alone (=not to mention) luxuries.

(c) 命令句又可用作副詞同等語 (Adverb-Equivalent)。

「畢竟，他那樣的人是不會再度遇見的吧。」

Take him for all in all (=After all), we shall not look upon his like again. (A. Huxley)

「確實，馬克爵士和那事毫無關係。」

Rest assured (=Assuredly) Sir Mark had nothing to do with the matter.

習 題 11

1. 我們不要做不誠實的事。
2. 我不想再聽到這件事了。
3. 你要勤快點才好呀。
4. 不要懶惰呀。
5. 不要急急離去呀。
6. 拿把椅子來把你叔叔坐。
7. 那隻貓你讓它去吧。
8. 胡蘭芝，現在你讀。
9. 務請賞光。
10. 你不要掛意。
11. 不要忘記你的功課。
12. 不要過分依賴別人的幫助。
13. 你告訴他這是緊急的事。
14. 不要胡說八道。
15. 請大家安靜下來。
16. 不要擔心。
17. 你戒了酒，健康就會好些。
18. 永不要說別人的壞話。
19. 不要像許多人一樣，只爲娛樂而讀書。
20. 請等一會，我馬上就來。

(4) 用感歎句來翻譯

感歎句 (Exclamatory Sentence) 是表示驚愕、苦痛、歡喜等感情

或加強說出某種事實、希望、命令、疑問等的文句。在這種句子的尾上，常要加上一個驚歎號(Exclamation Mark)，以代替句點(Period)；在句首則常有How或What的字眼。How常用於形容詞的前面，而What則用於名詞的前面，例如：

How lucky you are! (你多麼幸運呀！)

What a lucky girl you are! (你是一個多麼幸運的女子呀！)

但不用how或what也是可以構成感歎句的。那是形式不完備的感歎句。

一般的文法家多是將平叙句、疑問句、命令句、感歎句並列，把感歎句作爲由內容來分的四種句型之一，但也有人，如荷蘭的英文學者Hendrik Poutsma (1857–1937)，在他著的A Grammar of Late Modern English一書中，便把感歎句看做平叙句的一種。

因爲人類是感情的動物，常要表現出各種各樣的感情來。禮記禮運上說，「何謂人情？喜怒哀懼愛惡欲七者，弗學而能。」因而被認爲在語言中，這種感歎句是起源最古的文句。它是感情激發時的叫聲，因而保存着樸素的形式。它常將主語和動詞全部略去，有時甚至只有一個字。茲分別舉例說明如下：

普通在句首用what或how的，可分三類，即

1. 將how用作Exclamatory Adverb的：

「今夜的月光何等明亮！」

How bright the moon shines tonight!

「這花多麼的美呀！」

How beautiful this flower is!

「我們快樂的日子多麼短促呀！」

How short our happy days appear!

「那狗跑得好快！」

How fast the dog runs!

「你多麼親切！」

How kind of you!

「雷打得多麼響！」

How it thunders!

「他的決心唱得多麼高調！」

How high a pitch his resolution soars!

2. 將 what 用作 Exclamatory Adjective 的：

「那女子具有多麼美麗的頭髮！」

What beautiful hair that girl has!

「他的房子好大！」

What a big house he has!

「人是多麼渺小呀！」

What paltry creatures we are!

「這年頭充滿着幻想的色彩！」

What visionary tints the year puts on! (Lowell)

「啊，我的國人呀，那兒的秋天多好呀！」

Oh, what a fall was there, my countrymen! (Shakespeare)

3. 將 what 用作 Exclamatory Pronoun 的：

「他們不曉得是怎樣想像的呀！」

What might they not have imagined!

「他發現那個時不勝詫異。」

What was his surprise when he found it!

上面說，Poutsma 認爲感歎句是一種平敘句，其實我覺得感歎句和疑問句更爲接近，在形式上，在意義上，都有很深的關係。主語與動詞的排列次序，感歎句確是和平敘句一樣的，但除開這一點，感歎句就更像疑問句了。試比較如下：

{ 疑問句：How old is he?（他幾歲？）
{ 感歎句：How old he is!（他好老！）

{ 疑問句：What man?（什麼人？）
{ 感歎句：What a man!（何等了不起的人！）

{ 疑問句：What book is it?（這是什麼書？）
{ 感歎句：What a good book it is!（多麼一本好書！）

疑問句: What act was it? (那是什麼行爲?)
感歎句: What an act it was! (那算什麼行爲!)

疑問句: What dreadful act has he committed? (他做了什麼可怕的事?)
感歎句: What a dreadful act he has committed! (他做了一件多麼可怕的事!)

由上面的例句我們可以看得出來, 感歎句用了 what 一字, 又在其後接有單數普通名詞時, 便要加上一個不定冠詞, 這是在疑問句中所不需要的。

感歎句並不老是照平敘句一樣, 先說主語後說動詞的, 有時也可以照疑問句的次序, 先說動詞, 再說主語。這是爲要對主語加重的說法, 尤其是移到句尾的字眼, 說來特別響亮。

「我做了一件多麼愚笨的事呀!」
What a poor fool was I!
「我們眞希望上天沒有賦予我們說話的能力!」
How would we wish that Heaven had left us still!
「在石頭上流動的水波, 多麼的光耀!」
How bright are its waters, playing over the stones! (避免把修飾語的 playing, 說成動詞的 are playing 的關係而倒裝。)
「他的話多麼動聽呀!」
How persuasive are his words! (Sheridan)
「我在兒童時代老是在這些樹下玩耍的。」
How often have I played under these trees as a boy! (Irving)
「啊, 那是多麼奇怪的光景!」
Oh, what a sight was that! (H.R. Haggard)
「人是(上帝)多麼巧妙的作品呀!」
What a piece of work is man! (Shakespeare)
「人是多麼奇怪的東西!」
What a strange thing is man! (H.S. Merriman)
「裘蒂斯, 裘蒂斯, 你多麼可愛呀!」
Judith, Judith, how lovely are you! (Curme)

「從這小山開始路就寬了，這地方多麼使人愉快呀！」
How pleasant is this hill where the road widens. (Curme)

也有讓疑問句一點不改來作感歎句用的。那稱爲 Exclamatory Question，例如：

「她多麼可愛呀！」
Isn't she a sweet girl!
「誰會想到這樣的事！」
Who would have thought of such a thing!
「啊，那眞好玩！」
Oh, wouldn't it be fun! (Dickens)
「多少次她沒有坐在那裡了！」
How many times had she not sat there! (Galsworthy)

還有就照平敍句一模一樣來說，只在句尾附加一個驚歎號，以表示確說的形式，也可以當作感歎句用：

「這座橋絕對是危險的！」
The bridge is absolutely unsafe!
「那絕對不可以做！」
It simply cannot be done!

在感歎句中有時可以將補語置於句首：

「你們英國人是多麼的冷血漢呀！」
Cold-blooded people you Britishers are!
「你圓滿地達成了使命！」
Well hast thou fulfilled thy mission!

此外感歎句還有種種破格的形式：

1. 省略句。

「看呀！」
Look!
「蝕呀！」

An eclipse!

「啊，壞蛋！」

O, the wretch!

「幸運兒！」

Fortunate man!

「何等愚笨！」

What folly!

「何其無禮！」

What impertinence!

「好大的鼻子！」

What a nose!

「多麼可惜！」

What a pity (it is)! 或 What a shame!

「他眞笨！」

How foolish (it is) of him!

「眞是厚顏！」

What impudence!

「想得眞妙！」

What an idea!

「這是多麼的客氣呀！」

Wonderful civility this! (C. Brontë)

「多麼不像從前他們白家的爺們呀！」

How unlike their Belgic sirs of old. (Goldsmith)

「如果我有這種願望，我就要快樂十倍了！」

This wish I have (=If I have this wish), then ten times happy me! (Shakespeare)

「一個多麼了不起的女人——啊，一個多麼了不起的女人！」

What a woman—oh, what a woman! (Doyle)

2. 抗議句

「什麼？說我愛！說我求婚！說我找老婆！」

What? I love! I sue! I seek a wife!

「說我對肯醫生講了什麼不禮貌的話？天不會允許的！」

I say anything disrespectful of Dr. Kenn? Heaven forbid! (George Eliot)

「他的祖父怎麼會是一個商人！他是一位紳士呀！」

Why, his grandfather was a tradesman! he a gentleman! (Defoe)

「她要算是美人的話，她的母親也就可以算是才子了！」

She a beauty! I should as soon call her mother a wit. (Austen)

「說他傲慢嗎！啊，他決不會的！」

He arrogant! No, never!

3. 將補語放在句首。

「你居然笑，眞是可怕呀！」

How horrid of you to smile!

「對於一個情夫，這樣是頗有鼓勵的呀！」

Pretty encouragement this for a lover!

4. 將賓語放在句首。

「但那正是這些女孩子們要說的話呀！」

But the things these girls would say!

「當他說這話時，他自己也覺得是僞君子的行爲！」

The hypocrite that he felt himself as he said this!

5. 加用 to think, fancy, O that 等字在句首。

「他會在這次危機中拆我的爛污眞不堪設想！」

To think that he should fail me in this crisis!

「啊，這樣壯麗的王宮裏，居然會有欺詐的行爲！」

O, that deceit should dwell
In such a gorgeous palace! (Shakespeare)

「他居然相信呀！」

Fancy his believing it!

「竟至要等待整個下午！」

Fancy having to wait all afternoon!

「試想他對那件事竟一無所知！」

To think of his not knowing anything about it?

「從未聽到這樣的事！」

If ever I heard the like! (=I never heard the like.)

祈願句 (Optative Sentence)通常是看作感歎句的一種的：

「共和國萬歲！」

Long live the Republic! 或 May the Republic live long!

「願你的國降臨。願你的旨意行在地上，如同行在天上。」

Thy kingdom come, thy will be done. (Matt. 6:10)

「有你這樣的好心腸，上帝是會保佑你的。」

God bless and reward you for all your kindness! (Stowe)

「願上帝原恕我！」

God forgive me! (Miss Mulock)

「啊，女王，但願如此！」

So be it, O Queen! (H.R. Haggard)

「願我的房子是山邊的茅屋！」

Mine be a cot beside the hill! (Rogers)

「願上帝幫助我！」

So help me God!

「願我再也不會見到他的面孔！」

May I never see his face again!

「願今夜沒有惡夢來打擾我的睡眠！」

May no evil dream disturb my rest! (Evening Hymn)

「願他安息！」

May he rest in peace! (Irving)

「我要是在那裡就好了！」

Would that I were there! 或 Oh were I but there!

「雷白卡，你要能多留一下就好了！」

Oh that you could stay longer, dear Rebecca! (Thackeray)

「但願我行事堅定，得以遵守你的律例！」

O that my ways were directed to keep thy statute. (Psalm)

「願我能够把這一切鑄成一頂皇冠！」

Would I could coin it all into a crown! (Lord Lytton)

「我要是沒有遇到它就好了！」

Wish to God that I had never seen it! (Doyle)

「啊，願我能够再見到他一次！」

Oh, that I could have seen him once again! (Watts-Dunton)

「但願我有這種精神，而不是我孩子的。」

I would that it had been my soul and not my boy's. (H.R. Haggard)

「啊，要是這樣就好了！」

Oh had it been so!

「那時我要在巴黎就好了！」

Oh to have been in Paris then!

「願他安樂地長生不老！」

May he live long in peace!

「但願是由那純潔的火燄點燃的火把！」

O for a kindling touch from that pure flame. (Wordsworth)

「願你有一個光明的前途！」

Bright be the future that lieth before thee! (Scott)

「願那秋天是陰暗的！」

Black be its fall. (Stevenson)

「願你的樹林是綠的，花是美的！」

Green be your woods, and fair your flowers! (Byron)

祈願句的反面便成爲呪駡了，如

「我碰了鬼！」

Devil take me! (Lamb)

「該死的文法！」

Grammar be hanged!

「願上帝使你瞎眼。」

May God strike you blind.

習 題 12

1. 雪多麼潔白呀！
2. 這落日眞是光輝燦爛呀！
3. 這花多美呀！
4. 你好遲呀！
5. 這機器的聲音眞大呀！
6. 我們玩得多麼有趣。
7. 他眞是傻瓜。
8. 人的頭腦眞是太巧妙了。
9. 一個多麼卑鄙的流氓！
10. 願他有好的運道！
11. 每年要不知有多少人到耶路薩冷朝聖。
12. 我要能够去那音樂會就好了！
13. 他的鼾聲多大！
14. 他口若懸河！
15. 在這裡遇到你，我眞高興！
16. 願她婚後幸福！
17. 朋友們再會！
18. 好呀，她來了！
19. 哎呀，我完了！
20. 願天下有情人都成眷屬！

第　二　編

英文慣用法及其翻譯

I. It 的造句

(1) "it...不定詞"

(a) *It* is wrong *to tell* a lie.
撒謊是不對的。

(b) He does not think *it* wrong *to tell* a lie.
他不認爲撒謊是不對的。

【解　說】

這種形式上的主語或賓語，是中文表現法中所沒有的。這些句子的眞正的主語或賓語移到後面去了，而不在原來的地位上，於是那裏就產生一個空缺，只得用"it"塡補上去，所以這個"it"，英文就叫做塡補詞(expletive)。

如果把(a)例眞正的主語恢復它原來的地位時，便成爲：

To tell a lie is wrong.

這正是中國話的表現法，但英文除極少數的文句外(如 To teach is to learn. To eat is to live.)一般都不喜歡用不定詞作主語，而要改用形式上的"it"來作主語，把它說成：

It is wrong to tell a lie.

英文用不定詞作主語雖不流行，但至少文句是通的。用不定詞作賓語，則有背英文的慣用法，成爲不通的了。如說成，He does not think to tell a lie wrong. 或說成，He does not think wrong to tell a lie. 都要不得，必須加用形式上的賓語"it"進去，而把它說成：

He does not think it wrong to tell a lie.

才合乎英文慣用的語法。因爲慣用法不允許拿不定詞作賓語，所以凡遇到不定詞要用作賓語時，就採用形式上的"it"來代替它。

不定詞雖不能用作賓語，但可用作補語，如 We found him to be alive.（我們發覺他還活着。）這種作補語用的不定詞，有時可以略去，單說 We found him alive. 意思也是一樣，而且更加簡明有力。

形式上的賓語，在某些常說的文句中，可以省略不用，尤其是後接不定詞的時候爲然，如：

Your father thought (it) fit to leave me guardian.（你父親認爲請我做監護人最爲適合。）

If God sees (it) fit that I should marry, he would provide me with a worthy husband.（如果上帝認爲我應該結婚，他就會供給我一個如意郎君的。）

And are you sure of all this, are you sure (of it) that nothing ill has befallen my boy? (Goldsmith)（這一切都是眞的嗎，你確實知道我兒子沒有遭遇任何不順利的事嗎？）

I am sorry (for it) that you are going away.（你要走我很難過？）

Men differ from brutes in (it) that they can think and speak.（人之所以異於禽獸，就在能思想能說話。）

He forgot everything but (it) that he was near her. (Galsworthy)（他跟她在一塊兒就把一切都忘了。）

【類　例】

It is easy to learn English, but it is difficult to attain perfection in it.（英文易學難精。）

It is much easier to read French than read Greek.（學法文比學希臘文容易多了。）

It may be advisable to wait till they come back.（最好是等他們轉來。）

She had said what it was necessary to say.（要說的她都說了。）

It needs no great sagacity to see that the writer is a novice at

his task. (很容易看得出來那作家是一位生手,剛從事寫作的。)

I found it very difficult to put it in practice. (我覺得實行很難。)

He took it upon himself to pay off the debt. (他自願負責還淸債務。)

I know it to be the established custom of your sex to reject a man on the first application. (Jane Austen) (我知道拒絕男子的第一次求婚是你們女生的固定的習慣。)

Fortunately I have it in my power to introduce you to very superior society. (幸而我還有能力可以介紹你給非常上流的社會。)

If you take it into your head to go on refusing every offer of marriage in this way, you will never get a husband at all. (如果你執意要繼續這樣來拒絕所有的求婚,你就永遠得不到一個丈夫了。)

Make it the first object to be able to fix and hold your attention upon your studies. (把專心致志於學業,持久不懈,作爲第一目標。)

The fog made it difficult to calculate the distance. (霧迷了眼,看不出距離來。)

【習題 1】

1. It was glorious to acquire a place by justice, yet more glorious to prefer justice before a place.

2. I have my own views about learning a language. I think it waste of time to acquire a greater knowledge than suffices me to read fluently and talk enough for the ordinary affairs of life. (Maugham)

3. How far cards might have helped him here it is difficult to say. (Hugh Walpole)

(2) "it...for...不定詞"

(a) *It* is difficult *for* him *to do* so.
要他這樣做是有困難的。

(b) I think *it* difficult *for* him *to do* so.
我想要他這樣做是有困難的。

【解 說】

這是屬於"it...不定詞"同一形式的，"it"仍然是代表不定詞的形式上的主語或賓語。翻譯時必須把句中的不定詞看作主動詞，因爲介詞"for"的賓語是不定詞的意味上的主語(sense subject)，卽賓語的"him"應譯成主語才是。如果我們把塡補詞的"it"去掉，恢復原來應有的形式時，便成 To do so is difficult for him. 這個"for him"，也可譯成中文的「在他」，全句譯爲「要這樣做，在他是有困難的。」但不如把"him"當作主語來譯更加利落。

這個"for"有時可以換爲"of"，如 It was brave indeed, of you to attempt it. (你眞大膽敢於去嘗試一下。)何時要用"for"，何時要用"of"，依前面的那個形容詞而定。如果那個形容詞是指的一種行爲的性質(the nature of an action)，就要用"for"；如果那形容詞是指的行爲的性質，同時又指行爲的人(the doer of an action)，就要用"of"了。換句話說，單說行爲的用"for"，說行爲及行爲者的用"of"，前者以"necessary"爲例，後者以"kind"爲例，造成句子，便是：

(a) It is necessary for you to do so.

(b) It is kind of you to do so.

句中說的"kind of you"，可譯爲「你的行爲是親切的」，也就是說「行爲者的你是親切的」。句中說的"necessary for you"，可譯爲「你的行爲是必要的」，却不能說什麼「行爲者的你」，卽是：

(a)「必要的」(necessary)是指「行爲」，不是指「行爲者」。

(b)「親切的」(kind)旣是指「行爲」，又是指「行爲者」。

(b)句的意思是「他這樣做是親切的」，同時也是「這樣做的人是親切的」，但(a)句則只能說「這樣做是必要的」，却不能說「這樣做的人是必要的」，因爲這樣一來，變成必要的是「人」，而不是「事」了。我們只能改說成 You are kind to do so. 不能改說成 You are necessary to do so. 其理甚明。再舉一例，以資比較：

(a) It was impossible for him to go alone.

(b) It was foolish of him to go alone.

(a)句中的"impossible"，也和"necessary"一樣，是指「事」而不是指

「人」，所以要用非人稱的 "it" 做主語，但 (b) 句中的 "foolish" 則和 "kind" 一樣，旣可指「事」，又可指「人」，說 It is foolish 旣可以，說 You are foolish 也可以，不過我們却不能說 It is foolish to do so. 也不能說 It is foolish for you to do so. 一定要說 It is foolish of you to do so.

【類 例】

It is no time for me to hide anything. (Doyle) (什麼東西都來不及藏起來。)

It is time for us to start. (=that we should start) (現在是我們動身的時候了。)

It is an evil thing for a man to have suspicion. (Caxton) (人要懷疑是一件壞事。)

It is not common for him to receive letters. (Doyle) (他接信是不平常的。)

It is enough for me to say that some of its circumstances passed before my own eyes. (Dickens) (關於我親眼看見許多這樣的情形的事，我已經說得够了。)

It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. (Luke, xviii, 25) (駱駝穿過針的眼，比財主進上帝的國，還容易呢。)

How was it possible for so great a commerce to flourish? (Gissing) (這樣大的貿易怎麼可以興隆呢。)

【習題 2】

1. It is so very difficult for a sick man not to be a scoundrel. (Dr Johnson)

2. It is not supposed to be easy for women to rise to the height of taking the large free view of anything—anything which calls for action.

3. It is foolish of him to set himself to perform an impossibility.

4. It is not good for a man to be alone.

5. It was wrong of you to borrow his bicycle without asking his permission.

6. I think it wise of him not to accept their offer.

(3) "it...動名詞"

(a) *It* is no use *talking* about it.

空談無益。

(b) I think *it* rather dangerous your *venturing* out to sea.

我想你冒險出海是相當危險的。

【解　說】

"It is no use+Gerund"="It is of no use+Infinitive", 可譯作「無益」或「無用」。這個形式上的主語是和代表不定詞一樣，是代表後面的動名詞的。二者所不同的，就是後接不定詞的前面要用形容詞，後接動名詞的前面才用名詞。因爲依照慣用語法，只能說 It is useless (=of no use) to protest. 不能說 It is no use to protest. 所以我們如果要把例句中的 "talking" 改爲 "to talk" 時，前面說的 "no use" 那個名詞，就得改爲 "of no use" 的形容詞才行。It is no use doing. =It is no good doing. Cf. There is no doing.=It is impossible to do. 例如

There is no knowing what may happen. (未來的事是不可能知道的。)

【類　例】

It is no use crying over spilt milk. (覆水難收。)

It was very odd and amusing seeing her friends on the stage. (見到她的朋友登台表演，她覺得奇怪有趣。)

It's not worth while your going. (你不值得去。)

It is very funny his going without saying goodbye to anyone. (他一聲不響地走了，眞是奇怪。)

It is no good talking of his domestic matters. (不要談論他的家事。)

It is useless your trying to evade the question. (你用不着環顧左右而言他。)

It was no use men being angry with them for damaging the links (他們把高爾夫球場弄壞，人們也不必生氣。)

It is useless your saying anything. (你說也沒有用。)

It is no use hoping for or expecting anything now. (現在用不着希望或期待什麼。)

It is no use your trying to deceive me. (你別想欺騙我。)

It is no use my arguing with you. (我用不着和你爭論。)

Don't you find it very unpleasant walking in the rain? (你不覺得在雨中行走不舒服嗎？)

Do you think it odd my having gone to church? (你覺得我去做了禮拜奇怪吧。)

【習題3】

1. It is no good talking about the greatness of our country, unless we do something to make it great.

2. It is worth while asking how far their education contributed to their success.

3. You must find it rather dull living here all by yourself.

(4) "it…子句"

(a) *It* is true *that he went there*.

他去了那裏是眞的。

(b) I think *it* true *that he went there*.

我想他去了那裏是眞的。

【解 說】

這是"it…不定詞"的一種變形，形式上的主語或賓語所代表的，在此句型中便是後面的子句 (that-Clause)。這兩種句型差不多都是可以隨時變換的，單句變成複句，複句也可以變成單句，例如：

I have some purchases *that I must make*. (*to make*) (我要買些東西。)

There was not an instant *that we could afford to lose*. (*to lose*) (一刻都不能耽誤。)

There are many difficulties *that will have to be overcome.* (*to overcome* 或 *to be overcome*) (有許多困難尚待克服。)

Egypt was the first country *that became civilized.* (*to become civilized*) (埃及是最早的文明古國。)

I want a hat *that will go* (*to go*) with this dress. (我想要一頂配合這衣服的帽子。)

There is no reason *that she should give me* (*for her to give me*) such a dirty look. (她沒有理由要對我做出那樣的怪相。)

It is dangerous *that you have* (*to have*) a smattering of superficial knowledg on a subject. (對於任何問題一知半解的知識都是危險的。)

表「目的」的 in order that...may, 也可改爲 in order to do ,比較下列二句:

(a) The teacher explained that passage again and again in order *that* every student *might* understand it.

(b) The teacher explained that passage again and again in order *to make* every student understand it.

可知這種句型在英文中是用得極多的，在口頭說的短句中，常將"that" 略去，把兩個子句連着來說，如 I think (that) you had better go.＝It is advisable for you to go. 在主句的"it＋動詞"之後，子句之前，可接用形容詞、名詞、副詞，或什麽都不接，而直接接上子句也行。

【類　例】

It is clear that you did not want to do the work. (很明顯地你不想做那工作。)

It is a blessing that we do not know what is going to happen. (我們不知道未來的事是幸福的。)

It is your own concern whether you believe me or not. (信不信是你自己的事。)

It matters little who does it so long as it is done. (只要事情做了，誰做都行。)

It is amazing what progress the child is making under the new teacher. (在新老師教導之下那孩子的進步神速。)

I think it probable that he may give his assent. (我想他大概會同意的。)

We regarded it as preferable that he should continue in his position with us. (我認爲他能繼續在我們這裏幫忙更好。)

It is a thousand pities that it should have come to this. (那會變成這個樣子眞是可惜。)

It is probable that he'll come again. (他大概會再來的。)

It often happens that the biter is bit. (請看剃頭者，人亦剃其頭。)

It seems that there is going to be a change. (好像會有變動。)

How is it that you are late? (你怎麽會遲到的？)

It is under such circumstances that one recognizes one's true friends. (患難見交情。)

It occurred to me (that) there was no time to lose. (Stevenson) (我感到事已迫切。)

It was to save them from destruction (that) I parted with your dear person. (Fielding) (爲救助他們免於滅亡，我才離開了你。)

He made it clear that the plan was impossible. (他明白地說了那計劃行不通。)

Depend upon it (that) there is some mistake. (那一定有錯。)

You must see to it that no harm comes to her. (你必須注意不要傷害她。)

I took it for granted that he would not come. (我認爲他不會來。)

May I take it that you will sign the document? (我相信你會在文件上簽字的吧。)

And publish it that she is dead indeed. (Shakespeare) (公開宣佈她已死亡。)

No one wished it to be known that he failed to see the wonderful clothes. (誰也不希望別人知道他沒有看見皇帝的新衣。)

Rumour has it that there will be war. (謠言說快要打仗了。)

【習題 4】

1. It is true the Chinese attitude is to a large degree a reaction to the behaviour of the West, so that the latter must be taken into account, and will frequently be criticized.

2. It is hoped that men will be honest, but from a higher motive than because honesty is the best policy.

3. It is a rule never to be forgotten, that whatever strikes strongly, should be described while the first impression remains fresh upon the mind. (Dr Johnson)

4. I have heard it remarked by a statesman of high reputation that most great men have died of overeating themselves.

(5) "it is…子句"

It is diligence *that makes up for deficiency*.
勤能補拙。

【解　說】

這和上項所說的 "it…子句" 完全不同，因爲這個 "it" 不是代表後面的子句的。這是一種加重語氣的說法。句中關係代名詞的先行詞，須與後接附屬子句中的動詞在數、性、人稱上保持一致。這種關係代名詞是屬於限制性的 (restrictive)，自應以用 "that" 爲宜，不過常被換上 "who"，"which" 來說，也是可以的，而且甚至有將關係代名詞略去的。

上舉例句的原句，不是 That makes up for deficiency is diligence. 而是 Diligence makes up for deficiency. 其加重說法便是套上 "It is…that…" 的形式。說 It is I that am wrong. 比說 I am wrong. 要加強得多。再看兩種比較的說法：

{ You are guilty. (普通說法)
{ It is you that are guilty. (強調說法)

{ Edison invented the gramophone. (普通)
{ It was Edison who invented the gramophone. (強調)

{ Stupid pupils do not ask questions. (普通)
{ It is not stupid pupils who ask questions. (強調)

{ We should be grateful to men like Edison. (普通)
{ It is to men like Edison that we should be grateful. (強調)

如果主動詞後面接的是一個不定詞，就無須要有子句來加強語氣，例如：

SIMPLE: The tough little man's object in life is to avoid work.

EMPHATIC: It is the tough little man's object in life to avoid work.

爲回答 Who is the tough little man? 一問，也有兩種不同的方式，一爲普通的說法，一爲加強的說法。

SIMPLE: The tough little man is a person whose object in life is to avoid work.

EMPHATIC: The tough little man is a person whose object in life it is to avoid work.

句中 "it" 不代表後面子句的例子，還有It was not that he had plenty of money. (那並不是因爲他有很多的錢。)這個 "it"，意爲 "the reason" 或 "what I mean." 詳見後面的「否定的造句」。

【類　例】

What is it that you have to sell? (Dickens) (你要出賣的是什麼？)

It is not only bachelors on whom the young ladies confer their affections. (Thackeray) (年輕女子要和他談情說愛的，不只是單身漢而已。)

It is not who rules us that is important, but how he rules us. (重要的不是誰統治我們，而是他怎樣統治法。)

It is only shallow people who judge by appearances. (Oscar Wilde) (只有淺薄的人才會以貌取人。)

It is a kind of miracle brought us here. (Bacon) (我們來到這裏，簡直是一種奇跡。)

It is I have been stupid. (Wells) (愚笨的是我。)

I wonder who it was defined man as a rational animal. (Wilde) (人是一種理性的動物，這不知是誰下的定義。)

It is proud he must be to get you. (Yeats) (=Proud he must be to get you.) (得到了你，他一定是很自負的。)

It was your brother who talked the most. (説話最多的就是你的兄弟。)

It is the first step which is troublesome. (只有初步麻煩一點。)

It is not helps but obstacles that make a man. (使人成功的，不是助力，而是阻力。)

It is only education which will conquer prejudice. (克服偏見唯有教育。)

It was thanks to him that I got well. (要謝謝他把我的病治好了。)

It was with some difficulty that he found the way to his own house. (他費了不少的勁才找到路回家。)

It was not till evening that we got the news. (我們到晚上才得到消息。)

It is a wise father that knows his own child. (Merchant of Venice, II, ii) (任何聰明的父親都不見得完全知道他自己的兒子的。) (注)

【習題 5】

1. It is an ill wind that blows nobody good.

2. Yet it is not he who sings loudest and jokes most that has the lightest heart. (Irving)

3. It is the want of money and need of it that gives most of us tivitacy.

4. Reading furnishes the mind only with materials of knowledge; it is thinking that makes what we read ours.

5. Most large companies have trained specialists, called personnel managers, whose job it is to interview and pass judgment on prospective employees.

(注) 此種句法一不當心即被譯錯。梁實秋譯：「聰明的父親纔能認識他自己的兒子呢。」朱生豪譯：「祇有聰明的父親纔會知道他自己的兒子。」

6. He is an interpreter, one whose duty it is to act as a bridge or channel between the minds of his readers.

(6) "it…名詞"

It is strange *this Norse view of Nature.*

挪威人對大自然的這種看法是很奇怪的。

【解 說】

這個 "it" 是代表後面的名詞的，在名詞的前面，經常伴有 "this", "that", "the" 的字樣。上例去掉形式上的 "it"，恢復原來的說法，便是 This Norse view of Nature is strange. 不過一般人說時，都喜歡採用 It is strange…的形式。我們不可誤會這是 "it…子句" 型，省略了 "that" 的，試看下面的類例，便無法把 "that" 加進去。

【類 例】

It was very funny the way in which the penguins used to waddle. (企鵝走路的那樣子眞是滑稽。)

His coat it was all of the greenwood hue. (他的上衣完全是綠林的顏色。)

【習題 6】

1. It is strange the number of mistakes he always makes.

2. It's so dreadful, her father and mother dead almost at the same time. (Gissing)

3. He wondered if it was true what Mabel had said.

II. 名詞的造句

(7) { "all＋抽象名詞" / "抽象名詞＋itself" } ＝very＋形容詞

(a) He was *all gentleness* to her.

他對她非常的溫存。

(b) To his superiors, he is *humility itself.*

對於長輩他極爲謙遜。

【解　說】

"all＋抽象名詞"＝"抽象名詞＋itself"＝very＋形容詞。這原是表示某種性質到了極點的一種說法，有「非常」,「只管」,「一味」,「儘」之意，有時甚至可以譯爲「…的化身」,「…的具體化」。普通名詞的複數形用在"all"之後，也是屬於這一類型的句子，如 She is all smiles.（她一味笑）。He is all eyes.（他盯着看）。

【類　例】

I am all attention.（我全神貫注地在諦聽着。）

I am all anxiety.（我眞擔心。）

"It's simplicity itself", he remarked, chuckling at my surprise——"so absurdly simple that an explanation is superfluous." (Doyle)（「那簡直是再簡單也沒有了」，他望着我驚異的表情，咯咯地笑着說，「簡直簡單到用不着再加說明」。）

【習題 7】

1. "I am all astonishment," said Nelson, "when I reflect on what we have achieved."

2. Washington was discretion itself in the use of speech, never taking advantage of an opponent, or seeking a short-lived triumph in a debate. (Smiles)

3. While she was waiting for the tinkling of the bell, all nerves, suddenly he stood before her. (Maugham)

(8) "the＋單數名詞"的特殊用法

(a) *The horse* is a noble animal.

馬是高尚的動物。

(b) *The pen* is mightier than *the sword.*

文筆比刀劍更要強而有力。(文勝於武)

【解 說】

定冠詞的"the"與單數普通名詞結合時，有下列五種用法：(1)特定之物(particularizing)，(2)集合複數(collective)，(3)代表性的單數(representative)，如(a)例，(4)代替抽象名詞(abstractive)，即指那個名詞所有的抽象的觀念，如(b)例，(5)定性的用法(qualitative)，代替"such"或"so"的字樣，用於普通名詞或是抽象名詞都可以。現在就根據這五種用法舉例如下：

【類 例】

Shut the door please. (請把門關上。) (1)

The cabinet has resigned. (內閣辭職了。) (1)

I am going to the station. (我上車站去。)(附近的) (1)

They are the teachers of our school. (他們是本校的教員。) (全體)(2)

The stars are out. (星星出來了。)(常見的) (2)

The cherry trees are in blossom. (櫻花開了。) (附近所有的櫻花) (2)

The gentleman glories in his honourable poverty. (君子安貧。) (樂於清貧，"the"表其類全體的性質或作用) (3)

The whale is not a fish, but a mammal. (鯨不是魚，而是哺乳動物。) (3)

Bitters are good for the stomach. (苦味有益於胃。) (3)

The face is the index of the mind. (面情爲心情的表徵。) (3)

The child is father of the man. (兒童爲成人的胚胎。) (兒童的性情雖長大了也不變。江山易改，本性難移。) (3)

We should give up the sword for the pen. (化干戈爲玉帛。) (4)

The heart sees farther than the head. (情有勝於智的先見。) (4)

We must keep the wolf from the door. (=keep hunger away) (我們必須防止飢餓。) (4)

When a man is reduced to want, the beggar (element) comes out. (人窮志短。)(人窮則乞丐的性質俱現。) (4)

When I hear this song, I feel the patriot rise within me. (我聽了這支歌便發生愛國的心情。)(聞歌而有故國之思。)(4)

He is not the boy to (=such a boy as will) tell a lie. (他不是說謊的孩子。) (5)

He had the goodness (=was so good as) to grant my request. (他親切得允許了我的請求。) (5)

【習題 8】

1. The bamboo is one of the most wonderful as well as beautiful productions of the tropics.

2. He allowed the father to be overruled by the judge, and declared his own son to be guilty.

(9) 無生物的主語

Business took me to the town.

我因事進城去了。

【解　說】

中國話對於每個句子，差不多都是用人作主語，很少用無生物的。英文本也可以用人作主語，但用無生物作主語，却使得英文的氣味更加濃厚。上例當然也可以說，I went to the town on business. 不過不及用無生物主語來得漂亮。有時爲避免把人轉入，用無生物主語則更爲含蓄，如不說 We request，而說 It is requested，便覺得是間接的要求了。例如 It is requested that every guest should bring a gift with him for exchange. (每位客人請携帶一件禮物以便交換。) Contributions are requested for the refugees. (爲難民呼籲捐款救濟。) 與無生物主物同用的動詞，主要有 make, enable, remind, prevent, show, bring, keep 等字。

【類　例】

This medicine will make you feel better. (=If you take this medicine, you will feel better.) (你吃了這藥就會好些。)

His wealth enables him to do anything. (=He can do anything because he is rich.) (他有錢什麼都可以做。)

The sight of the orphan always reminds me of her parents. (=Whenever I see the orphan, I remember her parents.) (一見到那孤兒,我就想到她的父母。)

Bad weather prevented us from starting. (=We could not start because of bad weather.) (天氣太壞,我們無法動身。)

Careful comparison of them will show you the difference. (=If you compare them carefully, you will see the difference.) (你只消仔細比較一下,就可以發現不同。)

A few steps across the lawn brought me to a large, splendid hotel. (走過草地幾步,我就到了一個華麗的大旅館。)

A bit of knowledge kept me from making a big mistake when an important question was to be decided. (我因稍具知識,所以在決定重要問題的時候,還沒有犯大的過錯。)

【習題 9】

1. His work made it impossible for him to get home oftener than every other weekend.

2. Machinery had made the products of manufactories very much cheaper than formerly.

3. My hunger and the shadows together tell me that the sun has done much travel since I fell asleep.

(10) "something (much) of"
"nothing (little) of"

(a) Mr. Li is *something of* a philosopher.
李君略有哲學家的風味。

(b) Mr. Wu is *nothing of* a musician.
吳君全無音樂家的風味。

(c) Mr. Lu is very *much of* a poet.
盧君大有詩人氣派。

(d) Mr. Liu is *little of* a scholar.
劉君幾無學者風度。

【解　說】

這是表示「程度」的形容詞片語，有時可以當作副詞來譯。"something of"=to some extent (某程度)，在問句或條件句中，則說 "anything of"，中文可譯爲「略有」，「多少」。至於 "nothing of"，則可譯爲「全無」，「毫無」。"to be something of＋名詞"＝"to have something of＋名詞＋in＋代名詞"，所以 He is something of a philosopher.＝He has something of a philosopher in him. 又 He is nothing in ability of an orator.＝He has nothing of an orator in his ability. (他毫無演說家的才能。)

英文的 "much" 一字作名詞用時，意爲「多量」，「多額」，「許多」(a good deal)，「重要的人或物」，「了不起的東西」等。如 How much are eggs? (雞蛋多少錢？) Much of the time was wasted. (時間大半浪費了。) "much of" 可譯爲「大有」，通常與否定連用，如 He is not much of a scholar. (他算不得一個學者。)意爲「不是很好的或重要的學者」。與這 "much of" 相反的說法，爲 "little of"，可譯爲「幾無」。至於 "much of" 的變形則爲 "a great deal of"，而 "little of" 的變形則爲 "a bit of"。這個 "much of" 又還可以用比較級的形式，如 Oscar Wilde 在 De Profundis (獄中記) 中說，I am far *more of* an individualist than I ever was. (我現在比以前更是一個個人主義者了。) 又如 Conan Doyle 在 The Sign of Four 中說，The truth is that I was never *much of* a credit to the family, and I doubt if they would be so very glad to see me. They were all steady, chapel-going folk, small farmers, well known and respected over the country-side while I was always *a bit of* a rover. (實際那個家族對我是沒有什麼信譽的，是不會高興見到我的。他們都是信仰上帝，穩健的小農，在鄉下頗有名氣，受人尊敬，而我却老是有點流浪兒的味道。)

這一類的名詞用法，最好當作副詞來譯，就容易了，例如 He has seen something of life. 與其譯爲「他看過了一些人生」，不如譯爲「他略具閱歷」或「他稍閱世」。He is something of a scholar. 也同樣地

可譯爲「他略具學識」或「他稍有學問」。

英文的"something of"與"something like",又有程度的不同。"something like"=something approximating in character or amount,指數量或性質略同的事物,又可作 somewhat (似乎,略微) 解。This is something like a pudding. (此物略似布丁)。It shaped something like a cigar. (其形略似雪茄)。

從前北京大學有兩位教授(陳源和劉復),感情鬧得不好。就是爲着"something"一字。當陳通伯在倫敦把劉半農介紹給一位英國學人時,因知劉不大願意透漏他北大教授的身分,故含糊地說了一句: Mr. Liu is something of a professor or a lecturer. 劉聽了大不受用,後來回到北京,劉在「語絲」上爲文譏諷陳,故意把「北京大學教授陳源先生,卽署名西瀅的便是」一句中國話,加注譯成英文說,"A Teacher of the Peking National University. Something like a Professor or a Lecturer." 比陳說的"something of"更降了一級,變成"something like"了。可見"something"不是一個好字眼,不可隨便亂用,因此字略等於中國話的「一點兒」,如 to know something of everything, 意爲什麼都知道一點兒,其實什麼都不懂。

【類　例】

They say that he had no university education, but he seems to be something of a scholar. (據說他並未受過大學教育,但他看去好像學者的樣子。)

He has not much education, but he seems to be very much of a gentleman. (他雖未受過太多的教育,但很有君子風度。)

That's too much of a good thing. (那事好過了頭,反而糟了。)

I like warm weather, but with the mercury standing at 95° in the shade, it is a little too much of a good thing. (我喜歡熱天,但室內達到九十五度,則未免有點過佳,反而覺得不妙。)

He is very much of a gentleman. (他是一個非常體面的紳士。)

He is more of a scholar than a teacher. (與其說他是教師,不如說他

是學者。)

If he is anything of a gentleman, he will keep his promise, I should think. (他如果有一點君子的風度,我想他就會守約的。)

There was only a wooden latch to his door, because he had been too much of a skinflint to pay for one of the new iron locks to be fixed on. (Walter de la Mare) (他家門上只有一個木閂, 因爲他太吝嗇而不肯花錢買一把新的鐵鎖裝上。)

His features were agreeable; his body, though slight of build, had something of athlectic outline. (他的面貌令人有愉快之感,他的身體雖很瘦小,但有點運動家的輪廓。)

Although not a strong boy, there was nothing of the coward about him. (他雖不是一個強壯的少年,但却沒有一點膽怯的跡象。)

You may have something of a Roosebelt, something of a Newton in yourself; you may have something very much greater than either of these men manifested waiting your help to give it expression. (你也許具有羅斯福的才能,牛頓的智慧,你也許具有比他們兩人所顯示的更爲偉大的本領,在等待着你把它表現出來。)

【習題10】

1. When Waddington left her Kitty thought over what he had so carelessly said. It hadn't been very pleasant to hear and she had had to make something of an effort not to show how much it touched her. (W.S. Maugham)

2. It was the first word of kindness the child had ever heard in her life; and the sweet tone and manner struck strangely on the wild, rude heart, and a sparkle of something like a tear shone in the keen, round, glittering eye. (H.B. Stowe)

3. There was nothing of the student about him, but very much of the miner.

4. As you know, Gurdon, I never was much of a ladies' man. (F.M. White)

(11) 屬格的主格作用和賓格作用

(a) No one came to my *mother's rescue.*
誰也不來救助我的母親。

(b) *The love of money* is the root of all evil.
愛財是一切罪惡的根源。

【解　說】

英文屬格的用法，都有主格作用和賓格作用的分別，要看文氣才能決定是那一種。由他動詞變來的名詞，差不多都有這兩種用法。

美總統 Lincoln 的名言，"the government of the people, by the people and for the people"，便是一個好的例子。句中的 "of the people" 一語，到底是主格作用呢，還是賓格作用，頗引起意義上的爭執，因爲它可以解釋爲 (1)「人民治理的」(主格作用)，也可以解釋爲 (2)「治理人民的」(賓格作用)，到底是何者只好去問林肯本人了。普通把他這句名言譯爲「人民的，由於人民的，爲着人民的政治」，把 "of" 一字含糊地譯成一個「的」字，不分賓主，實在是一種過關的辦法，但意義是不够明顯的。另外一種簡單的譯法是「民治、民有、民享」，這就明白表示出主格作用來了。Austen O'Malley 寫有這樣的一句 parody (模仿他人的作品而改作的諷刺詩文)：The American government is a rule of the people, by the people, for the boss. (美國的政治是人民爲着政黨的領袖而統治人民的)。這好像是把 "of" 看作賓格作用了。

上舉的 (a)(b) 兩句，都是用爲賓格作用的，現再舉例比較如下。其中主格作用是通常的意思，賓格作用爲偶然的用法。

{ The conquests of Caesar (主格作用)
{ Caesar's conquest of Britain (賓格作用)

{ The writings of Plato (主)
{ The writing of a book (賓)

{ The commands of the general (主)
{ The command of an army (賓)

{ John's fear (約翰所懷的恐怖)
  The fear of John (恐怕約翰的心情)

{ Your dismissal of him (主)
  Your dismissal by him (賓)

【類　例】

Nature is not over-merciful in her treatment of delinquents. (主)

Are you satisfied with your treatment? (賓)

She has never recovered her loss. (主)

I have never recovered her loss. (賓)

Thanks to their father's rescue, they could return home safe. (幸賴父親援救，他們才能安然回家。) (主)

They hurried to their father's rescue. (他們趕快去救父親。)(賓)

The love of Browning for Italy. (白朗寧的愛意大利。) (主)

A mother's love of children. (母愛。) (賓)

The love of God (上帝的愛。) (主)

God's love of man (上帝愛世人。) (賓)

His memory is very bad. (他的記憶力很壞。) (主)

A monument is dedicated to his memory. (爲紀念他而立的碑。)(賓)

She doesn't want his praise. (她不要他讚美。) (主)

She has come to sing his praise. (她來讚美他。) (賓)

【習題11】

1. His death was hastened by the shock of her loss.

2. A mother's love for her own child differs essentially from all other affections.

3. Succeeding ages will reverence his memory.

4. There were no legal reason to justify his expulsion.

5. The mere saving of pennies regardless of the sacrifices we make to save them is not scientific and practical thrift.

6. His greatness was in his perseverance in the pursuit of his project.

7. The loss of these aesthetic tastes is a loss of happiness.

(12) "名詞(A)＋of＋a＋名詞(B)"

(a) It was *a great mountain of a wave.*
那是一個像山一樣高的大浪。
(b) *That fool of a Tom* did it.
這是托姆那個笨蛋做的。

【解 說】

這叫作同格的屬格 (Appositive Possessive), 在 "of" 前後的名詞, 指同一人或同一物。其中的 "名詞＋of", 構成一個形容詞片語, 以修飾後來的名詞。在這個同格的 "of" 後出現的名詞前面, 必須加不定冠詞, 那怕是固有名詞, 這個不定冠詞都不能省。

最普通的有 "a devil of a man", "a rascal of a fellow", "to catch a death of a cold" 等 idiomatic expressions, 可解釋爲 "a devil of" 等就像 "a kind of", "a sort of" 一樣的表現法, 從文法上看, "devil", "kind" 等是主體 (principal), 而 "of" 以下爲附屬 (adjunct), 即所謂修飾語 (modifier), 但從意義上看, 則恰相反, "kind of", "devil of" 的 "of", 可視爲前一字的後綴 (suffix), 不妨將 "a devil of a man" 改寫爲 "a devilish man", 將 "a rascal of a fellow" 改寫爲 "a rascally fellow", 將 "a death of a cold" 改寫爲 "a deadly cold"。他如 "a brute of a man"＝"a brutal man", "an awful fool of a woman" ＝"an awfully foolish woman"。英國名作家 Thackeray 在 Vanity Fair 中有所謂 "her old sharper of a father" (她那騙子的老父) 的說法。

【類 例】

That old cripple of a Henn. (Sean O'Faolain) (那個年老的殘廢者亨。)

She was much better educated than that fool of a Beatrice. (A. Huxley) (她比那愚笨的比特里斯受過更好的教育。)

This huge lunatic warren of a London. (J.B. Priestley) (這個巨大狂人收容所一般的倫敦。)

Those pigs of girls eat so much. (那些豬一般的女子吃那麼多。)

He was a fine figure of a young man. (他是一個翩翩佳公子。)

I've got the devil of a toothache. (我牙痛不堪。)

It would make the deuce of a scandal. (Galsworthy) (這會弄得聲名狼藉的。)

Mr A lives a hell of a long way off. (他住得遠哉遙遙。)

She was an angel of a wife. (天仙一般的妻子。)

She gave a party in her baby-house of a dwelling. (她在她那嬰兒屋子一般的小住宅中開了一個晚會。)

He was a big clumsy giant of a man with a broad face and small suspicious eyes. (Christie) (他是一個具有大臉孔和多疑的小眼睛的，笨拙如巨人般的男子。)

At Jutland, although I was in the devil of a funk all the time, I was sort of pleased with myself too. (Walpole) (在遞特蘭，雖則我始終都很恐懼，但我却多少還能自得。)

The child is a treasure of a son. (那是一個寶貝兒子。)

He lives in a palace of a house. (他住在一座宮殿似的大屋子裏。)

Your fool of a husband said so. (你那愚笨的丈夫說的。)

She is an old blackguard of a woman. (她是一個老毒婦。)

【習題12】

1. He was a brute of a man for all that you may say in his praise. (Nesfield)

2. Down with the Bourbons, and that great pig of a Louis XVIII! (Hugo)

3. They gave Sally this little blue butt-twitcher of a dress to wear. (J.D. Salinger)

(13) "名詞＋of＋屬格＋名詞"

It was beyond expectation for *a man of your taste.*

遇到一位像你這樣有風趣的人，眞是出乎意外。

【解 說】

在"名詞＋of＋屬格＋名詞"的形式中，其屬格的含義爲：「像…那樣的」。

【類 例】

He is a man of your experience.（他是一個像你那樣經驗豐富的人。）
I am not a man of his means.（我不是他那樣的資產家。）
You are a lady of her wisdom.（你是一個像她那樣賢慧的淑女。）

【習題13】

1. The watch was by no means low-priced, and was too expensive for a person of my limited means; still it was cheap at the price asked, for as to its action it defied all comparison.

2. Methought he strove to shine more than ordinarily in his talkative way, that he might insult my silence, and distinguish himself before a woman of Arietta's taste and understanding. (Spectator)

(14) "of＋抽象名詞"＝形容詞
"of 從略＋普通名詞"

(a) It was *of great importance*.
這是非常重要的。

(b) The earth is *the shape* of a pear.
地球是梨子形的。

【解 說】

在(a)例中"of＋抽象名詞"的形式，是和形容詞同義的。如"of importance"＝important. "of use"＝useful. "of no use"＝useless. 這都是可以譯爲「…的」的，如"a man of courage"＝a courageous man（勇敢的人；勇士）。"a lady of virtue"＝a virtuous lady（賢德的女人，淑女）。他如" a child of fortune"（幸運兒）。"a man of business"

(實業家)。用普通名詞也是一樣, 如 "a man of family" (名門之子)。"a man of few words" (寡言的人)。"a man of his word" (言行一致的人)。

在 (b) 例中的 "the shape", 雖字面上看不見 "of" 一字, 但意味上實等於說 "of the shape" 一樣。凡形狀、年齡、大小、色度、價格等有關的字, 多有這種用法。如「同一大小」說 "of a size", 如果加上形容詞時, 就常要把 "of" 略去, 說成 "the same size", 如像 "age", "price", "size" 等字, 是沒有形容詞的, 因此, "of age", "of size", "of price", 就彌補了這個缺憾, 而代行形容詞的任務了。

【類　例】

Bernard Shaw was an Englishman of letters. (蕭伯納是英國的文人。)

Su Tung-po was a man of parts. (蘇東坡是多才多藝的人。)

He is a man of means. (他是資產家。)

Chu Ko-lian was a man of resources. (諸葛亮足智多謀。)

They are all of an age. (他們同年。)

They are all the same age. (他們都是同年的。)

These glasses are of a size. (這些玻璃杯大小一樣。)

These glasses are the same size. (這些玻璃杯都是同樣大小的。)

Her dress is the colour of grass. (她的衣服是草綠色。)

This shirt is exactly the right size. (這件襯衫大小正好。)

The island is about one-third the size of Singapore. (那島的大小略等於新加坡三分之一。)

【習題14】

1. The heroic bravery displayed by this officer, in the midst of a hail of bombs from the enemy, was of the highest order.

2. The towers were exactly the same height. (Kruisinga)

3. He must have been almost the same age as was my father when I first met him.

4. Unsuccessful candidates are five times the number of suc cessful ones.

(15) "one's own＋名詞"
"of one's own＋動名詞"

(a) He shines *his own shoes.*
他自己擦皮鞋。

(b) It is a tree *of his own planting.*
這是他手栽的樹。

【解 說】

英文說的 "one's own", 除「自己的」一個意思外, 還有「爲自己」一個意思, 卽英文 "by oneself" 的意思, 如 (a) 例 He shines his own shoes.＝His shoes are shined by himself. 原來 "own" 是加強的說法, 單說 That is his house. (那是他的家) 已經够了, 但要加強時便說 That is his own house. 單說 He has a house. (他有一幢房子) 也够明白了, 但要加強時就說 He has a house of his own. (他自己有一幢房子)。要注意的是: 不能說 He has his own house. 因爲現代英文不可以把屬格代名詞和指示代名詞連用, 卽是: 不能說 "this my (own) house", 而要說 "this house of mine", 或 "this house of my own", 因此慣用法就要說 He has a house of his own. 尤其是在動詞 "have" 之後。(b) 例的 "of one's own doing", 意爲「自己做的」(done by oneself), 往往可省略 "own" 一字, 如 "a tree of his own planting" 也可以說成 "a tree of his planting."

【類 例】

She has no children of her own. (她自己沒有生孩子。)

The moon has no light of its own. (月亮本身無光。)

It is a poem of his own composing. (＝It is a poem composed by himself.) (這是他自己做的詩。)

This profession is of my own choosing. (這是我自己選擇的專業。)

He lived a colorful life and, in the end, a disastrous one, which is no less moving because much of the disaster was of his own making.

(Arthur Mizener) (他過的一種多彩多姿的生活，而最後却是多災多難的生活，那同樣令人感動，因爲災難大半是他自己招致的。)

【習題15】

1. He dressed his own food.

2. Usually that which a man calls fate is a web of his own weaving, from threads of his own spinning. (Doyle)

3. She married him of her own choice against her parents' will.

(16) "have＋the＋抽象名詞＋不定詞"

I *had the fortune to succeed.*
我很幸運獲得成功。

【解　說】

這個 have＝possess，原指肉體上或精神上的特徵，作爲一種天稟而具有的，比方說，He has a good memory. (他的記性好)。又如 Irishmen have red hair. (愛爾蘭人天生是紅頭髮)。進而由普通名詞發展爲抽象名詞，後面接上一個不定詞，而成爲一種慣用的語法了。例如

She had the cheek (＝impudence) to say such a thing. (她厚顏地說出這樣的話。)這就等於說：She was so impudent as to say such a thing.

How can you have the heart (＝hard-heartedness) to drown such darling little kittens? (你何忍把這些如此可愛的小貓去淹死？) 這就等於說：How can you be so hard-hearted as to drown such darling little kittens?

Will you have the goodness (＝kindness) to do it for me? (＝Will you be so kind as to do it for me?) (請你幫忙替我做一下好嗎？)。

所以例題的句子也可以說成 I was so fortunate as to succeed 或 I was fortunate enough to succeed. 而含義完全一樣。此外，在抽象名詞後的不定詞，有時也可變成 "of＋動名詞"，如 May I have the pleasure of dancing with you? (我可不可以和你跳舞一回？)

【類 例】

I had the luck to find him at home.(我幸運地遇見他正在家裏。)

He had the misfortune to break his leg.(他不幸折斷了腿。)

Those who have the interest of their country at heart are praiseworthy.(憂國之士値得頌揚。)

He had the courage to express his opinion.(他毫無忌憚地申述了他的意見。)

I had the folly to spend all I earned.(我竟愚笨得喪盡所獲。)

That wretch has had the audacity to touch my children's doll.(V. Hugo)(那個小壞蛋竟有狗膽來動我孩子們的玩具。)

He had the kindness to show me round the place.(他親切地帶我參觀了一個圈子。)

He had the imprudence to marry beneath him.(他不謹愼地竟至娶家世寒微的女子爲室。)

【習題16】

1. The boy waved the fan to and fro and drove away the buzzing flies whenever they had the impertinence to come near the baby's face.

2. He had the foresight to carry fire insurance.

(17) "that (those)+先行詞+關係代名詞"

He lost *that picture which* he had got with much trouble.
他把那費了很大的勁才得來的畫丢了。

【解 說】

這是所謂「強烈的限制」(strong restriction)用法，即是爲加強限制的意思，在"who"，"which"的先行詞(Antecedent)前加用"that"，"those"的字眼。這種表現法和說"such...as"差不多。句中的"that"，不能譯爲「那個」。

【類 例】

The root is that part of the vegetable which least impresses the

eye. (根是植物最不引人注目的部分。)

That virtue which requires to be ever guarded is scarcely worth the sentinel. (=Such virtue as requires......) (須要常常保護的美德是不值得看守的。)

Those rich men are great who do not think themselves great because they are rich. (並不以爲他們有錢就是偉大的闊人們，才算偉大。)

Those persons who do most good are least conscious of it. ("Those ...who or which"="only those" or "all those") (爲善最多的人很少感覺到他是在爲善。)

A dog will become attached to those members of the family who are kind to it. (家裏的人誰對狗好，狗就喜歡跟誰。)

【習題17】

1. Milton had that universality which belongs to the highest order of genius.

2. Education alone can conduct us to that enjoyment which is best in quality and infinite in quantity.

(18) "one thing...another"

It is *one thing* to know and *another* to teach.

自己知道是一件事，要教別人又是另外一件事。

【解　說】

這個例句又可簡約地說 To know is one thing; to teach is another. (=Knowing and teaching are different.) 意卽自知和教人是兩回事，有的人知道但不能教，雖有一肚子學問却不會教書。"another"=an+other. "one...another" 不可與 "one...the other" 以及 "the one...the other" 混亂。在二者之中任取其一 (one)，剩下的便是另外的一個了 (the other)。例如 They have two daughters; one is a singer, the other an actress. (他們有兩個女兒，一爲歌手，一爲女伶。) "the one...the other"=the former...the latter. (前者…後者)，例如 Mary has a

white and a red rose; the one is lovelier than the other. (瑪麗有一株白玫瑰和一株紅玫瑰;白玫瑰比紅玫瑰好看。)

【類　例】

It is one thing to own a library; it is another to use it wisely. (藏書是一件事,能否善予利用又是另外一件事。)

To have money is one thing, to spend it wisely is quite another. (有錢是一件事,賢明地用錢又是另外一件事。)

It is one thing to know a language, and it is another to know about it. (懂得一種語文是一件事,具有關於那種語文的知識又是另外一件事。)

【習題18】

1. There is no more dangerous experiment than that of undertaking to be one thing before a man's face and another behind his back.

2. Others hold that the essence of art is one thing and the form another.

III. As 的造句

(19) "as...as" 的三種用法

(a) He is *as* kind *as* his sister (is).
他像他妹妹一樣和藹。

(b) He is *as* kind *as* (he is) honest.
他又誠實又和藹。

(c) He is *as* kind *as* his sister is honest.
他妹妹誠實而他就和藹。

【解　說】

英文"as+形容詞+as"的形式,是表示程度相同的某種性質的,如(a)例,表示兩個不同的人相同的性質,(b)例表示同一人的不同的性質,(c)例表示兩個人的不同的性質。句中第一個"as"爲指示副詞,第

二個 "as" 爲連詞, 因此在第一個 "as" 後面, 只能接用一個形容詞或副詞, 而在第二個 "as" 後面, 便要接上一個子句。如係否定時則第一個 "as" 改爲 "not so", 例如 He is not so kind as you are.

這個 "as...as" 是平等比較, 高一級的比較則用 "-er...than", 至於對同一人所有的不同性質的比較, 則用 "more+positive" 的形式, 如 She is more attractive than pretty. (與其說她漂亮, 不如說她可愛。) She is more shy than unsocial. (=She is shy rather than unsocial.) (與其說她不愛交際, 不如說她害羞。) The man was more dead than alive. (那人只剩得奄奄一息了。)

【類　例】

He is as clever as his sister. (他和他姊姊一樣聰明。)

She is not so pretty as her sister. (她沒有她妹妹好看。)

No country suffered so much as England. (Macaulay) (沒有一個國家受過英格蘭那樣多的痛苦。)

He is as cunning as you are clever. (他的狡猾好似你的聰明。)

【習題19】

1. He is as old as his cousin. (Greene)

2. He was as covetous as cruel. (Wotton)

3. Dobbin looked as pale and grave as his comrade was flushed and jovial. (Thackeray)

(20) "as...as any"
"as...as ever"

(a) He is *as* great a statesman *as any*.

(b) He is *as* great a statesman *as* ever lived.

他是一位稀有的大政治家。

【解　說】

英文的 "as...as" 原爲同等比較的意思, 加上 "any" 或 "ever" 的時

候，就變成「不讓」，「不弱」，甚至「古今無雙的」的意思了。在 "as...as any" 後面，又可以接上名詞，如 He works as hard as anybody.（他勤勉不遜於任何人。）如果在 "any" 後接物而不接人，則有 "as...as anything can be"（=as...as possible）一個表現法，意爲「愈…愈佳」，如 I will make it as clean as anything can be.（我要儘量把它弄清潔。）這個 "as...as ever"，另外又有 "as...as before"（照舊）的意思，如 He works as hard as ever.（其勤勉不減於以前。）He is as busy as ever.（他照舊忙。）She is as pretty as ever.（她還是一樣的漂亮。）這個 "ever"=always.（素常。）

【類 例】

His behaviour is as good as ever.（他的行爲和過去一樣的好。）

His trust in his friend was as firm as ever.（他對其朋友的信任照常堅定。）

He is as diligent a man as ever lived.（其爲人勤勉不讓古今的人。）

They continued to fish up plate, bullion, and dollar, as plentifully as ever.（他們繼續地撈起一些碟子、金塊和銀元，和以前一樣地多。）

The dog was as courageous an animal as ever scoured the woods.（狗的勇敢不遜於到現在爲止在森林中跑動的任何動物。）

Then as for active exercise, she could ride on horseback as well as any man in his kingdom. (Hawthorne)（至於說到實際的運動，她的騎術不弱於國內任何男子。）

【習題20】

1. His novels have as good a chance of surviving as any that have been written in the last hundred years. (Maugham)

2. It's not only real, but it's as fine a string of pearls for its size as I've ever seen. (Maugham)

(21) "as...as...can be"

It is *as* plain *as* plain *can be*.
那是再明白也沒有了。

【解 說】

上例單說是 It is plain. 也就够了，現在爲要加強 "plain" 的意思，所以把同一個形容詞再說一遍，最後再加上 "can be" 的字樣，表示「明白到不能再明白的程度」。這種表現法有時可將第一個 "as" 省掉，或將 "can be" 略去。這個 "can be"，有時也可說成 "may be" 的。

【類 例】

You are as wrong as wrong can be. (你大錯特錯。)

A lot of these boys were green as green can be. (Bob Considine) (這些男孩子許多都是精力充沛無以復加的。)

Gabby yanked him quick as quick. (John Tunis) (加比急急地把他用力猛拉。)

I am as thirsty as thirsty may be. (我口渴得不得了。)

She is as happy as happy can be. (她快樂已極。)

The place is as still as still. (那地方靜寂得無以復加。)

【習題21】

1. "Thou'rt wrong, my friend," said good King Hal; "as wrong as wrong can be." (Mackay)

2. The old folks made me welcome; they were as kind as kind could be. (Woolson)

3. Since I have been in prison he has always been coming to see me, and at times he would talk to me, and was as good to me as could be. (Plato's Death of Socrates)

(22) "as..., so..."

As rust eats iron, *so* care eats the heart.

憂能傷人，亦猶銹之蝕鐵。

【解 說】

這個 "so" 的意思是 "in the same proportion", "in like manner", "in the same way" (亦復如此)。爲着加強語氣，又可在 "as" 前加用

"just"一字。有時在主句中，可將動詞置於主語之前。

【類 例】

As you treat me, so I will treat you.（你怎樣待我，我也怎樣待你。）

As the lion is king of beasts, so is the eagle king of birds.（鷹爲鳥中之王，正好像獅爲獸中之王一樣。）

As fire tries gold, so does adversity try courage.（正如火可以試金一樣，逆境也可以試人的勇氣。）

As the human body is nourished by the food, so is a nation nourished by its industries.（正像身體要靠食物營養一樣，國家要靠工業營養。）

【習題22】

1. Just as no two words are truly synonyms, so no two different expressions, or ways of expression, can mean exactly the same thing. (G.H. Vallins)

2. Just as the chemist draws his deductions from the results of laboratory experiments, so must students of language draw their deductions from an observation of the facts of language. (R C. Pooley)

(23) "It is in (or with)…as in (or with)"

It is in life *as in* a journey.

人生好比旅行一樣。

【解 說】

這個表現法是由"as…so"（正像）變化而來的，意爲"is like"，可譯作「猶如」，「正好像」。例句可說成 Life is like a journey. 句首的"it"，並不指什麼，只是一般漠然的用法。

【類 例】

It is in studying as in eating; he who does it gets the benefits, and not he who sees it done.（讀書和吃飯一樣，得到利益的是實際在吃的人，而不是在旁觀看的人。）

It is with women as with flowers. (婦美如花。)

It is with a machine as with a child that must always be taken care of. (機器也和小孩一樣，須要時常加以照顧。)

It is in mind as in body which must be nourished by good food (精神和身體都必須有好的食物來營養。)

It is with one as with the other. (=One is like the other.) (彼此相似。)

【習題23】

1. It is in man as in soils, where sometimes there is a vein of old which the owner knows not of.

2. It is with words as with sunbeams; the more they are condensed, the deeper they burn. (Southey)

(24) "as much"

"as many"

"like so many"

(a) I thought *as much*.

我亦作如是想。

(b) Those five days seemed to me *as many* years.

那個五天對我好像五年一樣。

(c) They work *like so many* ants.

那些人就像那麼多的螞蟻一樣在做工。

【解　說】

這個 "as much"=as much as that, 具有三種意思：① "the same degree or quantity of", 表同樣程度的，同樣分量的，例如 He has golh as much as silver. (他有與白銀同樣多的黃金。) ②"as well"; "equally", 表同等或同樣的，例如 He was greatly respected, and his brother as much despised. (他很受人尊敬，而他的兄弟則很受人鄙視。) ③ "the same thing"; "just so", 表同一事；意爲「亦然」，例如 I was not at all

vexed at my failure, for I had expected as much. (我對失敗一點也不煩惱,因爲我早知道會失敗的。)

至於 "as many"=the same number of, 是表同數的,意爲「其數相同」, 例如 He made six mistakes in as many paragraphs. (他在六節中犯了六個錯誤。)這個 "as many" 如用在 "like" 後面 "as" 就要改變爲 "so", 說成 "like so many", 意思是「好像同樣數目的」,又可譯成「宛如…似的」, 例如 We worked like so many bees. (我們宛如那樣多的蜜蜂似的工作了。)

【類 例】

I was not in the least surprised, for I had expected as much. (我一點也沒有吃驚,因爲我早已料到會有那樣的事。)

I found ten misprints in as many pages. (我在十頁中就發現十個錯誤。)

You have made two blunders in as many minutes. (你在兩分鐘之中就犯了兩次大錯。)

It was a truly awful sight, watching the numberless little wooden houses catching fire one after another, and flaming up like so many match-boxes. (那眞是一個可怕的光景,望着無數的小木屋,一個又一個地着火燃燒,就像燒着那樣多的火柴盒子一樣。)

【習題24】

1. "Nay, I told you as much before," said Blount. (Scott)

2. The wall was about fifteen feet high, and as many feet thick.

3. All our streets are lined with trees, and like so many stars among the leaves and branches, the street lamps shed their light.

4. I assembled a number of my play-fellows, and we worked diligently like so many emmets. (Franklin)

(25) **"as good as"**
"as well as"

(a) It is *as good as* done.

這就和做好了一樣。

(b) It is broad *as well as* long.

那既長且寬。

【解　說】

英文的 "as good as" 有兩個意思：① "amounting to"; "not falling short of", 意爲「等於」,「同樣」,「幾如」,「不欠缺」, 例如 He was as good as his word. (他不爽約。實踐其言。) (句中 "word" 換爲 "promise" 也是一樣。) ② "virtually"; "essentially"; "in every essential respect", 意爲「實際上」,「其實」,「實在」,「在各要點上」, 例如 He is as good as dead already. (宛如死人。行屍走肉。名存實亡。他簡直和死人一樣。)

至於 "as well as" 則有四個意思：① "no less than"; "equally with", 意爲「等於」,「不下於」,「亦」,「一樣好」, 例如 I have understanding as well as you. (我的理解力和你一樣好。) ② "both...and"; "one equally with the other", 意爲「與……及」,「二者皆」, 例如 Work in moderation is healthy as well as agreeable to the human constitution. (適度的勞動對身體給與快感, 又有益衛生。) ③ 與 "not only... but also" 有連帶關係, 如云 He has experience as well as knowledge. =He has not only knowledge, but also experience. (他有學識又有經驗。學識自不待言, 連經驗也很豐富。) 注意改寫時要把順序顚倒, 如 (b) 例 It is broad as well as long. =It is not only long, but also broad. ④ "as well as" 還可以代替 "better than" 用, 例如 As well (=better) be hanged for a sheep as (=than) for a lamb. (與其盜小羊而受絞刑, 毋寧盜大羊合算。竊鈎不如竊國。)

【類　例】

The sailors did noble duty that day, in the dogged faith that they would "give as good as they got, anyhow." (那些水手們當日盡了高尙的職責, 在那頑強的信仰中, 一言以蔽之, 他們是要以其所受施諸其人的。)

I will let you have a geography that is not new. It is as good as a new one. (我要給你一本舊的地理書。因爲那和新的一樣。)

She said that he was as good as engaged to a girl out there, and that he had never dreamt of her. (W.D. Howells) (她說那男人在外洋有一個女子等於訂了婚一樣，而他却從來沒有夢想過她。)

The merchant as good as promised the orphan boy, that he would adopt him. (那商人等於是答應了那孤兒要收他爲養子。)

This is the case with manufacturing as well as with agricultural interests. (這是對工業有利，對農業也一樣好的實例。)

In polity, as well ecclesiastical as civil, there are always evils which no art of man can cure. (Hooker) (在政治形態上，也和在教會組織及國家行政上一樣，總有許多壞處是人力無法治好的。)

【習題25】

1. Out of the eight men who had fallen in the action, only three still breathed; and of these two were as good as dead.

2. Men should be gentle as well as brave and women brave as well as gentle.

3. I returned to the den to cook myself a meal, of which I stood in great need, as well as to care for my horse, whom I had somewhat neglected in the morning. (R.L. Stevenson)

4. Doris' musical background stemmed from her father, William, who was an organist, as well as a violin, piano, and voice teacher. (R.G. Hubler)

(26) 句首的 "as it is"
句尾的 "as it is"

(a) If I were rich, I should do so. *As it is*, I do nothing.
如果我有錢的話，我就要這樣做。但實在太窮，我什麼都不能做。

(b) The painter does not copy nature *as it is*.
畫家描繪大自然，並不是完全寫實的。

【解　說】

英文說的 "as it is" (過去時態爲 "as it was") 這個表現法，有兩種場合，因用的位置不同，而影響到意義的差別。

(a) 用於句首，接在假設語氣之後。例如 If I were a college graduate, I would go abroad. As it is, I cannot go. (如果我是大學畢業生的話，我就要出洋去。但事實上，我可不能去。) 個這 "as it is"＝as it stands; to state the matter as it really stands; as a matter of fact; in reality, 意爲「在事實上」,「就實際的情形而論」, 簡略成爲「實際上」,「事實上」。接在假想之後，作爲報告實情時的導言。用過去動詞時，意義不變。如 As it is, we cannot help her. 過去時則爲 As it was, we could not help her. 如係說人，則要隨人稱的不同而改變動詞，如 Paint me as I am. (照我現在的樣子來畫。) 在許多場合可用其他同樣意義的片語來取代，如 *As matters stand*, I do not like to make the plan public. (在目下的狀態中，我不想把那計畫公開。) *As the case stands*, I don't care to make public the reason for my visit. (在目下的狀態中，我還不想公開我訪問的理由。) *As things now are*, we cannot put the plan into practice. (以目下的狀態，我們還不能把那計畫付諸實行。) *As things go*, it is impossible to make a forecast of the development of the peace talk. (以目下的情形而論，和談的發展如何是未能預測的。)

(b) 用於句尾，接在名詞或代名詞之後。例如 I take the world as it is. (世界就是這個樣子，我並不指望它會變好。) Leave it as it is. (就讓它是那樣，不要動好了。) You had better take things as they are. (你最好接受事物的現狀。) 這個 "as it is" (複數爲 "as they are"), 意爲「照現狀」, "it" 指前面的名詞，所以那名詞如爲複數時，就要改爲 "they", 動詞也跟着要改爲 "are"。

【類　例】

If he were not ill, he would go to see the play. As it is, he has

to stay at home. (如果他不生病的話，他是要去看戲的。實際上，他只好呆在家裏了。)

If I had been rich, I would have bought it. As it was, I missed the chance of getting it. (我有錢早就買了，但實際上我却失去了獲得那個的機會。)

We hoped things would go better, but as it is they are getting worse. (我們原指望事態好轉，可是實際上却更糟了。)

Please leave the apple-box as it is. (請把蘋果箱照原樣放着。)

He finds fault with society as it is without having anything better to suggest in its place. (他並沒有提出什麼替代的良策，只是一味對現實社會加以非難。)

He took the bundle just as it was to the police-station. (他把那包裹原封不動地送到警察局去了。)

I often wish I could read. As it is, I have nothing to do but to think. (我常希望我能閱讀。像我現在這樣一字不識，我除了思索之外，什麼也不能做。)

【習題26】

1. There is no alleviation for the sufferings of mankind excebt veracity of thought and action and the resolute facing of the world as it is.

2. I should have followed him through the open window if I had been stronger. As it was, I rang the bell and roused the house. (Doyle)

(27) "過去分詞＋as it is"

"現在分詞＋as it does"

(a) *Hidden as it was* by the trees, the tomb was difficult to find.
深藏在樹木中，那墳墓很難找到。

(b) *Standing as it does* on a high hill, the church commands a fine view.
像這樣建立在高山上，教堂的眺望很好。

【解 說】

這是上項用法的變形。這個 "as it is" (過去用 "was") 是強調前面的過去分詞的，"it" 是指主句中的主語，在上例中則指 "the tomb"，如果不要加強來說，則取消 "as it was"，說成 Hidden by the trees, the tomb was difficult to find. 意思還是一樣。

在過去分詞之後所接的 "as it is"，到了現在分詞之後，就要把動詞 "be" 改爲 "do"；這個 "as it does" 也好，前述的 "as it is" 也好，都是爲加重語氣而設的插入句，去掉它也是無妨的，如 (b) 例改說成 Standing on a high hill, the church commands a fine view. 意思還是一樣的。這個在現在分詞後接用的 "as it does" (或 "as he does"; "as she did" 等)，可譯爲「因爲是這樣」,「實際…故」等等。

【類 例】

Written as it is in good English, this book is recommendable to all. (實際是用美好的英文寫的,所以這本書可以向大衆推介。)

Burdened as he was, he could not walk fast. (因爲負荷太重,所以他不能走快。)

Living as we do in a remote village, we rarely have visitors. (因爲是住在這樣遠離城市的村莊上,我們是很少客人的。)

Bathing as he did several times a day, he could not get his hair to stay down. (因爲是這樣一天去游泳好幾次,他的頭髮是不會平伏的。)

【習題27】

1. Published as it was at such a time, his work attracted much attention.

2. This movement, arising as it does among the poor themselves, is likely to have more force than if it was from the upper classes. (Dixon)

3. Coming as it did at a period of exceptional dullness it attracted perhaps rather more attention than it deserved. (Doyle)

(28) "名詞等＋as＋主語＋動詞等"

(a) *Child as she was*, she was more than a match for him.
她雖是一個小孩，却甚過做他的對手。

(b) *Strange as it may sound*, it is true.
聽來雖覺奇怪，却是千眞萬確的。

(c) *Try as you may*, you will never succeed.
你儘可以試試看，不過你決難成功。

【解　說】

在"名詞(形容詞)＋as＋主語＋動詞"的形式中的"as"，如例(a)及(b)，多爲"though"或"although"的意思，是一種表示讓步的句子，上例可改寫爲 Though she was a child (注意這時要加上冠詞) 及 Although it may sound strange. 至於"動詞＋as＋主語＋助動詞"的形式，也是讓步的說法。Try as you may＝Although you may try. 見(c)例。試比較下舉二例：

(1) Clever as he was, he found not a little difficulty in solving the problem which was anything but difficult. (他雖很聰明，也相當困難來解決那個決非困難的問題。)

(2) Clever as he was, he found little difficulty in solving the problem which was none too easy. (他因爲很聰明，所以一點不困難，就把那個決非容易的問題解決了。)

(1) Clever as he was＝Although he was clever.

(2) Clever as he was ＝As he was clever.

(1)意爲「雖則」，(2)意爲「因爲」。這個"as"何時作「雖則」解，何時作「因爲」解，就要看後面的文句才能決定。這原是由"(as) clever as he is"強調的省略而來，「像他那樣聰明」，變成「他雖則聰明」。在美國現仍有人用"As clever as"的形式。又(a)例中的名詞，因移到句首去，便得將冠詞略去，如恢復普通說法時，則非有冠詞不可，如 Warrior as he was＝Though he was a warrior (他雖爲武士)。Woman as I am ＝Though I am a woman (我雖屬女流)。至於(c)例，因前爲動詞，句

法全變，應譯爲「儘管」。

【類　例】

Young as he is, it is but natural that he should commit such a mistake. (他因爲年輕，要犯這種錯誤也是當然的事。)

Woman as she is, she was brave. (她雖是女流，那時却够勇敢了。)

Poor piper as I am, I won't do anything below contempt. (我雖濫竽，但不做可鄙的事。)

Young as he is, he is able. (他雖年輕，但很能幹。)

Teacher as he is, he explains it very clearly. (因爲他是敎師，所以解釋得很淸楚。)

The Greeks, eminent as they were in almost every department of human activity, did surprisingly little for the creation of science. (希臘人在人類一切活動的部門雖則都很優越，但對於科學的創造上，却毫無貢獻。)

【習題28】

1. Young as he was, and poor as he was, no King's or Lord's son could come up to him in learning.

2. Struggle as we may, we can never be completely satisfied.

3. Dull as a student may be, and difficult as a subject may seem to be at first sight, he will find the study become easier or at least less difficult, if he can persevere and does not neglect it.

IV. 動詞的造句

(29) "may well＋動詞"
"and well＋主語＋may"

(a) He *may well* be proud of his success.
他纔得那樣的成功是很可以驕傲的。

(b) He is proud of his success, *and well he may*.
他對於自己的成功感到驕傲，也是應該的。

【解 說】

在 (a) 例中的 "may well"=have good reason (其中的 "well"=with good reason=reasonably), 意爲「那樣也是有理由的」,「無怪」。在 (b) 例中的 "well+主語+may"=and with reason, 附在主句之後, 意爲「那也是應該的」。這個 "well" 是修飾整個句子的副詞, 以表示說話者的意見的。有時不說 "may", 單用一個 "well", 也能表達 "with good reason" 的意思, 如 We cannot very well refuse him. (我們沒有好的理由來拒絕他。)內容如果是指的過去的話, "may" 則可改爲過去時態的 "might", 不過有時候, 用過去時態的 "might", 並不一定是指過去, 而是一種客氣的說法, 用來表現在的, 如 She might well ask that. (她這樣問一聲, 也不爲無理吧。) 還有 "may well" 的 "well", 又可作 "probably" (大概)解, 如 It may well be true. (那大概是眞的。)

【類 例】

She may well be proud of her son. (她對她自己的兒子感到驕傲, 是有理由的。)

You may well say so. (你很有理由這樣說。)

Well he might be proud and glad. (他要感到驕傲而又高興也是應該的。)

You may well refuse him. (你拒絕他是對的。)

He was proud of his feat, and well he might. (他自誇他的功績是有理由的。)

【習題29】

1. As regards its climate,Japan does not differ materially from Britain, and in this, the country may well be called "the Britain of the Pacific."

2. The good lady was in an acstasy of delight. And well might she be proud of her boy. (Hawthorne)

3. During this period I met persons who by their rank, fame or position might very well have thought themselves destined to become historical figures. (Maugham)

(30) "may as well…as"
"might as well…as"

(a) You *may as well* call a cat a little tiger *as* call a tiger a big cat.
你如把虎叫做大貓，同樣也無妨把貓叫做小虎。

(b) You *might as well* throw your money away *as* spend it in gambling.
你要把錢花在賭博上，就不如丟掉的好。

【解　說】

英文說的 "may as well…as" 和 "might as well…as"，都是用於現在的，並無現在時和過去時的分別，其所不同的是前者指「可能的事」，而後者指「不可能的事」。這種句中的 "well"，也和上項 (29) "may well" 中的 "well" 意思相同，都是作「合理的」，「理所當然的」(reasonably; with good reason) 解，所以 "may as well…as" = have as good reason to…as，不過這個表現法中的意義的重點，在 "as…as" 之間的比較，有時可解釋爲「與其…做，寧肯…做爲佳」，如 One *may as well* not know a thing at all *as* know it imperfectly. (與其一知半解，不如完全不知的好。) 在第二個 "as" 以下的句子，是常被省略的，如 I may as well go at once. (我還是馬上去的好。) 後面省去了 as not (與其不去) 的字樣。第一人稱的 I may as well 與第二人稱的 you had better 相當，但較 had better 爲弱，所以意爲「爲宜」，「還是那樣做的好」。如(a)例是「合理的」的意思。

現在再看(b)例。句中 throw your money away (A)，是誰也不幹的愚行，spend it in gambling (B)，也是不弱於(A)的愚行，爲要強調(B)的愚笨，故在(A)句中不用 "may" 而用 "might"，是假定的說法，表示不可能的事。這種 "as…as" 的造句，原意爲比較，即(B)和(A)一樣，可譯成「不啻」，「猶之」，「可與相等」，但由力加否定的關係，有時可採用選擇的譯法：「與其那樣不如這樣的好」。在第二個 "as" 後的字句，常被

省略，因爲由前面的文字可以想像出來。

【類　例】

You may as well (=had better) begin at once (as not). (你宜早日着手。)因馬上着手與不馬上着手的理由同樣充分，所以還是馬上着手的好。

You might as well throw your money into the sea as lend it to him. (你借錢給他，不啻把錢丢在海裏。)

I might as well act it as say it. (我那樣說就等於那樣做。)

I think we may as well set out on our travels. (我想我們最好就出發去旅行。)

You might as well erect a house without bricks and mortar as try to get on in life without education. (不受教育而想立身處世，就像沒有磚和灰泥來建造房子一樣。)

You may just as well tell me the truth. (你把事實告訴我是爲你好。)

One may as well be hanged for a sheep as a lamb. (與其竊鈎而誅，毋寧竊國。)

You might as well advice me to give up my fortune as my argument. (你要我放棄議論，還不如要我放棄財產。)二者皆不可能。

【習題30】

1. Friendship is a vase, which, if it is cracked by accident, may as well be broken at once.

2. You might as well expect the sun to rise in the west as expect me to change my opinion.

3. When this lady saw that the magazine was not going to rise, she became a little disgusted with the editor and decided that she might as well get what there was to get while there was still some thing available. (Hemingway)

(31) "so that…may"
"lest…should"

(a) I run fast *so that* I *may* catch the train.

我快跑爲的是要趕上火車。

(b) I run fast *lest* I *should* miss the train.

我快跑以免趕脫火車。

【解 說】

這兩種表現法,都是表示「目的」的,"lest...should" 的說法較古,現今多用 "for fear that" 來取代了。"that...may" 也略帶古風,"in order that...may",則是鄭重的表現法。這個表「目的」的 "may",有時也可換用 "can","shall" 等字。(a) 例可譯作「俾可」,「以求達到」,而 (b) 例則爲「以免」,「以求不至」,又可翻譯爲「因恐」,「免得」。這個 "so that" 在會話體中及美國話中,常只用一個 "so" 字,而不用 "that",在 "so that" 的前面有時用逗號(Comma),有時不用,逗號的有無,完全不影響文義。"lest...should" 除上述 "for fear" 外,還可代以 "in case",後面仍接 "should" 不變。在最近的美國話中,則將 "should" 略去不說,後接原形動詞,如 Take care lest you fall. (當心不要跌倒。) 這個 "lest ...should" 的口語表現法爲 "so as not to".

【類 例】

We whispered lest he should hear. (怕他聽見故細聲說。)

Man does not live that he may eat, but eats that he may live. (人非爲吃而生,乃爲生而吃。)

He spends that he may succeed, and succeeds that he may spend. (他消耗以求成功,成功以便消耗。)

They placed a guard at the door, lest the prisoner should find means of escape. (他們派了一個衛兵來看守房門,以免犯人想辦法逃走。)

He tried to shout so that he might be heard all along the street. (他試大聲叫喊,指望沿街有人聽到。)

Kindly sign it and return to me, so I can put through a voucher for the $1,000 we agreed on. (請簽字後寄回給我,俾可將我們雙方議定的一千元順利完成保證手續。)

I wrote out an itinerary so they could follow us. (Hemingway)

(我定出了一個旅程表,以便他們可以追隨我們而來。)

【習題31】

1. Science consists in grouping facts so that general laws or conclusions may be drawn from them. (Darwin)

2. When the schoolboys find a nest, they are very careful not to disturb it lest the mother bird should be frightened and desert it.

(32) "cannot help+動名詞"
"cannot but+原形不定詞"

(a) I *cannot help admiring* his courage.
(b) I *cannot but admire* his courage.
我對於他的勇氣不勝佩服。

【解 說】

在(a)例中的 "help" 意爲「避免」,可用 "avoid", "resist", "forbear" 等取代。同義的說法還有 "cannot keep (或 refrain, abstain) from -ing", 如 We cannot keep from admiring the scenery. (我們不禁大爲讚賞那種風景。)至於 (b)例的 "cannot but", 是稍具古風的表現法,其中的 "but"=except, 意爲「除了那樣做以外,什麼也不能做」, 最後成爲「不得不」了。比較下面三種說法:

Formal: I cannot but feel sorry for him.
Informal: I can't help feeling sorry for him.
Vulgar: I can't help but feel sorry for him.

把最後一例說成卑語的, 只是英國的說法, 在美國却視爲正常的英文, 在 Webster's New World Dictionary of the American Language 上就舉有 "cannot help but"=cannot fail to; be compelled or obliged to 的解釋。

【類 例】

I cannot help thinking he's wrong. (我不禁認爲他錯了。)

I cannot but feel thankful that it formed such a material part of my education.（我不禁深爲感謝，那竟形成了我教育上重要的一部分。）

I cannot help forming some opinion of a man's character from his dress.（我不得不多少要從一個人穿的衣服來判斷他的性格。）

We cannot but believe in the youth who is always trying to improve himself.（常要努力改進自己的靑年，我不得不信賴。）

I could not but laugh on seeing such a funny sight.（看到這樣滑稽的光景，我不禁笑出來了。）

The little child was so beautiful, kind, and good, that no one who saw her could help loving her.（那個小孩非常美麗，又親切，又善良，所以沒有人見到她不愛她的。）

I cannot help wondering about the child.（關於那個孩子的事，我不禁感到奇怪。）

【習題32】

1. She could not help sympathizing with every little helpless thing; her heart was always touched by a bird or beast that had been hurt.

2. When I consider the greatness that he afterward achieved I cannot but smile as I remember the fashion in which he was discussed at my uncle's table. (Maugham)

(33) "have＋賓語（物）＋過去分詞"

(a) I *had my* watch *mended.*
我找人把我的錶修理好了。

(b) I *had* my watch *broken.*
我把我的錶弄破了。

(c) We *have* our enemy almost *surrounded.*
我們差不多把敵人包圍起來了。

【解　說】

例 (a) 表主語的意志，例 (b) 則與主語的意志完全無關，例 (a) 爲

使動，例 (b) 則爲被動。例 (a) 的主語有意去倩人修錶，而例 (b) 的主語實無意把錶弄破。例 (c) 爲保持那種被動（在例句中爲「被包圍」）的狀態。(a) 句中的 "have"，有時可換用 "get"，以限制其意義。普通受 Passive Form 的動作者爲主語，例如 My watch was stolen.（我的錶被竊。）一語，其中受動作者爲 "watch"，今若欲說「我被竊去一隻錶」，便是：I had my watch stolen. 此時的主語，間接受到動作，故此種體裁，稱爲「間接受動態」(Indirect Passive Form)。如果說 He was handed a short note. 聽來很不自然，故改說 He had a short note handed to him.（有人交給了他一封短信。）凡 Passive（被動）皆無意志，若加上意志便成爲 Causative（使動）之意，例如 I will have (=cause) a new house (to be) built.（我欲使新屋建成。我欲建築一幢新居。）在用作使動時 "have" 要讀重音，用作被動時則不要，如 He *had* his salary raised.（他使薪水提高了。）I had my *hat* blown off.（我的帽子被風吹落了。）

【類　例】

I had my foot severely trodden upon in the bus.（我在公共汽車裏被人重重地踐踏了脚。）

He had his left hand cut off.（他被人砍去了左手。）

She has her head turned. (=She has gone mad.)（她發狂了。）

We shall have our rights trampled under foot.（我們的權利將爲人所蹂躏。）

I will have a new suit made.（我想製一套新裝。）

I will have my photograph taken.（我要去照相。）

No family is too poor to have the table covered with a clean cloth.（沒有一個家庭會窮困到連放在餐桌上的乾淨桌布都沒有的程度。）

He had his right leg pierced by a shot.（他的右腿爲子彈所貫穿。）

Old ladies in the States will have new novels read to them.（美國的老太太喜歡叫人把新出的小說讀給她們聽。）

He has his leg pulled. (=He is befooled.)（他受了人家的愚弄。）

Falling from his bicycle, he had his arm sprained.（他從脚踏車上

跌下來把胳膊跌斷了。)

So I went first to have my wounds dressed. (所以我先去把傷包紮好。)

You must have this fact impressed upon your mind. (你必須把這事實銘記在心上。)

He had a ticket given him. (有人給了他一張票子。)

I had my right leg hurt in the accident. (在車禍中我傷了右腿。)

After paying his bill and buying his railway ticket, he had only fifty cents left. (付清了帳又買了火車票，他只剩下五角錢了。)

Did he have his hair cut yesterday? (他昨天去理過髮了嗎？)

I have my revolver loaded. (我把手鎗裝上子彈了。)

We'd clear away all these cases and have the whole of that wall filled by a heroic fresco of Hector and Andromache. (Huxley) (我們要把這些箱子全部都清理出來，好讓牆壁充滿描寫赫安英雄事跡的壁畫。)

Sadie had her hand clapped to her cheek as though she had toothache. (Mansfield) (沙娣好像牙痛似的，把一隻手敲着她的面頰。)

This error was particularly magnified by the fact that by the time of Yalta we already had Japan beaten. (Reader's Digest) (到雅爾達協定時，我們算是已經把日本打敗了，由這事實看來，那錯誤尤為顯著。)

【習題33】

1. He who wished to read the hearts of this husband and wife who stood at right angles, to have their wounds healed by Law, would have needed to have watched the hundred thousand hours of their wedded life. (Galsworthy)

2. Some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon them.

3. We need to have our liberties taken away from us in order to discover that they are worth dying for. (Gardiner)

4. I had my plans arranged by which I should have the opportunity of making the man who had wronged me understand that his old sin had found him out.

(34) "have＋賓語(人)＋原形不定詞"

(a) I *have* him *mend* my watch.
我請他修理我的錶。

(b) He *had* his mother *die*. (＝His mother died.)
他遭母喪。

【解　說】

這個"have＋賓語(人)＋原形不定詞"(無"to"的不定詞，在此作賓格補語用)的形式，有兩種解釋：凡在主語無意志之下而發生的事，是用的被動的作用，若加上主語的意志進去，就是用的使動的作用了。何時爲被動，何時爲使動，要看前後文才能決定，但有時從助動詞上也可以看得出來，例如

(a) I will have many people come. (將使許多人來)是有意志的。

(b) I shall have many people come. (將有許多人來)是無意志的。

在(a)句中"will"後的"have"，已成爲"make"之意了。這種說法美國人用的頗多。英國人表「倩人爲某事」之意時，則用"get"，但後面須接用有"to"的不定詞，即限於使動時，等於"get＋賓語＋有 to 的不定詞"，如 I get him to mend my watch. (我找他替我修理手錶。) I will get some one to translate the letter. (我要找人把這封信譯出來。) 英國人表「使人爲某事」之意時，則用"make"，如 I will make my servant clean your shoes. (我將叫僕人替你擦皮鞋。) 在美國"get"和"make"都不用，而一律用的"have". 如 We had a fire break out last night. (昨夜附近有火警。) I had him write the letter. (我使他寫那封信。)

至於上舉例句的第二例，也是有有意志與無意志之分的，如 His mother died. (他母親死了。) 是無意志的，如加上有意志的成分進去，當做一個人自己的經驗來說時，就成爲 He had his mother die. (他遭母喪。)

在"have"後接「人」和接「物」的不同，使賓格補語的形式隨之而

異，即接「人」時用原形不定詞，接「物」時用過去分詞，比較如下：

Please *have* the porter *carry* this trunk.

Please *have* the trunk *carried* by the porter.

【類　例】

I don't like to have you go.（我不想你走。）

He likes to have people come.（喜有客來。）

I will have someone come and keep me company.（希望有人來爲我作伴。）

I wouldn't have you do that.（我不想你那樣做。）

I should like to have her meet you.（我希望她能見到你。）

I had them clean the house before your arrival.（使人洒掃以待。）

My wife would have me buy that television set.（我太太只想要我買那架電視機。）

I don't like to have somebody else tell me I ought to do this thing and that.（我不喜歡老是要別人來指揮我做這樣做那樣。）

If you will have me stay, I shall stay.（必欲留我，我就留下。）

What would you have me do?（有何吩咐？）

The students are afraid of having him become principal.（學生生怕他當校長。）

These little animals seem glad to have people visit them.（這些小動物喜歡有人去看它們。）

【習題34】

1. It is his nature to do to others what he would have others do to him.

2. As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller visit us to taste our gooseberry wine. (Goldsmith)

3. I would rather have lost them twice over than have had this happen. (Hardy)

4. I had a cultivated Englishman ask me if it were true Negroes could not walk on the same sidewalks as white Americans.

(The New York Times)

(35) "have＋賓語＋副詞(地點,方向等)"

(a) Let's *have* him *here*.
要他到這裏來吧。

(b) He *had* a tooth *out*.
他拔了一個牙齒。

【解 說】

這種句法中的 "have", 也是使動的意思, 原則上和前面兩項無異, 不過翻譯時須看前後文的關係, 採用適當的字眼, 不一定要把使動譯出來, 如(a)例, 便可不必譯爲「使他來這裏」, 第二句的(b)例, 也不必譯爲「要牙醫爲他拔牙」。如例句所示, 在 "have" 後, 是既可接「人」, 又可接「物」的。

【類 例】

We'll have the big table here. (把大桌子放在這裏吧。)

Let me have Mr. Wong over. (去請王先生來吧。)

I had him there. (在那一點上我把他擊敗了。) 指議論時說的。

He was had up for exceeding the speed limit. (他因開車超速而被起訴。)

【習題36】

1. We shall be having the decorators in next month.

2. He won't stand for it. He'll have you out on Tuesday, so that you may as well make up your mind to it. (Maugham)

(36) "have＋賓語＋現在分詞"

(a) I can't *have* him *doing* that.
我不能讓他那樣做。

(b) I *have* a car *waiting* for me.
我有汽車在等待着。

【解　說】

這個 "have＋賓語＋現在分詞" 的表現法，有兩種含義，如 (a) 例爲「許可」，(b) 例爲「使動」。動詞 "have" 的原義爲「具有」，卽具有某種情形，如 I have a lot of visitors coming. (我有許多客人要來。)

有時不用現在分詞，而改用形容詞，也是類似的用法，例如 I can't have you idle. (我不能讓你這樣懶惰。)

【類　例】

I won't have you going out. (你不要老是跑出去。)

I had it coming. (＝I deserve it.) (這是當然的報應。)

I won't have you smoking at your age. (我不想要你這樣小就抽煙。)

We told him we had relatives coming. (Hedley Gore) (我們告訴了他說我們有些親戚要來。)

【習題36】

1. I see that woman downstairs has a couple of sailors sitting there. I wonder how she's gotten acquainted with them. (Maugham)

2. It is generous of me to have you doing nothing.

3. I will not have you talking indecently before the children! (Sinclair Lewis)

(37) "find oneself"

After half an hour I *found myself* in front of the house.
半小時之後，我就覺得我已經站在那房子的前面了。

【解　說】

英文說的 "find oneself" 有三個意思：① 起居，動定，例如 How do you find yourself this morning? (＝How are you this morning?) (你今早覺得身體好嗎？) ② 自給自足，例如 He works for one hundred dollars a month and finds himself. (他每月有工資一百元足以自給。) ③ 自覺，自知，發現自己的能力，例如 After trying various jobs

he found himself and became a successful reporter. (換了幾個職務之後,他發現了自己的能力,成爲一個成功的記者。)最後一解爲「感覺到自己在某種特定的場所,地位,或狀態中」,引申而爲「注意一看則身在」或簡單地說成「覺得」。這種說法,實含有「意想不到」,「偶然」,「竟至」的意思在內。例如 I find myself in a church. (我發覺走進了一個教堂。) I found myself in his company. (注意一看,他陪伴着我。)

【類 例】

She returned to England to find herself famous. (她回到英國發覺自己竟成名了。)

She found herself a mother at fifteen. (她十五歲就做了母親。)

Moving homeward by a new way, I presently found myself on the side of a little valley, in which lay a farm and an orchard. (Gissing) (從一條新路向着家園走去,我隨即就來到了一個小谷的旁邊,那裏有農場和果木園。)

Otherwise he "found" himself in childish fashion out of the six or seven weekly shillings. (F. Marzials) (不然的話,他就要用小孩子的方式從每週六、七先令中自謀生活。)

In many places the churches are trying to get hold of the neglected strangers and help them to "find themselves" in their unfamiliar surroundings. (James Bryce) (在許多地方教會努力要收容那些無人過問的外來人,幫助他們在不熟悉的環境中發現自己的能力。)

When he awoke, he found himself in jail. (他一醒來,睜開眼睛一看,自己竟在牢獄裏了。)

He found himself at last. (他終於發現了自己的天分。)

【習題37】

1. I awoke one morning and found myself famous. (Lord Byron)

2. The hours moved on, and he found himself staring at his small candle, which struggled more and more faintly with the morning light.

3. In about forty-five seconds I found myself again in the waiting

room with the compassionate secretary, who made me sign more documents. (Conrad)

(38) "find...in"

I *found* a true friend *in* him.
我發現他是一個眞實的朋友。

【解　說】

在這個動詞"find"的後面，除接介詞"in"外，還可以接"that"引導的子句或不定詞的造句。意爲（由經驗而）發現，覺悟，知道，（試過之後而）認明，認定，驗出。例如 I find that the work pays.（我始知此事合算。）We found that the report was false. (=We found it to be false.)（問明而後知爲虛報。）I awoke to find it a dream.（醒來始知爲夢。）在"in"前面的動詞，並不限於"find"，他如"see"，"have"，"behold"，"lose"等都可以用。

【類　例】

I found a friend in a supposed enemy.（我在原來以爲是敵人的當中得到了一個朋友。）

Columbus found a warm supporter in Queen Isabella.（哥倫布獲得依薩伯拉女王的熱心贊助。）

I found an enthusiastic coadjutor in the person of a young fellow named Wong Ming.（我獲得一個名叫王明的熱心的青年助手。）

Dostoievski finds brothers in thieves and murderers.（杜斯脫耶佛斯基把小偷和殺人犯視爲兄弟。）

We found victory in defeat.（我們認定失敗就是勝利。）

We lost a great scholar in Dr Hu Shih.（胡適的死使我們失去了一個偉大的學者。）

【習題38】

1. Many on becoming rich have found in wealth not an escape from evil, but a new and worse form of it.

2. It was easy to see in Gladstone the perfect model of the upright—the man whose life had been devoted to the application of high principles to affairs of State.

(39) "do" 的兩種用法

(a) You know more than I *do*.
你比我知道的多。

(b) I *do* want to know the truth.
我眞想要知道眞相。

【解 說】

除疑問句和否定句以外所用的 "do", 有兩種用法: 一爲代替已說過的動詞以避免重複, 這叫做代動詞 (pro-verb), 如 (a) 例中的便是以 "do" 代替 "know" 的。在英文中除助動詞及 "be" 動詞外, 其餘所有的動詞, 都可以用 "do" 來代替。第二種用法是加強動詞意味的, 這是助動詞, 如 (b) 例所示, 是加強動詞 "want" 的, 普通單說 I want to know the truth. 意思也是一樣。加強語氣時可譯作「眞」,「眞正」,「實在」等。

【類 例】

Do you drink? Yes, I do. (你喝酒嗎? 我喝。)

Don't you drink? Nor (或 Neither) do I. (你不喝酒嗎? 我也不喝。)

You stammer sometimes; so do I. (你有時口吃, 我也是一樣。)

You dislike dogs as I do cats. (好像我不喜歡貓一樣, 你不喜歡狗。)

No father could have loved his children better than he did us. (沒有別個父親有我們的父親這樣愛他的孩子的。)

I do believe you. (我確實相信你說的話。)

I do wish you had seen him. (我眞希望你見到了他。)

I did see him. (我確曾見到了他。)

He does work hard, but he often fails. (他確是很用功, 但老是考不上。)

I did go, but failed to see him. (我確是去了, 但沒有見到他。)

Do stay here. (務請留此。)

Do be patient! (務請忍耐。)

Don't be anxious! (勿憂。)

Rarely did she laugh. (她難得笑。) 這是倒裝法，仍爲加強語氣的。

He is generally very reserved, but if he does talk, he always speaks to the purpose. (夫人不言，言必有中。)

The area could support a far larger population than it does at present. (那地方可以維持比現在大得多的人口。)

He had bought the home furnished sometime previously from a Lord somebody who needed cash, as so many do these days. (今天有非常多的人也是這樣，因爲需要現金就把房子賣掉，不久以前他從一個叫什麽的勳爵那裏買了這幢有傢俱的房子。)

Magnesium lives well with other metals-and, as in any good marriage, each partner functions better with the other than either doe alone. (鎂跟其他的金屬結合得很好，所以好像很相合的婚姻一樣，各金屬單獨的時候不如與其他結合時更能發生作用。)

【習題39】

1. I have somewhere seen it observed that we should make the same use of a book that the bee does of a flower; she steals sweets from it, but does not injure it.

2. Suppose you think of an important idea. Unless you can write it down, your idea will probably die when you do. Even if you do write it down, it perishes as soon as the mice eat the paper, which they often do and do quickly.

(40) "depend on" 的兩種用法

(a) He *depends on* his pen for his living.
他靠文筆爲生。

(b) Success *depends on* perseverance.
成功恃乎毅力。

【解　說】

英文的 "depend on" 或 "depend upon", 由主語不同而發生意義上的差異。如 (a)例以「人」爲主語時, 便有「依靠」,「信賴」的意思, 如 (b) 例以「物」爲主語時, 則意爲「以…爲據」,「憑…而定」,「由…爲轉移」,「恃乎」。關於 "depend" 一字, 另外還有兩個慣用句, 即 ① depend upon it. = You may be certain; I assure you. (你可以相信; 請你確信; 我可擔保。) 例如: The school boy is very idle and heedless now; but depent upon it, he will some day regret his idleness. (那學童現很懶惰又不用心, 不過我可擔保將來總有一天他會後悔的。) ② That depends (on circumstances). (視情形而定; 視情形如何, 難以逆料)

【類　例】

He is not to be depended upon. (他不可靠。)

Chinese varsity men mostly depend on their parents for support, but American college boys are independent of them. (中國大學生仰給父母; 美國大學生自己工讀。)

We depend on the newspaper for daily news. (我們靠報紙得知每日新聞。)

I shall have to depend on you to do it. (我只得仰仗足下來做。)

He no longer depends on his father. (他早已不靠父親了。)

I cannot depend on your promise unless you give me the necessary security. (除非你提出必要的保證, 否則, 我是不能信賴你的諾言的。)

His departure depends on the weather. (他何時動身要憑天氣而定。)

The effect depends on the cause. (結果由於原因。有因始有果。)

Everything depends on the amount of money given. (凡事皆憑金錢的多少而定。凡事以財力大小而定。)

The sale depends on the quality. (銷路決於品質。以貨色的優劣而決定銷路的大小。)

Victory does not always depend on numbers. (精兵不在多。)

【習題40】

1. A man must so train his habit as to rely upon his own powers

and depend upon his own courage in moment of pressing necessity.

2. Few realize how much the happiness of life and the formation of character depend on a wise selection of books we read.

3. I am deeply convinced that our peace of mind and the joy we get out of living depend not on where we are, or what we have, or who we are, but solely upon our mental attitude. Outward conditions have very little to do with it. (D. Carnegie)

(41) "know...from"

He does not *know* an adjective *from* an adverb.
他連形容詞和副詞都分不清楚。

【解　說】

這個"know...from"是爲表示辨別而用的，有時也可以說"tell...from"，它的意思是「能加辨別」，「能够分辨」，如 to know right from wrong. 爲「辨是非」，to know a friend from an enemy 是「分敵友」等等。

【類　例】

I do not know the one from the other. (我未能辨別二者之差異。)

I cannot tell the one from the other. (不能區別彼此。)

Is it possible to tell a good book from a bad one? (要判別一本書的好壞是可能的嗎？)

They do not know B from a bull's foot–B from a broomstick–B from a battledoor (*or* battledore)–chalk from cheese. (他們一無所知。)

How do you know an Englishman from an American?–By the way he speaks English. (英國人和美國人的區別，聽他們說英語就可知道。)

I can tell an Italian from a Frenchman. (我能辨別意大利人和法國人。)

I can tell a crocodile from an alligator (the difference between them). (我能分別普通的鱷魚和美洲產的[illegible]魚。)

【習題41】

1. It is hard to know flatterers from friends, for as a wolf resembles a dog, so a flatterer, a friend.

2. Much as sheep look alike, there is a difference between them, and John knows one from another. (Much as...alike=Though sheep look much alike)

(42) "had better+原形不定詞"
"would rather+原形不定詞"

(a) You *had better go* at once.
你最好馬上去。

(b) I *would rather go* at once.
我寧肯馬上去。

【解 說】

照字面看來, "had", "would" 雖則是過去形, 但在此等慣用句中, 決無過去的意思, 而只是一種假設語氣的說法罷了。(a) 例含有勸告的意思, 可譯爲「最好是」, (b) 例含有選擇的意思, 可譯爲「寧肯」, 二者不可混同。這個 "had better" 的說法, 有時可說成 "had best", 那就更接近中文的說法了, 不過不大通用, 例如 I'd best go and settle the score. (Thackeray) (我最好去把債務弄清楚)。I had best start for home. (我最好就動身回家去)。這個 "had better" 有時還可以用過去形, 如 You had better do it. 的過去形便是 You had better have done it. (你最好那樣做了就好了)。

有人把 "had better" 及 "would rather" 兩種說法混爲一談, 而形成 "would better" 及 "had rather" 的說法, 這是不妥的, 最好避免不用。例如 I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of lord than dwell in the tents of wickedness. (我與其住在罪孽的天幕中, 寧肯做神殿的司閽)。

我們須注意 "had better" 是用於勸解或間接命令的, 所以有時可

能含有 "have a duty to" 或 "have an obligation to" 的意思，自然是帶有一種命令的口氣，說 You had better go away. 含義爲 You should do what you are told or else you will suffer rather serious consequences.（你應該照吩咐去做，不然的話，就要遭受嚴重的後果）。因此對長輩是不宜用 "had better" 的，對不大熟悉的人須存幾分客氣也不宜用，與其說 You'd better take a bus. 不如說 I suggest you take a bus. 與其說 You had better wear a blue necktie with that suit. 不如說 It might be better to wear a blue necktie with that suit. 或 It would be better for you to wear....

【類　例】

When he proposed to fly across the Atlantic, I said, "You had better not try!" (Kirkpatrick)（當他打算要飛越大西洋時，我勸說，「你最好不要去嘗試。」）

We had better not remain here any longer.（我們最好不要在此久留。）

I would rather die than live in dishonour. =I would sooner die than live in dishonour. =I would (just) as soon die as live in dishonour.（與其屈辱而生，寧願光榮而死。）

I would rather be a poor man in a garret with plenty of books than a king who did not love reading.（我與其做一個不愛讀書的國王，寧肯做一個住在屋頂樓上而擁有許多書的窮人。）

He said he would rather have lost both his legs than have seen dishonour brought upon the English nation.（他說與其見到英國民族蒙受恥辱 寧肯自己失去雙腿。）

You had better not work after you have tired yourself.（疲勞之後最好不要用功。）

You had better go back—the risk is great. (Thomas Hardy)（你最好回去，危險太大。）

I really don't think I'd better. (J.D. Salinger)（我想我最好不要去。）

You had better make hotel reservations before you leave here.（你離開此地以前，最好先把旅館的房間定好。）

【習題42】

1. If you can neither receive nor bestow benefit, you had better leave that company at once.

2. I do not flatter you, young people, when I say I would rather talk to you than to the grown-up people.

(43) "make...of"

I will *make* a scientist *of* my son.

我要把兒子做成一個科學家。

【解　說】

英文 "make...of" 的形式，原意為「以之爲材料而做成」，「使之成爲」。這個 "of" 有 "from" 之意，不改變原料本質的用 "of"，如 The desk is made of wood. (桌子是木頭做的)，桌子做成之後還看得出木頭的本質。改變原料本質的用 "from"，如 Paper is made from rags. (紙是破布做的)，做成了紙之後，就看不見破布的影子了。同樣的情形，葡萄可以造酒，但酒中看不見葡萄，我們說 We make grapes into wine. 或者說 Wine is made from grapes. 又如 Aspirin is made from coaltar.

英文用介詞 "from", "of", "out of" 表示原料，用 "into" 表示製成品。造句的方式爲 to make material into object 或 to make object from (或 of 或 out of) material. 這個 "out of" 中的 "out" 一字，常可略去不用，尤其是緊接在 "made" 一字後時爲然，如 Many things are made (out) of paper. 成語有 to make a mountain of a molehill (小題大做；言過其實)；to make ducks and drakes of one's money (揮霍無度；濫費金錢)；to make fun of a person (開玩笑，戲弄)。

【類　例】

She often makes a hero of her husband. (她常把她丈夫當作英雄，推崇備至。)

Don't make a fool of him. (不要愚弄他。)

He made an ass (a fool, a beast) of himself. (他做着愚相。)

I don't want to make a cat's paw of him. (我不想拿他當傀儡。)

She has made a conquest of a man. (她使他成爲她在愛情上的被征服者。)

A well-to-do farmer in China cannot make up his mind to make a farmer of his son, unless he deems his son incapable of undertaking any other profession. (一個中國富裕的農夫不能够决心把他的兒子做成農夫，除非他認爲他兒子不能够幹其他的職業。)

Nothing more makes a coward of a man than to be in the wrong. (沒有別的事情比做錯事更能使人膽怯的。)

A sea life may be the very thing required to make a strong man of him. (海上生活也許是使他成爲一個強壯的人所必要的事。)

【習題43】

1. The artist can within certain limits make what he likes of his life. In other callings, in medicine for instance or the law, you are free to choose whether you will adopt them or not, but having chosen, you are free no longer. (Maugham)

2. Men who have done great things, made stepping stones of their failure.

(44) "make one's way"

He'll have no difficulty in ***making his way*** in the world.
他要出人頭地是沒有什麼困難的。

【解　說】

英文的"make one's way"有兩個意思：①進行(proceed)，例如 make one's way on foot (步行前進)，make one's way home (回家)。It rapidly made its way into universal favour. (那個很快地就獲得了世人的愛好。) ②在事業上的進展(make progress in one's career)，如 He has yet his way to make in the world. (他還沒有成就。) 綜合

英漢大辭典上解釋較詳：to make one's way (through difficulties—homeward—in life—in one's profession) (排除困難而)進,(向家)行,(生涯)昌盛,(職業)成就。由此看來,我們可以知道,一個人在社會上的成功,並不是輕易得來的,而是由於「努力上進」,「力爭上游」才獲致的。上面說的 through difficulties 是歷盡艱苦才得到的,正所謂「吃得苦中苦,方爲人上人」。

由這個成語而產生出許多類似的表現法,用其他種種動詞和"way" (進路)組合起來,差不多都有這種排除萬難而得以前進的意思,如 The chick breaks its way out into the world. (鷄雛啄破蛋殼出來進入世間。) cleave one's way through many difficulties to prosperity (排除萬難,打開出路,以臻繁榮。) conquer one's way to the higher happiness (克服擋在路上的苦難,而達到更大的幸福。) corkscrew one's way through a crowd (在羣衆的挾縫中走。)又如 cut one's way 意爲排除障礙始得前進,即所謂篳路藍縷,例如 Great men are those who cut their way to success through difficulties. (偉人都是歷盡艱苦才達到成功的。) 他如 feel one's way up the stairs (摸上樓梯。) fight one's way out of the seething swaying mob (從沸騰浮動着的羣衆中打出一條出路來。) fight one's way in life (in the world). (人生奮鬪。) A young man must find his own way in the world without props and safeguards. (年輕人必須在沒有支持和保護之下自己來打天下。) I had some difficulty in finding my way back. (我很費了勁才找到路回家。) He forced his way from a humble origin to an exalted position. (他從微賤中奮鬪而達到高位。) 又可說 forge one's own way to success (打開成功之路。) labor one's way with great difficulty (艱苦奮鬪。)' With no further formal education, he had worked his way to a major position. (他沒有受過更多的正式教育,也搞到一個重要的位置了。) He worked his way through college as a waiter. (他半工半讀,一面當侍者,一面讀完大學。)

【類 例】

The young man will make his way, for he is industrious and economical. (那青年旣勤快又節儉是會成功的。)

He (Disraeli) is determined to make his way. (Edinburgh Review) (他是決心要成功的。)

Snails are making their way as an article of food. (蝸牛漸漸變成食品了。)

The word is a provincialism, but has made its way into standard speech. (這字原爲方言,次第變成標準語了。)

The carp always makes its way up a waterfall. (鯉魚跳龍門。)

Be active! That's the way to make your way (up) in the world. (放活躍些!那就是你出人頭地的辦法。)

【習題44】

1. So long as you are not a useful, faithful, and truthful man, you can scarcely hope to make your way in the world.

2. He has made his way to presidency step by step.

3. There is scarcely a great truth but has had to fight its way to public recognition in the face of opposition.

(45) "rob...of"

He *robbed* me *of* my watch.

他搶奪了我的錶。

【解, 說】

"他動詞+賓語(人)+of+賓語(物)"的形式,是英文的特殊語法,和中文大不相同的。英文凡具有「奪取」意義的動詞,就要用這種表現法。被奪取的目標分明是「物」,英文偏要說「人」,而在被奪取的「物」之前,加上一個 "of" 的介詞,把它造成一個片語,接在「人」的後面。這個 "of" 的意思是表「分離」的。

英文在 rob, deprive, deliver, divest, break, relieve, clear, inform,

bereave, cure, strip, rid 等有奪取，除去，減輕，通知等意的動詞上，都可以採用這一種表現法。動詞 steal (竊) 雖與 rob (盜) 相類，但用法完全不同，和它同用的介詞不是 "of" 而是 "from"，即 "steal...from"，如 A thief stole some cigarettes from that shop. (有賊從那店裏偷去一些香煙。) 如果是具有「供給」之意的動詞，就要用 "with" 來代替 "of"，如說 supply him with money (供給他錢)，fill the glass with water (倒水入杯)，furnish one with information (給他消息)，favour one with an interview (賜予接見)，trust one with a secret. (告以秘密) 等。

【類 例】

He does not care whom he deprives of enjoyment, so that he can obtain it. (他只求自己獲得享受，不管是從誰奪取得來。)

I don't want to rob him of his inalienable rights. (我不想奪取他做人固有的權利。) 注：Life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness have been called the inalienable rights of man. (生命，自由與追求幸福，被稱爲人類不可剝奪的權利。)

He cleared the sea of those robbers. (他肅清了海盜。)

I have learned enough to cure me of my old fancies. (Stevenson) (我學到足以診好我從前好幻想的毛病。)

I shall never be able entirely to divest myself of this feeling. (我將永遠無法完全放棄這些感覺的。)

He could not rid himself of the painful memories. (他忘不了過去那種痛苦的回憶。)

Your coming relieves me of the bother of writing a long letter. (你來了省得我去麻煩寫一封長信。)

He was determined to break himself of the bad habit of lying in bed late of a morning. (他決心革除睡早覺的惡習。)

Thieves stripped the house of everything valuable. (賊偷去了家中一切貴重的東西。)

Death bereft (or bereaved) him of his son. (他有失明之痛。)

Four years of war drained the country of men and resources. (四年的戰爭使國家耗盡壯丁和資源。)

【習題45】

1. He informed me of the news so that I got prepared in time.

2. A foolish notion that it is more dignified to be seen in a carriage than on horseback, had deprived all French noblemen of the use of the saddle.

3. It was fortunate for me that I suddenly achieved popularity as a dramatist and so was relieved of the necessity of writing a novel once a year to earn my living. (Maugham)

(46) "seize...by the..."

He *seized* me *by the* arm.

他抓了我的胳膊。

【解 說】

這是純粹的英文表現法，和中文不同，其形式爲"他動詞＋賓語＋介詞＋the＋名詞"。中國話一定用屬格，而英文則先把整個的對象說出來，然後再說到那對象身體的局部。這是大處着眼，小處着手的辦法。身體的局部接受動作時，不用代名詞的屬格"one's"，而採用"介詞＋the＋名詞"的形式。這一類的動詞有 seize, catch, take, strike, drag, pat, hit, hold, pull, stare, look 等，而介詞則有 by, on, in, over, across, with 等。「他抓了我的胳膊」這句話，依照中文的說法，譯成 He seized my arm. 也不爲錯，不過英語的氣味不濃，和說 He seized me by the arm. 二者間的 nuance (細微差異)，是很難言傳，而只可意會的。但是如「不要讓別人牽着你的鼻子走」一句話，則必須譯成 Don't let them lead you by the nose. 若說 Don't let them lead your nose. 就不成話了。

【類 例】

He kissed his horse on the forehead. (他在額上吻了他的馬一下。)

He struck me on the head. (他打了我的頭。)

I caught him by the right hand. (我握住他的右手。)

He pulled me by the sleeve. (他拉住我的衣袖。)

I gave him a blow on the head. (當頭一棒。)

He looked me in the face. (他凝視着我。)

He wounded me in the arm. (我扭我的胳膊。)

He slapped me on the shoulder. (他拍我的肩。)

Poverty stared him in the face. (赤貧迫在眼前。)

He presumed in the gentlest manner to take her by her hand (C, Lamb) (他敢於用最溫柔的態度執了她的手。) 注: 古文可以說 by her hand. 但現代英文則必須說 by the hand.

【習題46】

1. Never hold anybody by the hand in order to be heard out.

2. If that woman crosses my threshold, I shall strike her across the face.

3. The doctor angrily seized him by the collar, and asked him what he meant by such bad behaviour.

(47) "see if..."
"see that..."

(a) He came out to *see if* it had begun to rain.
他出來看是不是已經下雨了。

(b) He came out to *see that* the boy did not get hurt.
他出來注意防止小孩受傷。

【解 說】

(a)例的 "see if" 中的 "if", 是作 "whether" 解的, 意爲「是不是」。在 "see" 後不一定要接 "if", 還可接用其他各種名樣的疑問詞。至於(b)例的 "see that" 中的 "see", 則有 "take care" 之意。這個 "see that", 實爲 "see to it that" 的省略說法。 "see to it"=look well to it; at-

tend: consider; take care (加意及之，留神，注意，當心)。這種句中的"that"有時也可省掉不說。基本句型為"see that something is done"(當心照料，監督)轉為「負責擔任；保證」之意。

【類　例】

See if he can do it. (看看他是不是能做這個。)

Go and see if there is anything to eat. (去看看有什麼吃的東西沒有。)

Go and see what is the matter. (去看看發生了什麼事。)

Let's see how the land lies. (讓我們先來窺探一下形勢。)

See how the wind blows. (觀看形勢；默察大勢；觀望。)

I will see that they do it. (我當負責要他們做。)

I will see that he pays you. (或 see that you are paid. 或 see you paid) (我必令他還錢給你；我保證他一定還你。)

See to it that this does not occur again. (保證不再發生同樣的事。)

See to it that you do not offend him. (當心不要冒犯他。)

I will see to it that everything is ready for your departure. (我會注意準備好一切讓你起程。)

See to it that the boys learn the lesson well. (請留意使學生熟習功課。)

See to it that the work is done before dark. (你注意天黑前要做好。)

I will see (that) you avenged. (必定使你可以報仇。)

I will see (that) you hanged first. (那裏有人肯做這樣的事？)

【習題47】

1. Many men do not allow their principles to take root, but pull them up every now and then, as children do flowers they have planted, to see if they are growing.

2. If a captain loves his ship truly, he must not neglect to attend to the smallest defect in her. He must report it and see that it is made good.

3. "I've been here when there's been cholera and I haven't

turned a hair. The great thing is not to eat anything uncooked, no raw fruit or salads, or anything like that, and see that your drinking water is boiled." (Maugham)

(48) "take...for granted"

(a) We *took* it *for granted* that you knew the whole matter.
我們認爲那件事情你當然是完全知道的。

(b) She began to *take* her husband *for granted* until he threatened to leave her.
她開始有點瞧不起她丈夫的樣子，直到她丈夫聲稱要離家出走，她才改變態度。

【解 說】

英文成語 "take...for granted" 的形式，等於 "assume as true"，可譯作「認爲當然」，「假定是實」，即並無明確的證據，也信以爲眞的意思。普通的用例爲 "take it for granted"，其中的 "it" 爲形式上的賓語，代表後面的 "that-Clause"；如果不用 "it" 而用名詞時，則 "that-Clause" 可以不要。這個 "granted"，分明是一個分詞，在此權充介詞 "for" 的賓語，如果把它看做前面省去了 "being" 一字也就好解釋了。在 "take" 後面的賓語，一向都只限於 "it" 或事物的名詞，但新近美國韋氏大辭典上，却增加了一個新的用法，即在 "take" 後面接用人的賓語，如 (b) 例所示，便是那辭典上舉出的例句。對這個新義的解釋，該辭典作 "to pay inadequate attention to or value too lightly (as a possession, right or privilege)"，意即對地位、權利、或特權，不加重視，或不十分注意，自然是帶有瞧不起的神氣。

【類 例】

I take it for granted that you will be interested in it, too. (我認爲你當然對此也會感到興趣的。)

I just took it for granted that we will close on May Day. (我認爲勞動節商店當然是關門的。)

I took it for granted that he would come. (我以爲他一定會來的。)

He takes nothing for granted. (他對任何事物都不視爲當然。)

I took his qualifications for granted. (我姑認爲他的資歷是眞實可靠的。)

They themselves take their love for granted, and do not care what strangers may think about it. (他們本人認爲他們的相愛是理所當然的，別人怎樣想法，他們毫不介意。)

I took for granted the innumerable little jobs she did for me. (Siegfried Sassoon) (我把她爲我做的那些無數的小事視爲當然。)

Physical and intellectual miracles we take for granted. (M.B. Johnstone) (我們把心身的奇跡認爲是當然的。)

Cf. From your manner I am to take it as true. (Hardy) (從你的態度看來，我得把那個看做眞的了。)

【習題48】

1. Of the rural life of England he knew nothing; and he took it for granted that everybody who lived in the country was either stupid or miserable.

2. I take the goodness of the good for granted and I am amused when I discover their defects or their vices; I am touched when I see the goodness of the wicked and I am willing enough to shrug a tolerant shoulder at their wickedness. (Maugham)

3. I went there as a kid and grew up with the place. They took me for granted. (Elizabeth Wilson)

(49) "used to＋原形不定詞"
"be used to＋動名詞"

(a) He *used to do* such a thing.
他以前常做這樣的事。

(b) He *is used to doing* such a thing.
他慣於做這樣的事。

【解說】

在 (a) 例中說的 "used to do", 表示過去的習慣, 即「以前常那樣做」, 這表示現在已不那樣做了。在 (b) 例中的 "be used to doing" = be accustomed to doing, 是表示現在的慣常行為, 其中的 "be", 有時可說成 "get", 比方我們新到一個地方, 對於當地的情形陌生, 人們就會說: You will soon get used to it. (過些時你就會慣的。) 又「他慣於登山。」就說 He is used to mountain-climbing. 這個 "be used to" 和前面的 "used to", 含義大不相同, 試比較下面兩句:

(a) I am used to sitting up late at night.

(b) I used to sit up late at night.

(a)句意為「我慣於遲睡。」(b)句意為「我以前總是睡得很遲的。」

英文還有一個 "would" 字, 也和 "used to" 一樣, 是表過去習慣的, 但二者在用法上略有不同。表示不規則的習慣時用 "would", 表示有規則的習慣則用 "used to"。用 "would" 時多伴有 "always", "often", "frequently", "sometimes", "for hours" 等副詞。比較下面四個句子, 不難有所分辨。

(a) He climbs a mountain every Sunday.
(每個禮拜天他都要去爬山。)

(b) He will often climb a mountain of a Sunday.
(他常要在禮拜天去爬山。)

(c) He used to climb a mountain on a Sunday.
(他以前常要在禮拜天去爬山。)

(d) He would often climb a mountain when young.
(他年輕時常去爬山。)

這種 "would" 具有一種「回想的心情」, 而 "used to" 只是表示「過去與現在的對比」而已。再看下例:

He would often sit for hours, book in hand. (他從前常要手裏拿一本書, 一坐就是好幾個鐘頭。)

Sometimes the boys would play a trick on their teacher. (有時孩子們常要對老師開個玩笑。)

這都是回想着過去而說的，表示以前常要那樣做，指過去的反復的動作或習慣。至於 "used to"，就是拿現在和過去比較，例如：

He used to play tennis before his marriage.

(他在結婚以前常打網球。)現在不打了。

一般是客觀地說過去的事用 "used to"，帶有意志時則用 "would"。用 "would" 比 "used to" 略帶文氣。第三人稱用 "will" 也可表習慣的行爲，如 He will often get up at midnight to jot down something in his notebook.（他常半夜起來在筆記本上記下一些事情）。如用 "would" 則對所有的人稱都可以。有時 "would" 和 "used to" 是可以混同的，如

When I was a boy, I would(或 used to) get up early.

(我小時候，總是起身很早的。)

英文的 "used to" 常和表現狀態的動詞同用，如：

There used to *be* a church here.

(以前這裏有一個教堂。)

When I was a boy, I used to *like* chocolate. (but I don't like it any more). (在小孩子的時候，我愛吃巧格力糖。) 意即現在不再愛吃了。這個用法是不可以換用 "would" 的，因爲說 When I was a boy, I would like chocolate 是不通的。I would like chocolate, 意爲「我想吃巧格力糖。」如果不想強調現在與過去的對照，就用單純的過去動詞也同樣可以達意，如 There *was* a church here. He *played* tennis before his marriage. 至於現在的情形如何，就不在話下了。

【類　例】

People used to think that the sun went round the earth. (從前的人以爲太陽是圍繞着地球轉動的。)現在的人就不這樣想了。

He usedn't to answer. (他總是不回答。)

I used to go fishing on Sundays when I lived in Taipei. (我住在臺北時禮拜天常去釣魚。)

I am used to the military life now. (我現在已慣於軍隊生活了。)

I'm sure it's because she is not used to the new typewriter yet.

(那一定是因爲她未用慣這架新的打字機。)

I got [became] used gradually to the vegetarian diet. (我逐漸習慣於素食了。)

The country inn was as pleasant as it used to be in the old times. (那間鄉下客棧還是和從前一樣舒服。)

That is how automobiles used to be made. (那就是汽車以前的製造法。)

The book used to belong to you? (Gissing) (這本書是你的嗎?)

I used to remonstrate with Laura like a fussy old uncle but she'd only laugh. (Nigel Sligh) (我以前常要像一個討厭的叔叔似的,老是給羅娜勸告,而她只是笑笑而已。)

There are some kinds of butterflies that used to be quite common, and now they are quite rare; I expect in a few years there will be none left at all. (Sweet) (某些種類的蝴蝶,以前很普通,現在却稀少了;我想再過幾年就恐怕完全沒有了。)現在、過去、未來的比較。

Sometimes he used to tell us of his expeditions through the woods and fields round his home, and how he explored the solitary brooks and ponds; and then he would describe the curious animals and birds he saw. (Sweet) (以前他時時對我說關於他在他家周圍的森林和原野中探險的事,以及他怎樣找到一些寂靜的溪流和池塘的情形,然後他老要描述他所見到的珍禽異獸。)

"I often used to have a bit of fun with her, in the hold (=old) times!" Mr. Bailey spoke as if he had already had a leg and three-quarters in the grave, and this had happened twenty or thirty years ago. (Dickens) (「在很久很久以前,我常要跟她開開玩笑」,倍雷先生說,儼然他已經有一隻脚和四分之三進入坟墓了似的,而這已經是二、三十年前的事了。)

【習題49】

1. "I care nothing for the world," he declared, "for the future, for what people will say, for any kind of established position, or even for literary fame, which in my early days i used to stay awake so many nights dreaming about." (Lynd)

2. Of course he suggested seeing her home, which she wouldn't hear of at first—she said there was really no need, she was used to the journey alone and her parents' house was only a few minutes' walk from the station. (Hilton)

3. The air of our island was so genial and balmy that we could have slept quite well without any shelter; but we were so little used to sleeping in the open air, that we did not quite relish the idea of lying down without any covering over us. (R.M. Ballantyne)

(50) "be＋自動詞的過去分詞"

Spring *is come*.
春滿人間。

【解　說】

在動詞 "be" 之後接用自動詞的過去分詞，不可看做被動語態，而應視爲一種完成式才對，因爲那是指某自動詞的動作在完成後的狀態。我們現在所說的完成式（現在）只有 "have done" 一個形式，但在 OE（古英文）的時代是 "have＋賓語＋過去分詞"，例如現在說 I have caught the fish. 古代說 I have the fish caught. 和現代表示使動或被動的形式一樣（如被動說的 We have our enemy almost surrounded. 及 Did he have his hair cut yesterday? 及使動說的 I had my watch mended. 等）但用於 "have＋賓語＋過去分詞"這個形式的動詞主要是他動詞，而自動詞，尤其是表運動、變化、終止等的自動詞，如 "come"，"go"，"arrive"，"fall"，"arise"，"become"，"grow"，"change"，"die"，等字，就採用 "be＋過去分詞" 的形式，和用 "have" 的形式，在意義上毫無分別。但這種自動詞的 "be＋過去分詞" 的形式，經由 Middle English（中世英語）到 Modern English（現代英語）而漸漸失勢，爲 "have" 的形式所侵蝕，所以我們今日說到 Perfect Tense（完成時態）就只知 "have done" 一個形式了。

但古代自動詞的用法並沒有絕跡，現在表示運動和變化的少數自

動詞如 "come", "go", "arrive", "depart", "fall", "rise", "set", "grow" 等, 仍保留 "be+過去分詞" 的形式, 在用法上與 "have" 的形式分庭抗禮, 以 "have" 表完成的動作 (action), "be" 表完成的狀態 (state), 例如:

He has gone. (他已經走了。) 重點指動作的完成。

He is gone. (他已不在此了。) 重點指動作的結果(現狀)。

自動詞的過去分詞用於動詞 "be" 後時, 是表示那個自動詞的動作完成了的狀態, 所以 He is gone.=He is no longer here. 說他已不在此, 正是那「去」的動作完成後的狀態。Spring is come. 其「來」的動作完成後的狀態正是鶯飛草長, 雜花生樹的春滿人間的情形。 The leaves are fallen. 是落葉滿地的一片秋天的景象。 The weeds are grown. 是雜草叢生的廢園的樣子。這些用在 "be" 後自動詞的過去分詞, 最好把它當作形容詞看待, 以免發生被動的錯誤觀念, 而事實上許多過去分詞的自動詞辭典上也標明是形容詞, 如 "agreed" 便是其中的一個字, 例: We were agreed on that point. (我們在那一點上意見一致。) I am agreed to accept the offer. (我同意接受那個提議。) 如果用在名詞前面, 更是不含被動意味的形容詞了, 在此情形如係他動詞則有被動意味。比較: a faded flower (已經謝了的花), 是自動詞過去分詞變來的形容詞, 不含被動意味, 只表「已經」之意。 a broken promise (被破壞了的諾言), 是他動詞過去分詞變來的形容詞, 故含有被動意味在內。

【類 例】

We are prepared for the worst. (準備最壞的情形來臨。)

He was married. (他結婚了。)

The train was stopped. (火車停了。)

The day for payment is come. (發薪的日子來了。)

All hope is gone. (一切的希望都完了。)

I was determined to go. (我決心去。)

The sun is risen. (=The sun has risen and is now in the sky.)

(太陽出來了。)太陽已經升起，現在在天上看見太陽。

The sun is set. (太陽落山了。)

My money is gone. (我的錢都完了。)

She found that her strength was gone. (她發覺她的氣力都沒有了。)

He is dressed elegantly. (他衣著華麗。)

Here's Mr. Land come all the way from Yorkshire. (這是從約克縣遠道而來的藍先生。)在"come"前省略了"who is"二字。

Arrived at the spot, the party lost no time in getting to work. (一到現場，那一行人馬上開始工作。) 句首略去"being"一字。

【習題50】

1. All the guests are arrived and we'll have dinner served right now.

2. We are gathered here this morning to discuss without any prejudice the question of the day.

3. I'm almost finished with my work, but there are a few odds and ends left to be done.

(51) "否定＋fail＋不定詞"

He *cannot fail to rise* early.

他一定要很早起身。

【解　說】

英文的"cannot fail to do"和 cannot but do"同義，可譯作「一定」,「必須」,「不得不」等。這個表現法的基本字"fail"，是由自動的"fail in an attempt"(失敗，未成)變成他動的"fail to do something"(疏失，忘匱，不濟，不能，難能)，其反對字的"succeed"則只能作自動，不能作他動，即只能說"succeed in doing"，不能說"succeed to do"。以"fail"爲句中主動詞後接不定詞時，意即"cannot do"。至於在"fail to do"之意上再加否定時，即成"not fail to do"＝be sure to do (certainly)。

【類　例】

I shall not fail to (=certainly) do so. (我必照辦。)

He never fails to (=is sure to) accomplish his purpose. (必達目的。)

Never fail to (=be sure to) come to me. (務必相助。)

Don't fail to let me know. (務請相告。)

You will never fail to be moved by the beauty of the sight. (你一定會被那美麗的景象所感動的。)

I cannot fail to save enough money to buy a new watch. (我一定要儲蓄足够的錢，好買一隻新錶。)

【習題51】

1. Nobody can fail to see that they have reached a crisis in their national development.

2. If we love our fellow creatures, as we ought to do, we cannot fail to be courteous to them.

(52) "動詞+原形不定詞"

Go bring me my hat.

去把我的帽子拿來。

【解　說】

依照英文的習慣，兩個動詞不能連用，必得用"and"連接起來，或是把第二個動詞改爲不定詞，卽是說"go and bring"或"go to bring"兩種形式。但我們現在採用的例句，旣不用"and"也不用不定詞，把兩個動詞連用在一起，似乎是不合慣用語法，其實這只是"go to bring"的省略，把後接的不定詞的"to"略去，使它成爲原形不定詞(bare infinitive 或稱 zero infinitive)。在表運動的動詞如"come"，"go"之類時，常要將其後的不定詞的"to"略去。現在的人以爲這是美國人的用法，其實在中世英文時代老早就有了，不過到1890年以後，英國就不用了，僅在方言中還存在罷了。Jespersen 說，"This is pretty frequent in

recent American books."（這在美國書中是很常見的。）會話中固不待言，文學作品中亦頻頻出現。其實這也不是美國人復古，而是十九世紀愛爾蘭的大批移民到來以後，受到愛爾蘭語影響的結果。在現代愛爾蘭的語文中，還不失爲一種慣用的語法，如 Go call them here again.（W B. Yeats）. I'll go tell Jack Smith's...（Lady Gregory）. 現在美國話中這種用法極多，甚至把 "go get"（獲得。弄到手。）的動詞，轉爲名詞的 "go-getter（活動家），如 The thing to do then, as a live bunch of go-getters, is to capitalize Culture.（S. Lewis）（作爲一個活潑的活動家隨後要做的事，就是把「文化」也資本化起來。

【類　例】

Let's go talk to the other fellows.（John Steinbeck）（我們到別的人們的地方去談談吧。）

Won't you **go take** a look at him?（id）（你不去看他一眼嗎？）

I'd better go fetch him before all the fish die of age.（Puss'n Pooch）（我最好去找他來，怕這些魚因年老而死光。）

I'd better go telephone Dilly first.（電影 Love Letters）（我最好先去打個電話給狄莉。）

She's better come get you, anyway.（H. Hamilton）（總而言之，她最好來帶你去。）

Better come join us.（S. Lewis）（你跟我們一起去吧。）

Run get the ball for me, Jamie.（B. Tarkington）（詹米，你跑去替我把球拾來吧。）

I like say something if you got a minute.（id）（如果你得空，我想和你說幾句話。）

He offered to help carry her basket.（他說要替她提籃子。）

I have heard say he is a miser.（我聽說他是一個守財奴。）

Don't leave go until I tell you.（我不說你就不要放手。）

I hear say that there will be an election soon.（Zandvoort）（我聽說不久要舉行選舉。）

I hear tell there's a new arrival six days old.（我聽說有一個出生六

目的嬰孩。)

Let it go hang! (讓它去吧。)

【習題52】

1. Go look up the tree and see if there is any ripe fruit on it. (Haggard)

2. If you like not my writing, go read something else. (Burton)

(53) "leave + much (nothing) + to be desired"

The book *leaves much to be desired.*

這本書寫得極不完善。

【解 說】

英文說的 "leave much to be desired" = be very imperfect, 意爲「極不完善」,「缺點很多」。而 "leave nothing to be desired = be perfect, 意爲「完善」,「毫無遺憾」,「沒有缺點」。

【類 例】

Your behaviour leaves much to be desired. (你的行爲尚須改進。)

It leaves nothing to be desired. (那毫無缺憾。)

The telephone service at Singapore leaves nothing to be desired. (新加坡的電話服務無復遺憾。)

The system of water supply in the city leaves much to be desired. (本市的自來水供應制度極不完善。)

The system of internal communication in England almost leaves nothing to be desired. (英國的國內交通制度完善得很。)

This steamer leaves nothing to be desired so far as comfort and luxury are concerned. (在舒服和豪華方面這輪船可謂盡善盡美了。)

【習題53】

1. When this disagreeable difference has been removed, the friendly relations between the two Republics, cordial even when one

was yet an Empire, will leave nothing to be desired. (Wu Ting Fang)

2. If you will balance it on your finger you will find that it is perfect weight, and as to the finish it leaves nothing to be desired. (Fred M. White)

(54) "be＋不定詞"

He *is to arrive* at seven in the morning.

他預定早晨七時抵埠。

【解　說】

這個 "be＋不定詞" 是不定詞的敍述用法，好像形容詞一樣。英文的這種表現法，有許多不同的含義，如上例便是表「預定」的，除此基本含義之外，它還可以表「可能」，表「義務」，表「假設」，表「目的」，表「結果」，表「運命」等。但注意不要與名詞用法相混，如 To see is to believe. (百聞不如一見。) 這句中的動詞後雖然也是接的不定詞 (to believe)，但它是名詞補語，和我們現在討論的敍述用法的形容詞補語完全不同。

【類　例】

We are to meet him at the airport. (我們要到飛機場去接他。) (預定)

The meeting is to be held on Sunday. (定了禮拜天開會。) (預定)

We are to go to town this afternoon. (我們打算今天下午進城去。) (預定)

In the sky not a cloud was to be seen. (青天無片雲。) (可能)

Every misfortune is to be subdued by patience. (一切不幸都可能由忍耐克服。) (可能)

Her feelings as she read the letter were scarcely to be defined. (她看信時的心情不可名狀。) (可能)

You are to stay here till I come back. (你得待在此地等我回來。) (命令)

You are always to knock before you enter my room. (在進入我的房間前你要敲門。) (命令)

It was understood that everybody was to pay his own expenses. (聽說各人付各人的錢。)(義務)

Let me know everything that I am to know without delay. (我須要知道的事趕快都告訴我吧。)(義務)

She asked him what she was to do. (她問他看她要做點什麼。)(義務)

If he were to come, say that I am absent. (他來了,只說我不在家。)(假設)

Certain skills must be learned if one is to use English effectively. (如果想要有效地使用英語,某些技巧是必須學會的。)(假設)

If it is to be done at all, do it well. (如果一定要做的話,就好好地做吧。)(假設)

This house is to be let or sold. (這房子要出租或出售。)(目的)

Not an instant is to be lost. (一秒鐘也不要浪費。)(目的)

And the augurs were as clever as are politicians, who also must practise divination, if ever they are to do anything worth the name. (D.H. Lawrence) (現代的政治家也和古代的占兆家一樣,不得不實行占兆,如果他們想要做點名副其實的事情的話,所以古代的占兆家也和現代的政治家一樣聰明。)(目的)

He was to blame for not locking the door. (沒有鎖門是他的過錯。)(結果)

Am I to understand that you have engaged yourself to this young gentleman? (Shaw) (你是說你已經和這個青年男士訂了婚嗎?)(結果)

The Prince of Wales has been touring the worldwide dominions of which, some day, he is to be the crown head. (H.G. Wells) (將來命定要做英國領土之王的皇太子,去周遊了遍及全世界的領土回來了。)(運命)

The worst is still to come. (還有最壞的要來。)(運命)

【習題54】

1. If you are to understand this strange, rather sad story, you must have an impression at least of the background—the smashed dreary city of Vienna divided up in zones among the four Powers. (G. Greene)

2. The President of the University is to give a speech at the convivial meeting.

3. "I am all astonishment. How long has she been such a favourite?—and pray, when am I to wish you joy?" (Jane Austen)

(55) **"have＋不定詞＋賓語"**
"have＋賓語＋不定詞"

(a) I *have to spend much money.*
我非花許多錢不可。

(b) I *have much money to spend.*
我有許多錢可花。

【解 說】

英文的 "have to do" 和 "have...to do" 兩種形式，在意味上不一定有區別，大都是同義的，如 I have to write a composition. 和 I have a composition to write. 兩句都是作「我非做一篇作文不可。」解，意即 I must write a composition. 但 COD (簡明牛津字典) 的編者特別舉出意義不同的例句來證明二者是可能有不同解釋的：

(a) I had to do my work.
(b) I had my work to do.

(a)句中的 "had to" 注明爲 "be obliged" (不得不，必須) 之意。(b) 句中的 "had to" 注明爲 "be burdened with" (使負擔)之意。

美國的 Fries 在他著的 American English Grammar 一書中 (169 頁)，也舉例加以分別：

Speeches may be broadly divided into two kinds. There is the speech a man makes which he *has something to say*, and the speech he endeavours to make when he *has to say something.* (演說可大別爲兩類。一類是一個人有話想說的時候而去發表的演說，另一類是他並沒有打算說話，而臨時被迫演說，只好努力去找些話來說以應付過去。)

他這說法是不錯的，我還可以舉出日常的用例：

(a) I have something to tell you. (我有話跟你說。)

(b) I have to tell you something. (我必須告訴你一件事。)

可知 "have＋賓語" 的作「有」解, "have＋不定詞" 的作「必須」解，但一般的用法二者的分別並不太明顯(not always very well marked)。

【類　例】

I have three miles to walk. (有三哩路要走。) 意爲非走不可，無車代步。不能說 I have to walk three miles. 因爲並非有走三哩路的必要，而是因爲路程長達三哩的意思。

Whom have I to complain of but myself? (Milton) (我除了自己以外，還能向誰抱怨呢？)

I have only to blame myself. =I have only myself to blame. (我只怪自己。)

As a matter of fact, he's having to sell his house. (事實上，他現在非把房子賣掉不可。)

He has several letters to write. (他有幾封信要寫。)

He has nothing to eat. (他沒有東西吃。)

I have a knife to sharpen my pencil with. (我有削鉛筆的小刀。)

The weather has to be good; otherwise, we'll postpone it. (一定要好天氣，否則，我們就延期。)

Do I have to go to bed now, Mother? (媽，我就要去睡嗎？)

Wake them all up, if you have to, but find that paper! (沒有辦法的時候，只好把他們全部叫醒，那文件無論如何要找出來。)

My doctor says I haven't to (=mustn't) eat meat, but I don't have to (=needn't) take his advice if I don't want to. (醫生說我不可以吃肉，不過如果我不想聽他的話，我就不一定要服從他。) don't have to 或說 haven't got to 也是一樣。

He has to get through work before eight. (八點鐘以前他必須把工作做完。)

Everything had to have his approval. (一切都得由他批准。)

You don't have to decide this matter at once. (你不用馬上決定。)

【習題55】

1. Some authors write because they have to tell a story rather than they have a story to tell. (Anthony Trollope)

2. I played away a month on account of illness, so I had to work hard to make up for lost time.

3. She has never expressed an opinion, and the inference was that she had no opinion to express.

4. We have some miles to drive, even from the small station.

(56) "prevent＋賓語＋from＋動名詞"

Illness *prevented him from going* there.
他因爲生病未能去那裏。

【解　說】

英文說的 "prevent a person from doing something", 意即 "hinder him so that he cannot do it", 可譯作「阻止去做」或「使不能做」, 是指妨礙一個人去做什麼事說的。這個 "from" 是表示「分離」的。動詞 "prevent" 有時改用 "hinder", "deter", "keep", "stop" 等字也是一樣, 如用 "restrain" 則爲「抑制」, 若用 "prohibit" 則爲「禁止」, 用法相同, 都是後接 "from" 加動名詞或名詞的, 不過如用與 "prohibit" 同義的 "forbid" 時, 用法就不同了。在動詞 "forbid" 後不能接介詞 "from", 而要接不定詞, 才符合英文的慣用法。如「他父親禁止他抽煙」一句話, 譯成英文時, 用 "prohibit" 則說 His father prohibited him from smoking. 用 "forbid" 則說 His father forbade him to smoke. 這兩個動詞意義雖同, 用法上也略有分別: "forbid" 指直接或私人下的命令, 或定下辦法來禁止, 並希望他人遵循, 而 "prohibit" 則指當局制定正式規章, 如政府的立法禁止之類, 並有強迫執行之意, 如 Smoking is prohibited in theatres. (戲院中奉令禁止吸煙。) Swimming in the reservoir is prohibited. (禁止在貯水池中游泳。)

【類　例】

This is only to prevent him from going abroad. (這只有妨礙他出洋的。)

He could not keep from the use of tobacco. (他未能停止吸煙。)

What prevented you from coming last night? (昨夜你爲何沒有來？)

Urgent business prevented me from calling on you. (因有要事，以致未能拜訪。)

Bad weather prevented us from starting. =We could not start because of bad weather. (因爲天氣不好，所以沒有能够動身。)

We must prevent the trouble (from) spreading. (我們必須阻止紛爭擴大。)

Please refrain from smoking. (請免吸煙。)

Failure in the examniation should not deter you from trying again. (這次考試落第，不應妨礙你再試的勇氣。)

Tired as I was—exhausted, in fact—I was prevented from sleeping by the pain in my knee. (Jack London) (我雖則疲勞，實際上是筋疲力竭了，我因膝痛未能入眠。)

If he would only keep from bad company, he might yet do well. (只要他不要再交結壞朋友，他還是可以變好的。)

Her lips were set together almost as if she was pinching them tight to prevent words or sounds (from) coming out. (Gaskell) (她的嘴唇爲着不讓語言或聲音出來，幾乎好像挾緊了一樣完全閉着。)

A man can never be hindered from thinking whatever he chooses so long as he conceals what he thinks. (一個人只要他不把心理所想的事說出來，他高興怎樣想就怎樣想，是誰也不能阻止他的。)

【習題56】

1. Society does not in any age prevent a man from being what he can be (=become).

2. If you apply the principles of efficiency to your work, nothing can stop you from achieving your ambitions.

(57) "persuade＋賓語＋into＋動名詞"
"dissuade＋賓語＋from＋動名詞"

(a) I *persuaded him into doing* so.
我勸說他才這樣做的。

(b) I *dissuaded him from doing* so.
我勸阻他才不這樣做的。

【解　說】

某種他動詞的後面接 "into doing" 時，便產生肯定的意思；接 "from doing" 時，便產生否定的意思。前者的 "into" 表他動詞的「結果」，後者的 "from" 表「制止」，「抑制」。後面不用動名詞而改用名詞也可以，如 I dissuaded her from her folly. (我勸她少做蠢事。) 他動詞 "persuade" 是勸人去做一件事，而 " dissuade" 則是勸人不要去做一件事，所以勸告成功，便是去做了 (into doing)，或是不做了 (from doing)。普通在 "persuade" 後又常接用不定詞以代替動名詞，如不說 I have persuaded him into doing it. 而改說 I have persuaded him to do it. 也是一樣。但反對字的 "dissuade" 後便一定要接動名詞，不可以接不定詞，即是我們只能說 I should dissuade you from going. 不可以說 I should dissuade you to go. 不過這個 "from" 有時也可換用 "out of" 或 "against"，如 I tried my best to reason him out of his fears, but it was all in vain. (我盡力勸他不要怕，但毫無效果。) They dissuade people against going to China. (他們勸人不要到中國去。)

【類　例】

The father dissuaded his son from leaving school. (父親勸他的兒子不要中途輟學。)

He was persuaded into doing it against his own wish. (他被勸服去做他違心的事。)

They dissuaded her from going on the stage. (他們勸她不要去演戲。)

The priests of the old religions used to persuade the people to do

all hurt to the Christians. (古宗敎的僧人們老是勸說人們對基督徒加以種種危害。)

I could not persuade her to (=into) my way of thinking. (我不能說服他依從我的想法。)

I have convinced her that she needs a holiday, but cannot persuade her to take one. (我已使她相信她需要度假,但不能說服她眞去。)

I knew I should study, but he persuaded me to go to the movies. (我知道應該讀書,但他勸誘我去看電影。)

【習題57】

1. I honour the man who can neither be bribed nor frightened into doing wrong.

2. Literature serves a human animal struggling to persuade the universal Sphinx to propose a more intelligible riddle. (Santayana)

V. 不定詞的造句

(58) 表目的、原因、結果等的不定詞

(a) I went *to see* him off.
我去送了他的行。

(b) I am glad *to see* you.
見到你我眞高興。

(c) He worked only *to fail*.
他努力終歸失敗。

【解 說】

在「動詞的造句」中,我們已經涉及一些不定詞的用法,但那是以動詞爲主,不定詞只是附屬而已。現另闢專欄來研討不定詞的一些特別用法。就不定詞而論,最複雜而又最難辨別的,就是它的副詞用法。那可以用來表「目的」,「原因」,「結果」,「理由」,「條件」,「讓步」等等,一不當心,就會譯錯。上舉 (a) 例所示,凡用於不表感情的動詞之後的不定

詞，便是表示「目的」的。(b)例中用於表示感情的形容詞或自動詞之後的不定詞，則是表示「原因」的。(c)例中用於無意志動詞之後的不定詞，便是表示「結果」的，在 “only” 或 “never” 後的不定詞，多屬此類。現將各種副詞用法，分別舉例說明如下：

【類　例】

We eat to live, (but do) not live to eat. (我們為生而食，不是為食而生。) (目的)

The boy rushed his home work through and went out to play. (那男孩急急忙忙把作業做好，出外玩去了。) (目的)

They are selling red feathers to raise money for crippled children. (他們在賣紅羽毛為殘廢兒童籌募基金。) (目的)

She wept to see him in this condition. (看到他這個樣子她不禁哭了。) (原因)

They were delighted to learn of the arrival of our baby. (他們聽說我們生了孩子大為高興。) (原因)

She was hurt to find that no one admired her performance. (她發覺誰也不賞識她的演奏頗為傷心。) (原因)

He awoke to find (=and found) himself famous. (他一覺醒來發見自己出名了。) (結果)

Few live to be a hundred. (活到百歲的人無幾。) (結果)

I little thought then that I left it (=the house), never to return. (Dickens) (在當時簡直沒有想到我離開那個家就再不會回去了。) (結果)

She will grow up to be a fine woman. (她會長成一個漂亮女人的。) (結果)

It is discouraging to tell the truth only to find that we are not believed. (我們說的真話，結果卻無人相信，未免使人氣餒。) (結果)

One day Mr Nelson disappeared from town, never to be seen again. (有一天芮先生在城裏不見了，以後再沒有人看到他。) (結果)

He must be a fool to say so. (說這樣的話，他真傻呀。) (理由)

He must have studied hard to have succeeded so splendidly. (他如

此高中，一定是很用過功來的。)(理由)

What a fool I was to have expected him to help me! (指望他會幫我的忙，我多麼傻。)(理由)

They must be crazy to let him drive their car. He hasn't got a driver's licence. (他沒有開車的執照，他們竟糊塗地讓他去駕駛他們的車子。)(理由)

To hear you sing, people might take you for a girl. (聽你唱歌，人們會以爲你是女子。)(條件)

I should be glad for Mary to go. (Curme) (瑪麗要能去的話，我眞高興。)(條件)

To look at her you'd never guess she was a university lecturer. (看她的樣子你決想不到她原是大學的講師。)(條件)

You would have done better to have made up with them. (你要跟他們和解了的話，就更好了。)(條件)

To do his best, he could not finish it in a week. (即令盡他的力量去做，一個禮拜也做不好。)(讓步)

【習題58】

1. They were shocked to see the state of the bell-rope.

2. I come to bury Caesar, not to praise him. (Shakespeare)

3. He did not live to enjoy the fruits of what he had done.

4. We rushed through it only to find ourselves back again in prison.

5. If modern individuals and modern nations pursue again these crazy competitions, without regard for the dignity of human life, we shall live to see ten millions perish for every million who perished in the war.

6. Many a young person has felt that life was not worth living after a broken love-affair, only to discover a few years later that happiness was waiting, after all.

(59) "so as＋不定詞"
"so...as＋不定詞"

(a) We started early *so as to get* there before noon.
我們爲要在正午以前趕到那裏，所以很早就動身了。

(b) We started *so* early *as to get* there before noon.
我們因爲很早動身，所以在正午以前就到達那裏了。

【解　說】

在 (a) 例中將 "so as (not) to do" 連用，與用子句的 "so that＋may" 一樣，是表示「目的」的，意爲「爲着(不)要」。如 We started early so as to get there in time.＝We started early, so that we might get there in time. (我們早早動身，俾可及時趕到那裏。)至於在(b)例中把 "so...as to" 分開來用，便產生出「結果」之意，表示因果關係，有時也可表「程度」，等於用子句的 "so...that"，可譯作「因爲…所以」，如 We started so early as to get there in time. ＝ We started so early that we got there in time. (我們早早動身，以致及時到達了那裏。) 表「程度」的如 He was so angry as to be unable to speak.＝He was so angry that he could not speak. (他大爲生氣，連話都說不出來了。)

【類　例】

Come early so as to get a good seat. (＝Come early, so that you may get a good seat. ＝Come early in order to get a good seat.) (早點來可以佔到好位子。)

She walked softly so as not to make any noise. (＝She walked softly that she might not make any noise. ＝She walked softly in order not to make any noise.) (她輕移蓮步，不使出聲。)

Houses should be built so as to admit plenty of light as well as of fresh air. (建築家屋應使空氣流通，陽光直射。)

Books are now so cheap as to be within the reach of almost every one. (書籍現在非常的便宜，幾乎任何人都能購讀。)

Something fresh and green was springing forth so as to be ready for the summer. (為準備好以便迎接夏季,新綠正在迸發。)

He listened attentively so as not to miss a single word. (他不想漏掉一個字,所以很用心地聽了。)

He went so far as to say that she was a liar. (他甚至說她是撒謊。)

In those days ships were sometimes so delayed by contrary wind as to run short of fresh water and provisions. (當時船因遇到逆風而遲誤,以至發生淡水和食糧不足的現象。)

Without, the storm drove so fast as to create a snow-mist in the kitchen. (Hardy) (外面暴風雪吹得很急,以至在廚房中造成沉沉的雪霧。)

【習題59】

1. Before we start to investigate that, let us try to realize what we do know, so as to make the most of it, and to separate the essential from the accidental. (Doyle)

2. Vegetables are not produced so abundantly as to suffiec for the wants of the whole country.

(60) "too...+不定詞"
"not too...+不定詞"
"too...not+不定詞"

(a) She is *too* angry *to speak*.
她忿怒得說不出話來。

(b) He is *not too* old *to do* it.
他不是老人,那個他是可以做的。

(c) He is *too* angry *not to say* it.
他在盛怒之下,不免要說出這樣的話來。

【解　說】

這三個句子中的不定詞,都是表示「限定」的。在(a)句中的"too... to do",是以不定詞來修飾前面的"too"字,因而這個不定詞就含有否定的意思在內,可譯作「太…而不能」,用英文解釋則為 She is so angry

that she cannot speak.（她如此忿怒以至不能說出話來。）但是這個表現法如果在前面加上一個 "not" 的字樣，如 (b) 例所示，便是把 (a) 句加以否定，意即「並不太…所以能做」，但這個否定的 "not"，如果不是加在 "too" 之前，而是加在不定詞的 "to do" 之前，如 (c) 例所示，那就是把原有的否定打消了，原爲「不能說」變爲「不是不能說」也就是「可能說」了。這個 "not" 是修飾不定詞的，以英文解釋時便是 He is so angry that he cannot but say it.（他是那般忿怒而忍不住要說出那樣的話來。）

【類　例】

The news is too good to be true.（消息太好，恐不可靠。）

The flower is too beautiful to last.（花太美難經久。）

I was too excited to speak.（我興奮得說不出話來了。）

English is not too difficult to learn.（英文並不太難學。）

The expression is well known to many students of French, but it is far too good not to be requoted here.（這句話是學法文的學生都知道的，不過實在說得太好，這兒不免要再度引用一下。）

This coffee is too hot (for me) to drink.（咖啡太燙我不能喝。）

His income is too small to support his family.（收入微薄無法養家。）

The light was too dim to be used for close work.（燈光太弱不能做細工。）

The change which these years have brought about is too remarkable to be passed over without being noticed, too weighty in its lesson not to be laid to heart.（近年來所發生的變化是極爲顯著而不容有所忽視，在得到的教訓上極爲沉痛而不容吾人不深爲銘記。）

Elliott was too clever not to see that many of the persons who accepted his invitations did so only to get a free meal and that of these some were stupid and some worthless. (W.S. Maugham)（艾略特是聰明的人必然看得出來，大多數接受他的邀請的人，只是爲着要來吃一頓不花錢的飯，他知道他們當中有些是愚笨的，另外有些却是不足輕重的。）

He is too much of a man of the world not to know better.（像他

那樣精通世故的人，當無作此事的道理。)

【習題60】

1. It is flattering to believe that their thoughts are too profound to be expressed so clearly that all who run may read, and very naturally it does not occur to such writers that the fault is with their own minds which have not the faculty of precise reflection. (Maugham)

2. If we were not too proud to explain ourselves or to ask explanations of others, most of the misunderstandings of life would disappear. (A.G. Gardiner)

3. I had read too many novels and had learned too much at school not to know a good deal about love, but I thought it was a matter hat only concerned young people I could not conceive that a man with a beard, who had sons as old as I, could have any feelings of that sort. (Maugham)

(61) "only too...+不定詞"
"too ready+不定詞"

(a) I am *only too* glad *to do* so.
我非常高興去做。

(b) She is *too ready* to speak.
她眞是愛說話。

【解 說】

凡在"not", "only", "all", "but" 等字後面的"too"，其句中的不定詞是沒有否定意義的。"only too"意爲"very"或"exceedingly"。這是從字面上來看的說法，如果從構造上來看，不定詞如係修飾"too"後面的字，而非修飾"too"時，也不含否定的意思。這種句中的不定詞是修飾"too"後面的"ready"一類的字的，也可以說"too"是修飾"ready to speak"的，所以(b)例 She is too ready to speak.=She is too tal-

kative. 這類句子在 "too" 後常用的字除 "ready" 以外，還有 "apt", "eager", "easy", "inclined", "willing" 等字。

【類　例】

You know but too well to hold your tongue. (你深知少說的好。)

They are all too satisfied to take the opinions of others without the pain of thought for themselves. (他們都太滿意於接受別人的意見，自己懶得去想。)

I shall be only too pleased to do my best in that line of work. (我很高興盡力於那方面的工作。)

I am only too delighted to accept it. (我很高興接受那個事情。)

He is too ready to promise. (他輕諾。)

He is too ready to suspect. (他易疑。)

She is too ready to talk. (她多言。)

We are too apt to overlook our own faults. (我們很容易忽視自己的過錯。)

People are too apt to do so. (人們常要這樣做。)

They are too apt to keep their inferiors at a distance. (他們常要對部下抱敬遠態度。)

Beginners are too apt to make mistakes. (初學者容易弄錯。)

The political freedom we have today will never be too easy to preserve. (我們今日所有的政治上的自由，是決不容易維持長久的。)

【習題61】

1. I soon perceived that she possessed in combination the qualities which in all other persons whom I had known I had been only too happy to find singly. (J.S. Mill)

2. Philosophers have been too ready to suppose that question of fact can be settled by verbal considerations.

(62) 不定詞的感歎用法

To think that he has become a minister!
想不到他居然當了部長。

【解 說】

不定詞單獨用時往往有感歎的意思，最普通的形式爲 "To think that...!" 和 "To go...!" 在這種不定詞的前面，可看做是省略了 I am astonished to think that... 或 What a foolish thing it is to go... 或 It surprises me... 等字樣。上擧的例句前面，即可加上 How astonishing it is 的字樣來解釋。如譯爲「眞是出乎意外」或「眞想不到」時，便可傳出原意。這種省略句中所用的不定詞 (Infinitives in Ellipitical Constructions)，都是表示感歎的，其主語爲說話的人。例如詩人 Robert Browning 的名句：O to be in England now that April's there! (=Oh how happy I should be, were I in England now that April is there.) (今正値英倫四月，我要在那裏就好呀！)有時可將不定詞的 "to"略去，如 She talk to him! (她跟他說話！〔那是不可能的〕。)

【類 例】

To think that in just a few days we'll be parting! (想不到只有幾天我們就要分別了。)

I to marry before my brother, and leave him with none to take care of him! (Blackmore) (要我比哥哥先結婚，而讓他失去照顧，那怎使得！)

A gentleman to come to that. (一個上等人竟下流到這樣的程度。)

To treat in such a manner the friend of his father! (竟這樣對待他父親的朋友。)

To think that he should fail me in this crisis! (在這危機中想不到他竟一點也不幫忙我。)

To think that neither of his children should come to help! (試想

他的孩子竟然一個也不來幫忙。)

O to have lived (=O how I wish I had lived) in the brave days of old! (啊！但願我曾生活在從前那樣美好的日子裏。)

【習題62】

1. To come to sneaking things like that! It's upset me frightfully. (Galsworthy)

2. Foolish fellow! to suppose that he could be pardoned.

3. To think that you, of all persons, should say so!

(63) "not to speak of"
"not to say"

(a) He knows Latin, ***not to speak of*** English.
他懂得拉丁文，英文自不待言。

(b) He knows Latin, ***not to say*** English.
即不說英文，拉丁文他也懂得。

【解　說】

這是不定詞的獨立用法，兩個說法形似而義不同，不可混淆。"not to speak of"=without even speaking of; to say nothing of; not to mention; as well as; in addition. 意即「自不待言」,「更不必說」,「猶其餘事」,「何況」等。至於"not to say"=one might almost say; if not. 意爲「姑且不說」,「卽不說」,「姑置不論」,「甚至」,「雖未到那種程度」,「若非」等。

【類　例】

He cannot afford the ordinary comforts of life, not to speak of luxuries. (他連日常生活的舒服都負擔不起，那裏還談得上奢侈。)

Japan is noted for Mt. Fuji, not to speak of its cherry blossoms. (日本櫻花出名自不待言，富士山也有名於世。)

The scholar is well versed in Greek and Latin, not to speak of English which is his mother tongue. (那學者精通希臘、拉丁，他的母語英文更無論了。)

The painter is a little singular, not to say grotesque. (那畫家雖不能說是古怪，也可算奇特的了。)

He is very good-natured, not to say foolish. (他老實得幾乎有點愚笨。)

He is extremely frugal, not to say stingy. (不說他吝嗇也吧，至少他是極其節儉的。)

He is dishonest, to say nothing of his other faults. (他不正直，其餘的壞處更不必說了。)

She is a good housekeeper, not to speak of being a good cook. (她不但是一個做菜的能手，而且也很會治家。)

He raised quite large and salable crops of hay and oats, to say nothing of his own vegetables and fruit. (T. Dreiser) (他自己用的蔬菜水果固不待言，他還培植了許多可銷售的大量乾草和燕麥。)

His speech was very eloquent last night, to say nothing of its having been significant. (昨晚他的演說意味深長自不待言，而且極爲動聽。)

He is a graduate student, but he cannot speak English, not to mention (=to say nothing of) French. (他是研究所的學生，但法文固不必講了，連英文都不會說。)

We're too busy to take a long vacation this year, not to mention the fact that we can't afford it. (出外度一個長的假期費用太大自不待言，而時間上也無此餘裕。)

【習題63】

1. If there be plenty of traffic, the railway is able to make transportation very economical, not to speak of its regularity, ease, and rapidity.

2. As a matter of fact, all great discoverers worthy of the name have at one time or another been regarded as dreamers, not to say mad.

VI. 動名詞的造句

(64) "There is no＋動名詞"

There is no knowing what may happen.
未來的事無法知道。

【解　說】

這句慣用語法，意爲「不可能」，或「未可逆料」。There is no doing. ＝It is impossible to do.＝We cannot do. 在動名詞後，常接以疑問詞開頭的子句。Charlotte Bronte 說的 There was no possibility of taking a walk that day.（那天是不可能出去散步的。）也屬於這一類的句法。另外有一種句式："There is no use（或 good)＋動名詞"，就和 "There is no＋動名詞" 大不相同，如 Oscar Wilde 說的 There's no use staying on.（用不着再呆下去。）這可能是 "It is no use＋動名詞" 的變形，如 There is no good telling any more about it. 改爲 It is no good telling any more about it. 似乎更好，因爲諺語原是 It is no use crying over spilt milk.（覆水難收。）又有人說正規的表現法在動名詞前應該有一個介詞，如 Charles Dickens 說的 There is no use in talking.（用不着說。）至於 There is no use our coming here. 一句，也可以在 "our coming" 前加上一個介詞的 "in" 字。

【類　例】

There is no denying this.（這個無可否認。）
There is no accounting for tastes.（嗜好各有不同，是無法說明的。）
There is no telling what will happen. (Curme)（未來的事未可逆料。）
There is no getting along with him. (id.)（跟他是無法相處的。）
There is no saying how long the war is going to last.（戰爭還要繼續多久是未知數。）
There's no telling when he will arrive.（不曉得他何時到達。）
There is no knowing when we shall meet again.（後會無期。）

There is no going out in this snow-storm. (在這樣的大風雪中,是不可能外出的。) Cf. It is impossible (for us) to go out in this snow-storm.

【習題64】

1. There was no saying how he might behave upon these occasions.

2. There is no knowing when one's house may come tumbling down about one's ears.

3. He had always been excitable, but now he was beside himself; there was no reasoning with him.

(65) "for＋the＋動名詞"

You can have it *for the asking.*
那個你只消索取卽可得到。

【解 說】

這個 "for＋the＋動名詞"的形式,意爲 "for the mere act of doing", 或是 "if one only＋現在動詞", 可譯作「只消」,「只要」。句中的 "for" 有時可換用 "with", 如 Things which perish with the using. 只要索取卽可得到,當然是免費的, 所以 "for the asking"＝for nothing (免費;不取分文)。

【類 例】

It is yours for the asking. (你要就送你。)
It may be had for the asking. (免費奉送。)
You may have it for the asking. (你要就拿去。)
The choicest gold is to be had for the digging. (最上等的黃金只要挖掘就可以得到。)
A lass that may be had for the asking. (Scott) (一個女孩只要你要就是你的。)
Remarkable facts were to be had for the picking up. (T.H. Huxley) (很顯著的事實俯拾皆是。)

【習題65】

1. If an individual was not satisfied with his calling or his salary, he could obtain a farm for the asking and begin a new industrial life. (F.W. Blackmar)

2. Who would be satisfied with the success which may be had for the wishing?

(66) "above＋動名詞"

He is not *above asking* questions.
他不恥下問。

【解　說】

一個人爲自尊心或道義感而不屑於去做某種事情，英文就說"be above doing"，可譯爲「不屑爲」，「決不肯做」，「恥於去做」。這個"above"意爲「超過…的範圍」，有時後面接名詞也是一樣，如 He is above reproach.（他是無可責難的。）

【類　例】

He is above telling a lie.（他不是一個肯說謊話的人。）

Poor as he was, he was above selling his country at any price.（他雖窮苦，無論給他多少錢，他也不肯出賣祖國。）

【習題66】

1. Any one who would profit by experience will never be above asking help.

2. National spirit should be so high as to make a strong power to be above bullying a weak one.

(67) "worth＋動名詞"

Whatever is *worth doing* at all is *worth doing* well.
任何值得做的事，就值得做好。

【解 說】

在"worth"這個形容詞後，慣用法要接一個賓語，而這個賓語又通常是動名詞構成的。如 This book is worth reading.（此書值得一讀。）句中的"reading"是 Active 的形式而含義却是 Passive。本來動名詞是沒有被動語態的，常以主動語態來表示被動的意思，如說 The garden wants weeding.（花園需要清除雜草。）實爲"being weeded"之意，即被人清除雜草。本例說的"worth reading"，亦復含有"worth being read"之意，但習慣上不這樣說，而把這個被動的形式，讓給另外一個同義的形容詞"worthy"去專用。故「此書值得一讀」可譯成下列兩種形式：

This book is worth reading.
This book is worthy of being read.

這個"worth＋動名詞"又可變爲"worth-while＋動名詞"或"worth one's while＋動名詞"，不過意義上微有不同吧了。說"worth doing"意爲「值得去做」，說"worth (one's) while doing"意爲「值得花時間去做」，例如 It is not worth-while your doing.（這不值得你費神去做。）The museum is worth seeing.（這博物院值得看。）又 worth-while 在敍述用法時應分爲二字，如 All this fussing is hardly worth while.（這一切的大驚小怪是值不得的。）普通常用的形式是"worth doing"或"worthwhile to do"，雖則說"worthwhile doing"也不爲錯。

It is worthwhile to read this book.
It is worthwhile reading this book.

以上二句從文句的構造上看，"to read this book"和"reading this book"，同樣是句中眞正的主語，"it"不過是形式上的主語而已。但是如果我們說 It is worth discussing the question further. 就是錯誤的，因爲句中的"it"是形式上的主語，眞正的主語應爲"discussing the question further"而"worth"的賓語落空了。這變成 Discussing the question further is worth. 所以不通。應改爲 The question is worth discussing

further. 或 It is worth while to discuss the question further 後一種改正法: "to discuss the question further" 與 "it" 爲同格, 而 "worth" 則有 "while" 一字作爲它的賓語。

又我們只能說 Is today's film worth seeing? 不能說 Is today's film worth to see? 因爲 "worth" 後必須接動名詞或名詞, 如 It is not worth a penny. (一文不值。) 只有在 "worthy" 後才可以接不定詞, 如 He is worthy to lead. (他能做領袖。)

現代英語說的 "worth doing", 在稍古的用法中則說 "worth the doing", 例如 The conversation are worth the remembering or recording. (Thackeray) Everything that made a hard life worth the living. (Kipling) Any success you may achieve is not worth the having unless you fight for it. 最後一例中的 "worth the having" 實爲 "worth the act of having" 加強的說法。

【類　例】

Venice has many places worth visiting. (威尼斯有許多值得去遊的地方。)

It is worth your while to go and see them. (你值得花些時間去遊覽。)

A book which is worth reading at all is likely to be read more than once. (一本果眞值得我們去讀的書, 就值得多讀幾遍。)

This is worth saying. =To say this is worth while. =It is worth while to say this. (這話値得說。)

He ought to spend his time on some worthwhile reading. (他應該花時間去讀些値得讀的書籍。)

This book is worthwhile reading. (這書値得花時間去讀。)

It isn't worthwhile going there now. (現在要去那裏却是浪費時間。)

【習題67】

1. Nothing worth having can be had without labour.

2. It is far better to do well a bit of work which is well worth doing than to have a large fortune.

(68) "far from＋動名詞"

The noise, *far from abating*, continued to increase.
那聲音不但毫未停止，反而增大了。

【解 說】

英文說的 "far from"，意為 "not at all"，加重時說 "so far from"。這成語中的 "far"，原是表示距離的，轉而成為比喻的用法，具有「遠未」，「絕非」之意。有時在 "from" 後接上一個形容詞，也可視為省去了動名詞 "being" 的說法，例如 He is far from happy. 即 "from being happy" 之略。此外 "from" 後接名詞或代名詞，也是常有的事，如 It is far from the truth.（遠非真實。）a house far from the town.（遠離城市的屋子。）還有成語的 "far from it"（決無其事；一點也不），也就是英文 "not in the least" 的意思。例如："Mr. Dickson, you say, is not, strictly speaking, handsome!" "Handsome! Oh no; far from it.—certainly plain". (Jane Austen)（「你說狄克遜先生，嚴格地講並不漂亮！」「漂亮！啊，不，一點也不——他確是長得很平凡的呀。）最後說的是「其貌不揚」的婉說法。

【類 例】

Far from reading the letter, he did not open it.（那裏談得上看信，他拆都沒有拆開。）

It was far from being good.（一點也不好。）

I am far from blaming him. =I do not blame him at all.（我一點也不怪他。）

His explanation is far from (being) satisfactory.（他的說明決不能令人滿意。）

He was a good worker at school and far from stupid.（他在學校時很用功，決不愚笨。）

The room was far from cômfortable.（這房間一點也不舒服。）

It's far from well. (=not at all well; a long way from being well.)

(這個一點也不好。)

He is far from well. (他一點也不健康。)

His style is far from perfect. (一點都不完善。)

I am far from content. (決非滿意。)

【習題68】

1. So far from repenting of his error, he glories in it.

2. Indeed, so far from poverty being a misfortune, it may, by vigorous self-help, be converted even into a blessing.

(69) "busy＋動名詞"

He is *busy preparing* for the examination.

他忙於準備考試。

【解　說】

這個"busy＋動名詞"的形式，應視為"busy in doing"的省略，在牛津大辭典上也說"busy in doing"的 modern use 便是"busy doing"，所以 He is busy writing letters. 可以說是 He is busy in writing letters. 的現代英語的形式。在形容詞"busy"之後只能接動名詞，不可以接不定詞，即不可以說 He is busy to prepare for the examination. 但可以說 He is too busy to prepare for the examination.

【類　例】

He is busy writing a report. (他忙於寫報告。)

The German was busy in washing his hands. (Bulwer) (那德國人忙着洗手。)

Nanny has been busy ironing this evening. (G. Eliot) (南妮今晚一直在忙着燙衣。)

Farmers are busy working in the fields. (農人在田裏忙於工作。)

I found him busy packing his trunk. (我看見他正忙於收拾行李。)

Ruth was busy at her desk correcting test papers. (Caldwell) (魯仕正在桌上忙着批改試卷。)

【習題69】

1. He was then so tremendously busy handling piles of desk work.
2. Mr. A is busy (in) canvassing for the Conservative candidate.

(70) "on＋動名詞"
"in＋動名詞"

(a) *On reaching* Hongkong, I went to see him.
一到香港我就去看他了。

(b) *In walking* downtown, I met him.
在鬧市走着時我遇到了他。

【解 說】

在這用法中的介詞 "on" 有 "as soon as" 或 "when" 的意思，而 "in" 則有 "when" 或 "while" 的意思。這種句子如果把動名詞前的介詞略去，使之由動名詞構造 (Gerundive Construction) 變成分詞構造 (Participial Construction)，即說成 Reaching Hongkong, I went to see him. 及 Walking downtown, I met him. 意思也還是一樣，並無任何不同。如果一定要加以區別的話，動名詞構造對於時間的觀念表現較強而已。現在的傾向，動名詞構造比較要佔優勢些。

【類 例】

On seeing me (＝When he saw me) he escaped. (他一見到我就逃走了。)

On entering (＝When we entered) his room, we at once perceived that he was a man of taste. (一走進他的房間，我們立刻就看出他是一個趣味豐富的人。)

On arriving (＝On his arrival) in Singapore, he received a visit from a college professor. (一到新加坡他就接受了一位大學教授的訪問。)

In talking (＝When we talk) about imagination we invariably talk of the poet. (談到想像時我們一定就會談及詩人的。)

There's no point in doing that. (那樣做毫無意義。)

Am I right in thinking that a nuclear war will never happen? (核子戰爭永不會發生，我這樣想對嗎？)

He found an outlet for his anger in kicking the dog. (他拿狗來出氣。)

They decided on building a theatre. (他們決定建造一座戲院。)

He is intent on pleasing people. (他只想討好別人。)

He is engaged in collecting stamps. (他從事集郵。)

In making a dictionary he displays a special skill. (編字典他有特殊技能。)

Come, there's no use in crying like that. (Carroll) (嘿，那樣的大哭大叫也沒有用呀。)

I have spent my life in finding that out. (Galsworthy) (我為要找出那個來，花了一生的工夫。)

He was so long in answering a salutation. (Galsworthy) (他沒有馬上回禮。)

He was drowned in crossing the water. (他渡河時淹死了。)

In crossing (=While I was crossing) the Lozere I had come among new natural features. (Stevenson) (渡過瀘哲爾河時，我來到新的自然美景之中了。)

【習題70】

1. We should not be too hasty in condemning all compromise as bad morals.

2. On reaching home we found she had given us up after searching a little while. (Hardy)

VII. 否定詞的造句

(71) "no more...than"

You can *no more* swim *than* I can fly.

你不能游泳跟我不能飛行一樣。

【解 說】

這種表現法是爲加強 "than" 前的否定而用的。在 "than" 以後的文句，表面上看去雖有肯定的形式，然其含義仍屬否定。此點在翻譯時應特別注意，以免譯錯。句中的 "no more" 可換用 "not any more"，普通是沒有什麼不同的，意爲 "not...just as...not"。又 "no more than" 不可和 "not more than" 混同，因後者意爲「至多」(at most)。

這個作「同樣」解的 "no more...than" 的基本用法是表示普通的比較，如 He has no more money than you have. (他的錢和你一樣多。)不過另外還有三種特殊用法，是頗難翻譯的。

(1) 爲著名的 whale pattern:

A whale is no more a fish than a horse is. (=A whale is not a fish any more than a horse.) (鯨之非魚猶馬之非魚也。) 馬之非魚顯而易見，鯨之非魚亦同於馬。用以將後半句與前半句一同打消，以後者的不可能，來打消前者的可能性。

(2) 成語中的 "no" 不是修飾 "more"，而是修飾後面的名詞的，其 "than" 也不是連詞，而是介詞。

"Than whom", said Dupin, "no more sagacious agent could, I suppose, be desired, or even imagined." (E.A. Poe) (別指望有比此人更聰明的偵探，連想都不要想。)

句中的 "no" 就是修飾 "agent" 的，改寫過一下，便成爲 no agent more sagacious than whom 了。在 "than" 後只有單字無子句，故非連詞而爲介詞。

(3) 爲 "no more than" = only (不過，僅，只)，如:

He has no more than $10 = He has only ten dollars. (他只有十塊錢。)

He is no more than a puppet. (他只不過是一個傀儡。)

No more than three days = only three days. (只有三天。)

上舉的用法 (1)，可譯爲「與…同樣不是…」，「跟…一樣不是…」(=as little as)，如 He is no more a god than we are. (他和我們一

樣都不是神。)比較:

(a) I am no more mad than (=as little mad as) you are.
(我和你一樣並沒有發狂。)

(b) I am not more mad than (=not so mad as) you are.
(我發狂沒有發得你那樣厲害。)

【類 例】

There is no more dependence to be placed on his words than there is on the wind. (=Just as we cannot depend on the wind, so we cannot depend on his words.) (其言之不可信賴,也像風之不足信賴一樣。)

It is not easy to give away money any more than it is to make money. (用錢不容易,正如賺錢不容易一樣。)

He could no more bear the noise of a child than he could fly. (他決受不了小孩的吵鬧。)

There is no more dangerous experiment than that of trying to appear what one is not. (在人前裝模作樣,是比什麼還要危險的嘗試了。)

The jest about her (a wife) being able to say no more about his (a husband) occupation than "he is something in the City" is not entirely an absurdity. (P. Carr: *The English Are Like That*) (關於丈夫的職業,妻子只好說「他是金融界的一位大亨」,那樣的笑話,也不能完全說是荒謬。)

A home without love is no more a home than a body without a soul is a man. (正像沒有靈魂的身體不成其爲人一樣,沒有愛情的家庭也不成其爲家庭。)

A man has no more right to say an uncivil thing than to act one. (一個人無權說無理的事,就像無權做無理的事一樣。)

The gospel of making a fortune is no more true than what I tell you. (你們所說的致富之道跟我講的一樣是靠不住的。)

He cannot effect the impossible any more than we can. (他不能做不可能的事也跟我一樣。) "effect" 意爲「實現」。

He was no more than skin and bone, was partly paralysed, and wore spectacles of such unusual power, that his eyes appeared through

the glasses greatly magnified and distorted in shape. (R.L. Stevenson) (他只剩下皮包骨了，半身不遂，因爲戴着非常深度的眼鏡，所以在那鏡子後面的眼睛，看去擴大得多，而且變了樣子。)

【習題71】

1. But Judith did not want or intend to forget John. She could no more have considered marrying another man than she could have accepted some strange new God thrust suddenly upon her. (K. Winsor)

2. Doris gave no sign of good looks, her nose was too long and her figure was lumpy; so that Mrs Garstin could hope no more for her than that she should marry a young man who was well off and in a suitable profession. (W. S. Maugham)

3. John was eight years older than she and for many years he paid her scanty attention, though he took it for granted that eventually they would marry; the betrothal papers had been signed while he was yet a child and Judith no more than a baby. (K. Winsor)

(72) "no less...than"

A whale is *no less* a mammal *than* a horse is.
鯨是哺乳動物，和馬是哺乳動物一樣。

【解 說】

這是和前項正相反的一個表現法。在 "no more...than" 的場合，連詞 "than" 前後都是否定，而在 "no less...than" 的場合，則連詞 "than" 前後都是肯定。用減少的否定詞以加強肯定的意思。可譯作「不遜於」.「不弱於」。在普通的比較級，"no less than" ＝as many (much) as; just, 例如 He owns no less than (＝as many as) ten houses. (他擁有的房子達十幢之多。) There were no less than fifty killed and wounded. (死傷達五十人。) 但特別用法的 "no less...than"＝quite as ...as, 例如 She is no less beautiful than her sister. (她美不遜於她的姊姊。)意卽其美正復相等。

比較：(a) The number of the students is not less than (=at least) 1,000.（學生人數至少有一千人。）

(b) The number of the students is no less than (=as many as) 1,000.（學生人數多達一千人。）

(a) He has not less (=perhaps more) than $100 is his pocket.（他口袋裏至少有一百元，也許不止此數。）

(b) He has no less than $100 in his pocket.（他口袋裏竟有一百元，可算相當多了。）

連用的 "no less than" =as many as, as much as, exactly, 據 ALD 上說是 "expressing surprise at the amount, 例如 He won no less than $5,000 in the lottery. 或 He won $5,000, no less, in lottery.（他中了五千元之多。）

比較：(a) He gave me no less than (=as much as) $100.

(b) He gave me no more than (=only) $100.

分開的 "no less...than"=quite as...as; the very, 具有兩個意思：(1)不遜於，如 She is no less (quite as) beautiful than (as) her sister.（貌美不遜其姊。）(2)不外是，如 He is no less a person than the king.（他正是國王其人。）就等於說 He is the very king.

【類　例】

He was no less a person than the President. (=He was a person no other than the President.)（他正是總統其人。）

The writer is no less a personage than a prince.（那作家的名望正如一個王子。）"no less...than"=of as high a station or rank as, exactly, the very. 意爲「身家相若」，「權位相等」，「恰好」，「正是」。

Our soldiers fought with no less daring than skill. (=Their daring equalled their skill.)（我們的軍人戰鬪既勇敢而又熟練。）

Sunlight is no less necessary than fresh air to a healthy condition of body.（日光和新鮮空氣同樣對身體的健康情形是有必要的。）

He is no less guilty than you.（他和你同樣有罪。）

As regards our foreign policy, it is no less our interest than our

duty to maintain the most friendly relations with other countries. (關於我國的對外政策,維持和別國的友好關係,是我們的義務,同樣地也是我們的利益。)

We hope to invite no less a person than an assistant professor. (我們希望聘請一位助教授階級的人。)

In Japan he is famous already, a personality no less in the public eye than the Crown Prince or the slugging first baseman of the Tokyo Giants. (在日本他早出了名,在一般人的眼中,他簡直像皇太子或是東京巨人隊棒球的第一壘擊球手一樣的名人。)

【習題72】

1. Want of care will not less ruin the good man than the man of lax morals.

2. The technique of writing is no less difficult than that of the other arts and yet, because he can read and write a letter, there is a notion that anyone can write well enough to write a book. (Maugham)

(73) "not so much...as"
"not so much as"

(a) His success is ***not so much*** by talent ***as*** by energy.
他的成功與其說是由於才能毋寧說是由於精力。

(b) He did ***not so much as*** turn his face.
他連頭也沒有回一下。

【解　說】

英文說的 "not so much...as"＝rather than, 其中的 "as" 有時可以換用 "but rather", 可譯爲「與其說是…毋寧說是」。而 "not so much as"＝without (或 not) even, 可譯爲「甚至…都沒有」, 其中的 "not" 有時可以換用 "without"。

【類　例】

The oceans do not so much divide the world as unite it. (與其說

陸以洋分，毋寧說陸以洋合。）

He is not so much a scholar as a writer.（與其說他是學者，不如說他是作家。）

The farmer looks wealthy, but he has not so much wealth as people at large think.（那農夫看上去很有錢的樣子，但沒有一般世人所想像的那樣有錢。）

Success in life does not depend so much on one's school record as on one's honesty and diligence.（事業的成功並不靠在學校時的成績，而要靠爲人的誠實和勤勉。）

She is a society woman, but strange to say, she cannot so much as (=even) write her own name.（她是一個社交婦女，但說也奇怪，她甚至連自己的名字都不會寫。）

He went away without so much as saying good-bye.（他甚至不辭而去。）

He did not so much as punish one of the murderers, nor did he show the least tenderness to the survivors. (Macaulay)（對於那些殺人犯他甚至一點也沒有處罰他們，而對於那些生存者他也沒有表示一點親切。）

Law, in its true notion, is not so much the limitation as the direction of a free and intelligent man to his proper interest.（法律眞正的意義，是要把一個自由而有理性的人，導向正當的利益上去，而不是對此加以限制的。）

The window was so narrow that one could not so much as get one's head through.（那窗子小得連頭都伸不出去。）

There is nothing in the world that I like so much as music.（世界上再沒有別的東西比音樂更要使我愛好的了。）

The great use of a school education is not so much to teach you things as to teach you the art of learning.（學校教育最大的效用，不在教你一些知識，而在教你學習的方法。）

【習題73】

1. It is not men's faults that ruin them so much as the manner in which they conduct themselves after the faults have been committed.

2. The policeman walked through the crowd without so much as turning his face to either side.

3. It is not so much the hours that tell as the way we use them. (Sir J. Lubbock)

(74) **"Nothing is more...than"**
"Nothing is so...as"

(a) *Nothing is more* precious *than* time.
沒有什麼比光陰更可貴的東西了。

(b) *Nothing is so* precious *as* time.
像光陰那樣可貴的東西再沒有了。

【解　說】

英文形容詞的比較,雖有尋常級 (positive degree), 比較級 (comparative degree), 最高級 (superlative degree) 三種不同的形式, 但無論是平等的比較或高一級的比較, 都可以用來表出最高級比較的意思, 例如 He is *as* sympathetic a man *as* ever breathed. = He is *more* sympathetic *than* any other man that ever breathed. = He is *the most* sympathetic man that ever breathed. 第一句爲 positive, 第二句爲 comparative, 第三句爲 superlative, 而全都表出同樣的意思來, 都可以用「最」字來翻譯。"Nothing is more...than" 和 "Nothing is so...as" 兩種表現法, 都具有最高級比較的意思。句中 "nothing" 一字, 可換用其他的否定字如"no", "nobody", "nowhere", "little", "few", "hardly", "scarcely" 等等, "as...as" 的否定形通常是 "not so...as".

【類　例】

No one is so foolish as to believe that anything happens by chance. (誰也不會愚笨到相信世間有什麼偶然發生的事。)

To my mind nothing is more horrible than a hydrogen bomb in the world. (我覺得世間沒有什麼比氫彈更可怕的了)。

No complaint is more common than that of a scarcity of money.

(最普通的抱怨就是說錢不够用。)

Nothing sounds more ridiculous (than this). (沒有比這說得更荒謬的了。)

Nothing can be more attractive to the eye. (沒有比這更好看的東西了。)

Nothing is more valuable than health. (沒有比健康更可寶貴的東西。)

No other animal is so large as a whale.(沒有比鯨更大的動物。)

【習題74】

1. Scarcely any part of the world affords so great a variety in so small an area as our own island.

2. Nothing is so uncivil as the habit of smoking in the streetcar.

3. Nothing is more important for the student who loves literature than to become intimately acquainted with great critics.

(75) "cannot...too"

We *cannot* thank him *too* much.

我們無論怎樣感謝他也不爲過。

【解 說】

英文說的 "cannot...too", 意爲 "it is impossible to overdo...", 或 "no matter how much more you do, you will never overdo it", 或 "the more, the better"。「無論怎樣也不爲過」。其中的 "can" 表可能性, "too"有"over-"之意, 可換用"enough "或 "sufficient" 等字樣。不用 "not" 而用其他的否定字, 如"hardly", "scarcely" 等也是可以的。下列六句意思完全一樣:

You cannot be too careful.

You cannot be over careful.

You cannot be careful enough.

You cannot be sufficiently careful.

You cannot take enough care.

You cannot take sufficient care.

下面的句子也相彷彿：

I cannot see enough of him.

We cannot recommend this book too strongly.

We cannot exaggerate his attainments.

This point cannot be over-emphasized.

【類 例】

You cannot be too careful in crossing the street.（過街愈當心愈好。）

You cannot begin the practice too early.（練習開始得愈早愈好。）

Good manners cannot be too much valued.（禮貌是值得儘量尊重的。）

This introduces a fact of an importance that cannot be overstressed.（這介紹我們一個事實，其重要性無論怎樣強調都不爲過。）

That which is good cannot be done too soon.（好事做得愈快愈好。）

The importance of scientific study cannot be overvalued.（研究科學的重要，估價決不會太高。）

It is impossible to speak in terms of too high praise of his merits.（他的功績無論怎樣讚揚也不爲過。）

I cannot be too grateful for his kindness.（對於他的幫忙，無論怎樣感謝也不爲過。）

【習題75】

1. A man who has received a kindness cannot be too grateful for it.

2. The importance of reading aloud, and of rewriting again and again can hardly be overestimated.

3. A book may be compared to your neighbor; if it be good, it cannot last too long; if bad, you cannot get rid of it too early.

(76) "否定＋without"

You *cannot* speak *without* moving your lips.

你不動嘴唇便不能說話。

【解　說】

通常的情形是兩個否定構成肯定，但翻譯時最好還是保留否定的語氣，實比肯定更要強而有力。這種雙重否定的用法，變化頗多，分別舉例以見一斑。大抵皆可譯爲「每…必」，「無…不」。

【類　例】

One cannot succeed without perseverance.（人無毅力不能成事。）

You cannot make omelettes without breaking eggs.（不事耕耘，焉得收穫。不打破蛋就不能做煎蛋捲。）

He cannot speak English without making mistakes. (He cannot but make mistakes when he speaks English.)（他說英語每說必錯。）

One cannot look at Emerson's picture without feeling that he was not only wise but good.（看到艾默生畫像的人，沒有不感覺到他的賢明與善良的。）

They never meet without quarrelling. (=They never fail to quarrel when they meet.)（他們每次見面必要吵架。）

It never rains without pouring. (=It never rains but it pours.)（禍不單行。不雨則已，雨必滂沱。）

No one can read it without crying.（無人讀此而不下淚。）

No pleasure without pain.（有樂必有苦。）

No gains without pains.（無不勞而獲者。）

No roses without thorns.（凡物必有缺憾。）

No one should ever go to London without seeing some of his wonderful creations.（沒有一個人到倫敦不去看看他那令人驚奇的幾幅油畫的。）

Not a day passed without their meeting.（他們無日不相見。）

In India, not a yeat passes without a number of people falling victims to the ferocity of the tiger.（印度每年必有多人死於虎患。）

【習題76】

1. Just as we cannot understand Chinese literature without any knowledge of the works of Confucius, so all students of English

should know something about the English Bible.

2. We cannot pick up even an ordinary book, a magazine or a newspaper without finding in it references to the Bible and quotations from its pages.

(77) "否定+but"

There is *no* rule *but* has exceptions.
條條規則都有例外。

【解 說】

在否定字或准否定字的後面,所有的"but",都是具有"which not","who not","that not"等否定意義的關係代名詞或連詞,因而構成前後的雙重否定,可譯成「沒有…不是」。上例又可說成 The exception proves the rule.

【類 例】

There is no one but hopes to be rich. (沒有人不想發財。)

There is no one but knows that. (無人不知。)

There is scarcely a man but has his weak side. (人皆有缺點。)

There is nothing in the world but teaches us some good lesson. (世界上的一切都能給我們好的教訓。)

No leader worthy of the name ever existed but was an optimist. (値得做首領的人都是樂觀主義者。)

It was impossible but he should see it. (他一定看到那個的。)

No man is so old but he may learn. (沒有老到不能學習的人。)

I never think of summer but I think (=without thinking) of my school days. (想到夏天就想到我的學生時代。)

It never rains but it pours. (禍不單行。破屋又遭連夜雨。)

She would have fallen but that I caught her (=if I had not caught her). (如果不是我抓住她,她早已掉下去了。)

Justice was never done but that (=without the result that) someone complained. (卽是公平裁判也還是有人要抱怨的。)

Scarcely a week passes but she writes to her old parents. (差不多每星期她都要寫信給她的父母。)

【習題77】

1. There has not been a statesman of eminence but was a man of industry.

2. There was scarcely a family but had at least one relative among the wounded.

3. No two people can be half an hour together but one shall gain an evident superiority over the other.

4. Never a week passes the whole year round but that, in some part of the world, wheat is being reaped for the British market.

(78) "否定＋until (till)"

The value of health is *not* esteemed *until* it is lost.
人要到失去了健康，才知道健康的可貴。

【解 說】

在否定字如 "no", "not", "never", "little", "few", "seldom" 等的後面所接用的 "until" 或 "till"，與其照字面譯爲「直到…爲止，…不」，不如譯爲「要…才…」，把否定譯成肯定，才合乎中文的語法。

【類 例】

Nobody knows what he can do till he has tried. (任何人都要試一試，才知道他能做什麼。)

He will not come till eight o'clock. (他要八點鐘才來。)

He didn't arrive until the meal was over. (他到飯後才來。)

Man in general does not appreciate what he has until he loses it. (一般人要等到失去他的所有才知珍惜。)

I am afraid I cannot finish the work till Friday. (我恐怕我要到星期五才能做完。)

He didn't go abroad till he graduated from college. (他到大學畢業

後才出洋深造。)

It was not till yesterday that I got the news. (直到昨天我才聽到那個消息。)

Do not start till I give the word. (等我下命令才出發。)

【習題78】

1. Some take no thought of money until they come to an end of it, and many do the same with their time.

2. True friendship is like health, the value of it is seldom known until it is lost.

3. The central fact of biology, evolution, was not established until modern science had been in existence for over two hundred years.

(79) **"not so...but"**

"not such a...but"

(a) He is *not so* sick *but* he can come to school

他並沒有病到不能上學。

(b) He is *not such a* fool *but* he knows it.

他並不是連那個都不知道的傻子。

【解　說】

這和(77)項的"否定＋but"相似，不過那個"but"多半是關係代名詞，而本項中的"but"，就是含有"that...not"意味的連詞。把句中這個"but"改寫爲"that...not"，和前面的"so"或"such"連起來，即成爲"so...that"或"such...that"的形式，更可以看出是表程度的了。又"but"有時可說成"but that"或"but what"，意思還是一樣，有"without the fact that"(除去那事實外)之意。這個"but"是不對等連詞，作用和"that"相似。"否定＋so＋but"的形式，和"however＋may"相同，如There is nothing so hard but it becomes easy by practice.＝However hard anything may be, it becomes easy by practice. 意爲「無論怎樣…也不是不能」。

【類　例】

There is not such a fool but that he can see it. (沒有愚笨到連這個都不懂的人。)

No man is so foolish but he may give another good counsel sometimes. (無論怎樣愚笨的人有時都能給別人好的忠告。)

His income is not so small but he can support his family. (他的收入無論怎樣少也能維持他一家的生活。)

The current was not so strong but he could swim against it. (激流並未強到他不能逆泳的程度。)

The streets were not so crowded but our car could go through. (街上並不是擁擠得不能通車。)

It was not such a cold night but we could go out. (那天夜裏並不是寒冷得不能出外。)

No man is so old but (that) he may learn. (沒有人老到不能學習的。)

【習題79】

1. There is nothing so strong but it is in danger from what is weak.

2. The material destruction of the war not so great but that it could by this time have been repaired, had a good peace been made without delay.

(80) **"not A but B"**
"B, (and) not A"

(a) He excels *not* in English, *but* in mathematics.
他擅長的不是英文，而是數學。

(b) He excels in mathematics, *and not* in English.
他長於數學，而非英文。

【解　說】

這是將否定和肯定並舉的句法，先說否定須接用 "but"，先說肯定則接用 "and"，不過有時也可以將 "and" 略去不說。

【類 例】

He has in mind not a particular class of readers but men and women in general. (他心中所指望的，不是一個特殊階級的讀者，而是一般的男女。)

He has in mind men and women in general, not a particular class of readers. (他心中所指望的，是一般的男女，而不是一個特殊階級的讀者。)

He is not my son, but my nephew. (他不是我的兒子，而是我的姪兒。)

He is my nephew, (and) not my son. (他是我的姪兒，不是我的兒子。)

The most important thing in the Olympic Games is not to win but to take part. (夏令配克運動會最要緊的不是優勝而是參加。)

It is not work, but overwork, that is hurtful; and it is not hard work that is injurious so much as unwilling work. (有害的不是工作而是過度工作；辛勞的工作並沒有不願意的工作那樣有害於健康。)

【習題80】

1. The end of law is not to abolish or restrain, but to preserve and enlarge freedom.

2. It is the monotony of their minds, not of their surroundings, that is chiefly responsible for their weariness.

(81) "否定＋because"

Don't give up *because* it is difficult.

不要因為困難就放棄呀。

【解 說】

連詞 "because" 在肯定句中是對主句 (main clause) 全體說的，如 I was fatigued because I had sat up all night. (我因通宵未眠而感疲憊。) 至於在否定句中，則不是指主句全體，而是指句中的一個字，如例句中的 "difficult" 一字。但 "because" 與否定同用時，常會發生兩種不同的含義，例如：

(a) I didn't go because I was afraid.

=(1) I didn't go, and the reason was fear.
(我怕所以我沒有去。)
=(2) I went, but the reason was not fear.
(我不是因爲怕才去的。)而是因爲別的原因。

(b) I did not marry her because I loved her.
(1) 我不是因爲愛她才和她結婚的。
(2) 我因爲愛她才不和她結婚。

如果連詞 "because" 是用作 "though" 解時,就比較好譯,因爲譯成「因爲」或是譯成「雖則」,都不算錯。

【類 例】

You should not despise a man because he is poor. (不要因爲別人窮就輕蔑他。)或譯(雖則他窮你也不應該輕蔑他。)

We should not look down upon the man because he is out of employment. (我們不要因爲那人失業就瞧不起他。)

Don't be vain because you are good-looking. (不要因爲你長得漂亮就虛榮起來。雖則你長得漂亮也不要虛榮。)

He cannot go to school because he is sick. (他因生病不能上學。)

I did not go out because it rained. (我因爲下雨沒有出門。)

I will not do that because it would be of no avail. (因爲沒有用我不要做它。)

The seed does not complain because there are stones and turf in its way. (種子並不因爲有石頭和草皮擋住它的路而抱不平。)

【習題81】

1. He has no reason to think less of himself because he is not dressed in a rich and fashionable manner.

2. Because a lad does not happen to be strong, it does not necessarily follow that a sea-life would not suit him.

(82) "not because...but because"

A mountain is *not* famous *because* it is high, *but because* it

has some spirit dwelling in it.
山不在高，有仙則名。

【解　說】

英文的 "not because...but because" 可譯爲「不是因爲…而是因爲」。這個 "because" 可用爲連詞，後接用子句，也可用爲副詞，後接用片語，如上舉例句中的 "because" 是連詞，下例中的 "because" 便是副詞：The ship was delayed not because of the war, but because of a snow-storm.（船的延誤非因戰爭乃因風雪。）

【類　例】

I recommend her not because she is beautiful, but because she has a talent for music.（我推薦她並不是因爲她美，而是因爲她有音樂天才。）

A mountain is not valuable because it is high, but because it has trees.（山並不因高而有價值，而是因爲有樹木才貴重的。）

Some women do not buy their new dresses because they like them, but because they do not like to be behind the fashion.（有些女人買新衣並不是因爲她們喜歡，而是因爲她們不願落在時髦的後面。）

Religions succeed not because they are true, but because they provide what people want.（宗教的成功並不是因爲它們是眞理，而是因爲它們供給人們所需要的東西。）

【習題82】

1. He is good, not because of any virtue, but because he is too much of a coward to be bad.

2. The difference in your bonus is not because of your efficiency but because of your long absence.

(83) **"not that...but that"**

Not that I loved Caesar less, *but that* I loved Rome more.
我並非因愛凱撒淺，而是因愛羅馬深。

【解　說】

這個"not that...but that"中的"that"=because，全句可補"it is"來解釋，意卽 It is not because I loved Caesar less, but because I loved Rome more. 這個"it"實具有"the reason"(其理由爲)或"what I mean"(我想說的是)的意思。又"but"後的"that"有時可以省去。這種沒有主句(principal clause)的表現法，原是用"not"一字來代表主句的一種省略說法，可解釋爲 I do not mean that I loved Caesar less, but that I loved Rome more.

【類　例】

Not that I dislike the work, but that I have no time to do it for the time being.(不是因爲我不喜歡那工作，而是因爲我目下無時間去做。)

It is not that I am unwilling but that I have no time.(不是因我不願，而是因無時間。)

No, thank you. I don't want any more, not that I don't like them, but I am just full and cannot eat anything more.(謝謝你，我不要了。我不能再吃了，並不是因爲我不喜歡吃，而是因爲我吃得太飽，什麼也吃不下了。)

Not that I don't want to help you, but that it's beyond my power to do so.(並非我不幫忙，實力有未逮。)

Not that I like a dog but that I dislike a cat.(並不是因爲我喜歡狗，只是因爲我不喜歡貓。)

【習題83】

1. Our boast is not that we have more ideas, but that our ideas are better sounder.

2. We want to get into good society not that we may have it, but that we may be seen in it, and our notion of its goodness depends primarily on its conspicuousness.

3. If I accidentally had my attention drawn to the fact that some other boy knew less than myself, I concluded, not that I knew much, but that he, for some reason or other, knew little.

(84) "否定＋every (all, both, always, quite)"

(a) I do *not* know *every* one of them.
　我不全認識他們。
(b) *All* that glitters is *not* gold.
　發光的東西未必都是黃金。
(c) The rich are *not always* happy.
　富人未必常是幸福的。

【解　說】

不定代名詞 (the indefinite pronoun) 的 "every", "all", "both", 以及副詞的 "always", "quite", 與否定結合時，不是全部否定 (total negation), 而是部分否定 (partial negation), 意即不是「全不是」, 而是「不全是」。注意 "not all" 與 "not at all" (全部否定) 的不同。例如Both (of them) are not my brothers.＝One is not my brother, but the other is. 意即「他們兩個當中，只有一個是我的兄弟。」如果要說兩個都不是的話，英文應說 Neither (of them) is my brother.

試比較下面三句的含義：

I know both of them. (他們兩人我全認識。)
I do not know both of them. (他們兩人我只認識其中一個。)
I do not know either of them. (他們兩人我全不認識。)

換上 "all" 一字，也是同樣的情形：

I know all of them. (他們我全認識。)
I do not know all of them. (他們我不全認識。)
I do not know any of them. (他們我全不認識。)

由以上的例子看來，我們知道 "both" 是部分否定，而 "either", "neither" 才是全部否定；"all", "every" 是部分否定，而 "no", "any", "none" 等字才是全部否定。

All that glitters is not gold. (發光的東西未必都是黃金。)
None (Nothing) that glitters is gold. (發光的東西都不是黃金。)

Every man cannot be a poet. (不是人人可作詩人。)

No man can be a poet. (無人可作詩人。)

【類　例】

You can't fool all the people all the time. (你未必能够老是愚弄所有的人。)

He is not always so sad. (他並不是經常這樣悲傷的。)

Somehow the old house is not quite what it should be. (Charles Lamb) (不曉得怎樣的,那老屋並不十分合乎理想。)

He did not read every book in his library. (他並沒有把他圖書室所有的書全部讀完。)

Every man is not polite, and all are not born gentleman. (不見得人人都懂禮貌,而所有的人未見得都是生來的君子人。)

We did not see all the pictures, for it needs many visits to do so properly. (我們並沒有看完所有的畫,要規規矩矩全部看完必須去參觀好多次才可以。)

Every man cannot be rich, but every man can be a gentleman. (不見得人人都能致富,但人人都能成爲君子。)

Opportunities come to all, but all are not ready for them when they come. (機會是均等的,人人都有,但不見得人人都能準備好去接受它,當機會到來的時候。)

The biographies of scientists are not always good literature, but they have immense educational value. (科學家的傳記並不見得是好的文學作品,但它們都有很大的教育價値。)

【習題84】

1. All great truths are obvious truths. But not all obvious truths are great truths. (A. Huxley)

2. As play was forbidden on Sunday, this seemed to me a not quite intolerable way of passing the time away. (Lynd)

VIII. What, who 的造句

(85) "What he is"
"What he has"

We honour him for *what he is*, not for *what he has*.
我們尊敬的是他的人品而不是他的財富。

【解 說】

這個"what"是關係代名詞,"what"=that which,意爲「所」,「者」,「…的事物」。"what he is"=his character,是說「他現在的狀態」,即「他現在的人品 (personal character)」,或「他所具有的學識品德」。如用過去動詞說"what he was"則爲「他當時的狀態」,也就是「他當時的人品」。"he is"可換爲"you are"或"I am"等,用法也是一樣。至於"what he has"=his property,則意爲「他所有的」,也就是「他的財產」。

【類 例】

It is not a question how much a man knows, but what use he can make of what he knows; not a question of what he has acquired, and how he has been trained, but of what he is, and what he can do. (問題不在一個人知道多少,而在他能否運用他的知識;問題不在他所學爲何,受過怎樣的教育,而在他的人品以及他的能力。)

He has made what I am. (我之有今日是他所賜予的。)

Coal and iron have made England what she is. (英國之有今日是由於煤與鐵的賜予。)

A man's dignity depends not on what he has but on what he is. (一個人的高貴,不在於他的財富,而在於他的人品。)

What a man is contributes much more to his happiness than what he has. (一個人的品德比他的財富更能够使他幸福。)

【習題85】

1. He is rich or poor according to what he is, not according to

what he has. He is rich who values a good name above gold.

2. Half the unhappiness in the world is caused by losing the blessing which would result from the enjoyment of what we have in envying others and longing for what they have.

(86) "what＋名詞"

"what little＋名詞"

(a) He gave me *what money* he had about him.

他把他身上所有的錢都給我了。

(b) I gave him *what little money* I had.

我竭盡棉薄將我僅有的錢都給他了。

【解 說】

這個 "what＋名詞" 的形式有 "all the...that" 或 "that...which" 的意思，可譯作「所有的都」或「所」，是將 "what" 用作關係代名詞的。"what money"＝all the money that. 在這種 "what" 後常帶有 "little", "few" 一類的形容詞，含有「雖少但全都」或「所僅有的」之意。"little" 用於數不清的名詞上，"few" 用於數得清的名詞上。

【類 例】

I will use what influence I have with the minister in your behalf. (我當竭盡棉力爲君向部長推轂。)

I will lend you what books I can spare. (我所不用的書雖爲數不多可悉數借給你。)

He does not read many books, but what books he reads, he reads very carefully. (他讀書不多，然所讀少數的書皆讀得很仔細。)

I have come to render what service is in my power. (我特來爲你效一點能力所及的微勞。)

He saves what little he earns. (他儲蓄僅少的收入。)

She saved what little money she could out of her slim salary to help her brother go to school. (她從她微薄的薪水中留出錢來送她弟弟上學。)

She waited with what patience she could command. (她竭力忍耐在等待。)

The leaves were trembling with what little breeze there was. (微風吹動木葉。)

【習題86】

1. What crops survived the long drought perished in the subsequent inundation. (Brinkley)

2. I shall tell you how in such a situation I acquired what little ability I may be supposed to have in that way. (Franklin)

3. One of the saddest sights is that of a young man who has sacrificed what little health and constitution he had for a college course.

(87) **"what with...and what with"**
"what by...and what by"

(a) *What with* illness *and what with* losses, he is almost ruined.
半因生病，半因虧損，他幾乎整個毀了。

(b) *What by* bribes *and what by* extortions, he made money.
或由受賄，或由勒索，他發了財。

【解 說】

這是 "what" 的副詞用法，可譯作「多少」,「半」,「或」(somewhat; partly)。當 "what" 與 "with" 結合時，表「原因」，與 "by" 結合時表「手段」或「方法」。普通是在一句中重複地用，但也有把第二次要用的略去不說。

【類 例】

What with teaching and what with writing, my time is wholly taken up. (或因授課，或因寫作，以致全無暇晷。)

What with his studies and what with his sports, the school-boy has no time left for idle thoughts. (半以功課，半以運動，使學生無暇胡思

亂想。)

What by policy and what by force, the English made themselves masters of all India in 1876. (英人在 1876 年用策略或用兵力征服了整個印度。)

What with drink and (what with) fright he did not know much about the facts. (半由酒醉,半由恐怖,他對於那眞相知道得很少。)

What with the wind and (what with) the rain, our walk was spoiled. (風風雨雨使得我們的散步全遭破壞。)

What with overwork and under-nourishment he fell ill. (由於過勞,加上營養不足,他終於病倒了。)

Young people cannot be expected to read, what with automobiles, sports and television. (有了汽車,運動,和電視,我們還能指望青年人讀什麼書。)

【習題87】

1. In less than a minute the storm was upon us—in less than two the sky was entirely overcast and what with this and the driving spray, it became suddenly so dark that we could not see each other in the fishing boat.

2. What by threats and what by entreaties, he finally accomplished his purpose.

3. What with tending the sick and wounded and making sandbags, sometimes turning out as many as four dozens of them in a day, her time was fully occupied.

(88) "what is+比較級"

It's a good book, and *what is more*, it's quite a cheap one.
這是一本好書,而且,價錢又很便宜。

【解　說】

用在句首的 "what" 多半有名詞的作用, 但用在揷入句中, 則變成帶有副詞的作用了。如揷入句中用爲獨立語句的 "what is more"=

moreover; besides, 作「而且」或「更有進者」解。比較級偶也可換用最上級。

【類 例】

We were overtaken by the night on the way, and what was (still) worse, it began to rain. (我們還在路上天就黑了,還有更糟糕的,天又下起雨來了。)

He is a good scholar, and what is better, a good teacher. (他是一個優秀的學者,而且,還是一個優秀的教師。)

She is good-looking, rich, and, what is the best of all, clever. (她美而富,而最了不得的是,她又聰明。)

The rules must be few, and, what is more important, comprehensive. (規則宜簡,更重要的在能包括。)

And, what makes the matter worse, he has taken to drinking. (而更糟的是他又喝起酒來了。)

What's more, he was not a very pleasant person. (加之,他又不是一個愉快的人。)

【習題88】

1. Hard work, moreover, tends not only to give us rest for the body, but what is even more important, peace to the mind.

2. Thus the young man of promise broke not only all the promises he had made to himself and others, but, what was worse than all, the heart of his aged father also.

(89) "A is to B what X is to Y"

The man who cannot be trusted is to society what a bit of rotten timber is to a house.

不能信賴的人對於社會,正如朽木對於家屋一樣。

【解 說】

在這種造句中的 "what" 是一個關係代名詞, 從文法上來看,這個

what-Clause 是 "A is" 的補語，即 A is what (=that which) X is to Y to B. 或用括弧把 "to B" 括開，則更明白，即 A is (to B) what X is to Y. 又 "what" 放在第一個名詞子句的頭上也是可以的。又不用動詞 "be" 而改用別的動詞如 "stand" 也未嘗不可。介詞 "to" 有時也可換用別的介詞如 "for" 等。句中的 what-Clause 既放在句首，則可再用一個 "that" 在後來子句的頭上，例見後面的〔類例〕中。

【類　例】

What the blueprint is to the builder the outline is to the writer. (作家對於寫作的輪廓，就像建築師對於藍圖一樣。)

What the leaves are to the forest,/That to the world are children. (Longfellow) (木葉對於森林，正像小孩對於世界一樣。)

Air is to us what water is to fish. (空氣對於我們猶水之於魚。)

【習題89】

1. What Newton was to mechanics and Darwin to biology, Freud was to psychology.

2. He crooked his knee and foot so as to caress the quadruped in a nerve under the angle of the jaw, the stimulation of which...is for a dog what a good cigar is for a man. (G.K. Chesterton)

(90) "who＋肯定"
"who＋否定"

(a) *Who can* rely on such a man as to tell a lie?
誰能信任這樣一個撒謊的人？(誰也不能信任)

(b) *Who cannot rely* on such an honest man?
誰不能信任這樣一個正直的人？(誰都能信任)

【解　說】

這種句子雖有問句的形式，但並不是要問什麼，只是加強語氣而已。這原是反語的表現法，在文法上就稱為修辭的疑問句。因為不是普

通的問話，所以不要作答。(a)例 "who＋肯定" 就等於加強語氣來表示 "nobody＋肯定" 的意思。(b) 例 "who＋否定" 即 "everybody＋肯定" 的加強說法。在 "who" 之外還可換用其他的疑問詞如 "what", "when", "where", "how" 等等。

【類 例】

Who knows (=Nobody knows) what will happen tomorrow? (誰機得明天會發生什麼事？)

Where will I not go with you? (和你在一起天涯海角我都要去。)

Who does not love his country? (誰不愛自己的國家？)

Why should you be surprised? (=You should not be surprised at all.) (你用不着驚奇。)

Who shall decide when doctors disagree? (Pope) (學者意見不一致時無人能決定。)

Don't stand as if you were afraid; who is the wiser? (不要怕，誰也不知道的。)

Who does not hope to be good? (人誰不想做好？)

Why can't we kiss and be friends? (Maugham) (我們爲什麼不能相吻爲友呢？)

【習題90】

1. Who wishes to employ anyone who has not enough self-respect?

2. What would I not give to have such a cow?

3. Where are the snows of yesteryear?

(91) "疑問詞＋should...but"

Who should fail *but* that man?

除那人外還有誰會失敗呢？

【解 說】

英文的 "疑問詞＋should...but" 的形式，表示過去的意外的事，是

一種反語的說法，意爲 "none...but"，可譯作「豈料」，如上例可意譯爲「想不到失敗了的竟是他。」凡 "who"，"why"，"how" 等疑問詞接上 "should" 時，都可以表示「意外」，「不可解」，「驚訝」等。

【類　例】

Who should write it but himself?（除他本人以外還有誰會寫呢？）

Who should come in but the very man?（進來的正是那人。）

The door opens, and—who should enter but the very man we were talking of?（門開處誰想到走進來的正是我們方纔談論的人。）

Who(m) should I meet but my old friend Tom?（我遇到的原是老朋友托孟。）

Of course he married, and who should be his wife but Barbara? (Dickens)（當然他結婚了，他的妻子是誰呢，就是巴白拉呀。）

Fancy this: last night at about six, who should walk in but Elwin? (Dickens)（試想想：昨夜六時走進來的是誰，竟是艾爾溫。）

【習題91】

1. Passing through one of the principal streets, whom should I meet but our cousin to whom you first recommended me? (Goldsmith)

2. This morning he rose very early, and what should he do but take it into his head to wash down the stairs. (Fagazzaro)

(92) "Who knows but (that)"

Who knows but (*that*) he may go?

他多半會去的。（或者他會去也未可知。）

【解　說】

這表現法照字面解時爲「除了他可能去的這件事以外，還有誰知道別的事」，是反語的問句，即除此以外別的誰也不知道。反面的說法則爲 I do not know but that he may go. 是說誰也不知道那以外的事，意即「除了他可能去以外別的我都不知道」。結果正反兩句，意思完全相

同，皆可譯爲「多半」。那 "that" 可省去，有時也可換用 "what"。普通反面的說法用的頗多，"but" 在否定後實無任何意義，因爲那是從法語轉變來的。

【類 例】

Who knows but it may be so? (或者如此，亦未可知。)

I do not doubt (but) that he will succeed. (我確信他必成功。)

I do not deny but that he is diligent. (我不否認他的勤勉。)

He is extremely strong—not but that he will catch a cold at times. (他雖有時感受風寒，然其身體固甚強健。)

He is not such a fool but that he knows it. (他縱下愚猶能知此。)

He is not such a fool but what (=but that) he can tell a friend from a foe. (彼雖下愚，當不至認敵爲友。)

【習題92】

1. Who knows but we may make an agreeable acquaintance with this interesting family? (Hook)

2. Not but what he did his best. (Nesfield)

IX. 條件及讓步的造句

(93) 省略 if 的句法

(a) *Were he* alive, what would he say?
他要是還在世的話，他會怎樣說呀。

(b) *Had I* been there, I should have said so.
如果我在那裏的話，我就會這樣說的。

【解 說】

凡有 "were", "had", "should", "would", "could" 等〔助〕動詞出現在主語前面，而又不是疑問句的時候，便一定是略去了 "if" 或 "though" 那種連詞，而構成條件或讓步的假設語氣的造句了。上例 "were he" 即

"If he were" 之略; "Had I been" 即 "If I had been" 之略。有時連加重語氣的 "do", 也可當作普通助動詞而同樣省略"if"來用。這類句子都可譯爲「如果…的話」或「即令…」。

【類　例】

Were I rich, I would give you some money. =If I were rich, I would give you some money. (如果我富有的話, 我就要給你一些錢的。)

Had you followed her advice, you would have succeeded. =If you had followed her advice,...... (如果你聽了她的勸告, 你就早已成功了。)

Did I see him, I would blame him for it. =If I did see him,...... (如果我當時看到了他, 我就早已爲那件事責備過他了。)

Should he read this book forever, he would not grow wise. =Though he should read this book forever,...... (即令他一直不停在讀此書, 他也不會變得明智的。)

Had I known it, I should have told it to you. (我要知道的話, 我早告訴你了。)

They might live quite comfortably were it not for a quarrel with their nextdoor neighbour. (他們如果沒有和鄰居吵架的話, 就會過得很舒服的。)

Had he planted the tree near the road, strangers would have stolen the fruit. (他當時要是把那樹種在路邊, 路人早就盜取果實了。)

Should this vote go (=If this vote should go) against the ministry, it could not carry on the government. (萬一這次選舉內閣失敗的話, 現政府就不能繼續執政了。)

Many a murderer would have remained innocent had he not possessed (=if he had not possessed) a knife or a gun. (如果當時沒有刀鎗在手, 許多殺人犯都不至犯下大罪了。)

Could he have foreseen (=Even if he could have foreseen) that he was to lose everything, his iron soul must not have been shaken. (如果他預知他會失去一切, 他的鐵一般的意志就決不會動搖了。)

Had he made an obvious mistake (=Though he had made an obvious mistake), he still refused to admit it. (他雖犯了明顯的錯誤, 還是

不肯認錯。)

以上各例都是假設語氣過去及假設語氣過去完成，所以動詞的時態前後都是一致的，但假設語氣現在及假設語氣未來，前（條件句）後（歸結句）句中動詞的時態，就可以不一致了，例如 If this be true（條件句），I am sorry for it.（歸結句）。前面的條件句爲假設語氣現在，後面的歸結句爲直陳語氣現在，前後動詞的時態是不一致的。又例如 If it should be true, I shall be very happy. 前面的條件句爲假設語氣未來，後面的歸結句爲直陳語氣未來，動詞時態也不一致。再看下面的類例：

Should the weather be wet (=If the weather should be wet), the meeting will not be held.（如天下雨會議停開。）

Should it rain tomorrow (=If it should rain tomorrow), I shall stay at home.（如果明天下雨，我就呆在家裏不出去。）

Should a table stand in the way and unexpectedly cause pain, the child, once recovered from the feeling of surprise, may beat it in anger.（如果有一張桌子妨礙了他，意外地引起痛苦的話，那孩子一旦從驚奇的感覺中恢復過來，他也許就要忿怒地去打擊那張桌子的。）

【習題93】

1. Had his abilities been equal to his disposition, he would have made a very good king.

2. Many of the successful men, had they been able to choose for themselves, would have selected some quite different profession from that in which they have made their fortunes.

(94) "If it were not for (=Were it not for)＋名詞"
"If it had not been for (=Had it not been for)＋名詞"
"But for＋名詞"
"But that＋名詞子句"

(a) *If it were not for his help*, I should fail.
(b) *If it had not been for his help*, I should have failed.

(c) *But for his help*, I should fail (have failed).

(d) *But that he helps*, I should fail.

如果不是他幫忙的話,我就失敗了。

【解　說】

這些都是表條件的句子,四句具有同樣的意思,但造句法各有不同。(a) 句是假設過去,(b) 句是假設過去完成,(c) 句是上舉二者的省略說法,可用作假設過去,也可用作假設過去完成,(d)句後面接名詞子句,採用現在時態的動詞,但它所表達的意思,却是假設過去。如果條件句是表假設過去完成時,後面主句中的動詞當然也可改爲過去時態了。(c) 句的 "but for" 有 "except because of" 的意思。

【類　例】

I would go by steamer but that I am a poor sailor. (假設過去)(我要不是因爲暈船,我就坐船去了。) "but that I am" = if I were not.

We should have arrived earlier but that we met with an accident. (= if we had not met with an accident.) (假設過去完成) (我們如果不是途中遭遇事故,我們就早早到達了。)

But for (= Had it not been for) you, I should have been ruined. (如果不是你幫忙,我早已毀了。)

But for (= If it were not for) human selfishness, all might prosper. (如果不是人類的自私,一切就繁榮了。)

All would go well if it were not for losses and want of work. (如果不是損失和失業的話,一切就好了。)

But for his personal example of courage, the battle would have been lost. (如果不是他個人以身作則,勇猛向前的話,恐怕早戰敗了。)

I should have married her, but that it pleased her father to refuse me. (如果不是她父親反對這門親事的話,我早就和她結婚了。)

But that I saw it, I could not have believed it. (我要不是親眼看見的話,我是不相信的。)

I should think it summer still, but that I see the lanes yellow-

purfled with flowers of autumn. (Gissing) (如果不是我看見小路上飾滿了秋天的黃花，我還以爲仍是夏天呢。)

But for the thick trees, the bitter wind would blow the house to pieces. (如果不是那叢密的樹木擋住，強風就會把屋子吹成碎片的。)

But for an unexpected emergency, I could have paid him a visit. (如果不是意外發生的緊急事件，我早已去拜訪過他了。)

If it were not for the immense income derived from advertising newspapers could not be sold so cheaply. (如果不是在廣告上有莫大的收入，報紙就不能賣得這樣便宜的。)

I do not know what I should do for relaxation, were it not for the innumerable detective stories. (如果沒有那無數的偵探小說，我眞不曉得要怎樣消遣。)

What a delightful parent my father would have been, had it not been for his strictness. (如果不是那樣的嚴厲，我父親就是一個非常令人愉快的人了。)

【習題94】

1. Birds are good friends to man. If it were not for them the world would be overrun with insects.

2. Freedom might have come later in India and in a different form if it had not been for Gandhi.

3. People who have pleasant homes get indoor enjoyments that they would never think of but for the rain.

4. But that he came to my rescue then, I should certainly have died.

(95) "命令句＋and"
"命令句＋or"

(a) *Work* hard, *and* you will succeed.
努力工作，那末，你將成功。

(b) *Work* hard, *or* you will fail.
努力工作，否則，你將失敗。

【解 說】

英文的“命令句＋and”等於“if”；“命令句＋or”等於“if not”。這合句的前後句爲順意時，就用“and”作連詞，如前後句爲逆意時，就用“or”作連詞。(a)句既有“if”之意，用中文解說，便是「如果那樣就會(成功)」，(b)句既有“if not”之意，中文可說「如果不是那樣，就會(失敗)」。所以(a)句改爲複句時便是 If you work hard, you will succeed. 而(b)句改爲複句時，便是 If you do not work hard, you will fail. 又(a)句中的“and”，有時可以略去。這種(a)型的造句，後句中的動詞如果用了過去時態的話，前句的命令就變成條件了，用例見下。

【類 例】

Give him an inch, and (=if you give......) he'll take an ell. (得寸進尺。)

Let a man be once a beggar, and he will be a beggar for life. (討過飯的人永遠想討飯。)

Talk of the devil, and he'll appear. (說到曹操，曹操便到。)

Scratch a Russian, and you will find a Tartar. (文明人剝去一層皮，就變成野蠻人了。)

Sit back and rest, and you will feel much better. (坐着休息一下就好了。)

Keep away from those high tension wires, or you'll be electrocuted. (不要靠近那高壓線，否則你會觸電的。)

Write it down, or you'll forget it. (寫下來以免忘記。)

ive him time, and he was generally equal to the demands of suburban customers.(如果給他以時間，他大概就可以答應郊區顧客的要求了。)

Hurry or interrupt him, and he showed himself anything but the man for a crisis. (Gissing) (時間太倉卒或者對他說話加以阻撓的話，他就會顯示出他不是一個能應付危機的人。)

Try and calm yourself, and your mind will be easy again (鎭靜一點，你的心就可安定下來。)

Ask a European critic to name the two leading American poets,

and in most cases he will reply, "Poe and Whitman". (要一個歐洲的批評家提名兩個美國一流詩人的話,他多半會回答,亞倫坡與惠特曼。)

【習題95】

1. Let a man learn as early as possible honestly to confess his ignorance, and he will be a gainer by it in the long run.

2. Take away from Shakespeare all his bits of natural description, all his casual allusions to the life and aspects of the country, and what a loss were there!

3. Don't go too close to him, or you will be found fault with.

(96) "名詞+and"

A few *minutes*, *and* they went away.
再過幾分鐘,他們就走了。

【解 說】

這種 "名詞+and" =副詞子句。因爲它可改爲由 "if", "when", "after" 等開頭的副詞子句, 如上例的 A few minutes and=When a few minutes had passed. 上項講過的 "命令句+and", 是和這個相類似的造句,因爲把命令句中的動詞略去,只留下名詞時,就成爲現在講的這種句法了。

【類 例】

One more effort, and we shall succeed. (=If we make one more effort, we shall succeed. (再努力一下,我們就會成功的。)

One foot nearer, and you are a deadman. (再靠近一步,你就沒有命了。)

Another month and I'll be ordering you off! (再過一個月,我就會把你趕走的。)

A few minutes more, and he lay sound asleep. (再幾分鐘他就睡熟了。)

Another half hour, and all the doors would be locked. (再過半個

鐘頭，所有的門都要上鎖了。）

A word, and he would lose his temper. (你再說一句他就會生氣了。)

A little farther, and (=When they had gone a little farther) they turned off to the left in the direction of an olive orchard. (Wallace) (他們再走得遠一點，就要朝着橄欖園的方向左轉去了。)

【習題96】

1. A turn of the path and we were in a fairy land, whose existence no one a hundred yards off would have suspected.

2. The bullet lodged in my left shoulder—a little lower, and I should have been in Paradise long ago.

(97) "動詞＋疑問詞"

Say what you will, I don't like it.

不管你怎麼說，那個我總是不喜歡的。

【解　說】

這種"動詞＋疑問詞"＝讓步句。這是在假設語氣中用作副詞子句的句法。"動詞＋疑問詞＋will"，常有「即令」那種讓步的意思。上舉例句就等於說 Whatever you may say 一樣。句中的疑問詞除"what"外，還可換用"when"，"where"等，而"will"也可換用"may"。

【類　例】

Look where I will, I see nothing like him. (brontë)(=Wherever I may look...) (無論我到那裏去找，都找不到他那樣的人。)

Do what he could, the king could neither soothe nor quell the nation as he wished. He was at his wit's end. (那國王無論怎樣也不能如願地把全國的老百姓加以撫慰或是鎮壓下來。他簡直黔驢技窮了。)

Go where I will, I find a house full of peace and cordiality. (Cowper)(=Wherever I may go...) (無論走到那裏，我都會看到一個充滿和平與溫情的家庭。)

Come what will (或may), I am prepared for it. (無論變得怎樣我都

準備好了。)

Let others say what they will, I always speak the truth. (讓別人高興怎麼說就怎麼說,我是總要說真話的。)

Later writers, say what you will of their genius, have rarely equalled the elaborate beauty of the ancients. (Thoreau) (後世的作家不管你對他們的天才怎樣說,是很少有能夠與古代作家那種精巧的美匹敵的。)

A man thinking or working is always alone, let him be where he will. (Ibid) (一個思想或工作的人無論到那裏都是孤獨的。)

Come what might, they were alone in the world with no one to help them. (Dickens) (無論發生什麼,他們在這世上是孤獨的,誰也不來扶助。)

Here, wake at what hour I may, early or late, I lie amid gracious stillness. (Gissing) (在這裏,我無論在何時醒來,或遲或早,都是躺在可感謝的靜寂之中的。)

【習題97】

1. Die in what manner I may, I will die like the son of a brave man.

2. The youth who expects to get on in the world must make up his mind that, come what may, he will succeed.

3. Say what you may about it, it is your father that made you what you are.

(98) "no matter＋間接疑問句"
"疑問詞-ever＋may"

(a) *No matter how* hard it may be, do your best.
(b) *However* hard it *may* be, do your best.
不管那是怎樣的難,你還是盡你的全力吧。

【解 說】

a)(b) 兩例雖則表現法不同,但都是表讓步的,意思相同的句子。據專家解釋(a)句是句首省略了"it is"二字,全句應作 It is no matter how hard it may be. 這兩種句法中的,"may" 可以略去不說,也可以

換用別的助動詞。又在 "no matter" 之後，接用由 "whether" 引導的子句也是可以的。這個 "how" 也可以換用 "what", "who", "which", "when", "where" 等疑問詞。至於 (b) 例中的 "however", 也可換用 "whatever", "whoever", "whichever", "whenever", "wherever" 等字，不過在 "-ever" 後的 "may", 在現今口頭英語中多採用直陳語氣，例如不說 Whoever it may be, 而改說 Whoever it is; 不說 Whichever you may choose, 而說 Whichever you choose 等等。因爲這種讓步句的比較古一點的說法，和上項相似，是用動詞開頭的，不過只限於用 "be" 一個動詞。在這種句法中，又可用 "ever so" 來代替疑問詞。

【類　例】

Whoever (=No matter who) may come, he will be welcome. (無論誰來都歡迎。)

It's a very fine house, whomever (=no matter whom) it belongs to. (這是一幢漂亮的房子，不管它是誰的。) 口語說 whoever.

Whatever (=No matter what) you (may) do, do it well. (不管你做什麼，都要好好的做。)

Whichever you (may) choose, you will be pleased. (隨便你選那一個，你都會滿意的。)

I will go, whatever the weather may be (=be the weather what it may). (不管天氣如何，我都會去的。)

Forgive her all her sins, be they ever so many. (=however many they may be). (完全赦免她的罪過吧，不管那有多少。)

Be it ever so humble (=However humble it may be), there's no place like home. (無論怎樣卑陋，還是自己的家舒服。)

Whatever be our fate, let us not add guilt to our misfortunes. (Goldsmith) (=whatever our fate may be). (不管我們的運命怎樣，我們不要在我們的不幸上面再加罪過了。)

The idle, useless man, no matter to what extent his life may be prolonged, merely vegetates. (那懶惰無用的人，不管他壽命多長，也不過是飽食終日，虛度一生。)

There is but one safe way for every young person starting in life, whatever the business may be. (不問是幹那一行的，對於每個開始出來謀生的青年人，只有一條安全的路好走。)

【習題98】

1. He taught all his young gentlemen to box like featherweights, no matter whether they weighed one hundred and five or two hundred and five pounds. (Hemingway)

2. However experienced you are, however competent, you never entirely conquer the difficulties of technique, and by the time you have learnt to write, it is very likely that you have nothing more to write about. (Maugham)

(99) "動詞＋as＋主語＋助動詞"

Try as you may, you will not succeed.
無論你怎樣去試，你也不會成功的。

【解　說】

這是以假設語氣現在動詞開始的讓步句，與(97)項的表現法一樣，也可以不用 "as" 而用疑問詞的 "how"，又與上項 "no matter＋間接疑問句" 的意思相同，故依照上項表現法改寫爲 No matter how you (may) try 時，意義仍然不變。從屬子句中的助動詞，常用 "may", "might", "will", "would" 這種表現法格調很高，是表示感情的。

【類　例】

I couldn't read it, try as I would. (Maugham) (我無論怎樣試，也讀不懂。)

I followed him, but, search as we would, we could find no trace of...(Christie) (我追踪了他，但是，無論怎樣搜尋，我們也找不到他的踪跡。)

【習題99】

1. Choose as I pleased, the roads always ended by turning away

from it. (=my destination) (Stevenson)

2. Try as she would, she could never remember a word of what he had said. (A. Huxley)

(100) "if any"

(a) He despises honour, *if any* one does.
世上果眞有人輕視名譽的話，他便是一個。

(b) He has little, *if any*, money.
他卽令有錢，也是極少的。

【解　說】

英文說的 "if any", "if ever", 意爲「果眞有或卽令有的話」(if there is〔are〕any at all), 是爲加強語氣而用的。如(a)例，意爲「如果世界上果眞有那種人的話」，如 (b)例則可譯爲「卽令有，也」，它通常是伴有 "little", "few", "seldom" 等准否定字的。與此形勢相近的還有 "if anything" 的說法，那意思是 "if at all" 或 "if there is any difference", 可譯爲「倘有異同」，「如果稍有區別的話」。還有 "if a day" 的說法，意爲 "at least".

【類　例】

Correct errors, if any. (=if there are any). (改錯。如果有什麼錯誤的話就改正。)

There are very few trees, if any. (卽令有樹也是極少的。)

There is little, if any, hope. (希望甚微。)

It occurs seldom, if ever (=seldom or never). (卽有其事，亦必不多。)

He is little, if at all, better than a beggar. (=little or no better than a beggar.) (殆與乞丐無異。)

There are few, if any, such men. (if there are any such men) (=few or no such men) (卽有其人，亦必不多。)

If anything, he is a little better today. (如果說有什麼不同，他比昨天略爲好了一點。)

He is, if anything, a shade better today. (他今天略爲好了一點。)

The carriages of the German State railways are, if anything, better than those of the large French companies. (德國國營鐵路的火車，倘有異同，比法國大公司的火車要好一點。)

If anything, a Judas is worse than a Nero. (如果要加以區別的話，猶大比尼羅更壞。)

True greatness has little, if anything, to do with rank or power. (真正的偉大是幾與地位或權力無關的。)

【習題160】

1. Though the French are little, if at all, inferior to the English either in boating or sailing, their taste for these pursuits are extremely limited.

2. If there is anything in the world that a young man should be more grateful for than another, it is the poverty which necessitates starting life under very great disadvantage.

(101) "be it ever (或 never) so"
"let it be ever (或 never) so"

Be it ever so humble, there's no place like home.
無論怎樣簡陋，還是自己的家好。

【解　說】

這個 "be it" 中的 "be"，是古代假設語氣的遺留，現在的英語便說 "let it be"。至於 "ever so" (其古形爲 "never so"，並無否定之意)，就是 "very" 的意思。這兩種說法都是表讓步的。在 "let" 後也可接其他的字句。

【類　例】

Let it be ever so humble, home is home. (無論怎樣簡陋，總是自己的家。)

A man thinking or working is always alone, let him be where he will. Solitude is not measured by the miles of space that intervene between a man and his fellows. The really diligent student in one of the crowded hives of Cambridge College is as solitary as a dervish in the desert. (Thoreau) (一個人在思想和工作時總是孤獨的，無論他在什麼地方都是一樣。孤獨是不能用介乎一個人和他朋友之間的空間的哩數來測量的。在哈佛大學的叢集如蜂窩的地方，勤讀的學生，也和沙漠中回教的和尚一樣的孤獨。)

Let it ever be so weak, there is nobody but loves his country. (無論國家怎樣的弱，沒有人不愛他的國家的。)

【習題101】

1. There is no living plant or animal, be it ever so common, that will not repay study, and provide, if intelligently observed, quite an interesting story.

2. Let his occupation be what it may, he must devote himself if he is to succeed

(102) "once"

Once you hesitate you are lost.

你要躊躇一下，你就完了。

【解　說】

這個 "once" 是接續副詞 (Conjunctive Adverb)，有「侯門一入深如海，從此蕭郎是路人」中的「一」的意思即「一度」(when once)，有時又可解釋爲 "as soon as" (隨即) 或 "whenever" (無論何時) 之意。

【類　例】

(When) once (it is) gone, you will never get it back. (一度失去了，再也找不回來。)

Once you begin, you must continue. (一經開始，你就得繼續下去。)

Once started, it was hard to stop. (一度開動了，就不容易停下來。)

Once (=If once) within call, we are safe. (一度進入叫喊能聽到的範

圈內，我們就安全了。）

Once you consent you are trapped. (一度你同意了，就上了圈套。)

It is to be explained perhaps by the fear that once foreign affairs become predominant, home affairs take a back place. (要加以說明的也許是擔心國外的事情一度佔優勢令人注意的話，國內的事情就要退居後位了。)

【習題102】

1. But their aloofness might have quite the same opposite result of that which they desire; for once (=when once) the crisis had arrived, home affairs would indeed be swamped.

2. Once you are married, there is nothing left for you, not even suicide, but to be good. (Stevenson)

(103) "were to",

If the sun *were to* rise in the west, I would not do so.
即令太陽從西邊出來，我也不做這樣的事。

【解　說】

在條件句中用的 "were to"，表示與未來的事實相反的假設，含有「萬一」之意，稍古一點的說法是用 "should"，意思一樣，不過 "were to" 比 "should" 不確實的意思更爲強烈，所以現代英語的普通口語，都用 "were to" 來取代 "should" 了。又在口語中如主語是單數時，連 "were to" 有時也更改成直接語氣的 "was to" 了，例如 If this collection was to be sold, it would fetch a lot of money. (D. Sayers)(這些蒐藏如果出賣的話，就可以得到一大筆錢。) If he was to come in at this moment, I should fall down on my knees in thankfulness. (L.P. Hartley), (他要是在此時走進來，我就會跪下來感謝的。) If I was to be shot for it, I couldn't. (就要殺我，我也不能。)

【類　例】

If he were to come, say that I am absent. (他若來了，只說我不在家。)

If I were to go abroad, I would go to Europe. (如果我有可能出洋的話，我就要到歐洲去。)

If he should (=were to) hear of your marriage, he would be surprised. (他要是聽到了你結婚的消息，他一定會驚異的。)

Even if you were to try, you wouldn't be able to do it. (Hornby) (即令你去試試，你也做不到的。)

If you were to start early tomorrow morning, you would (或 could, might, ought to, should) be at your destination by evening. (如果你明天早上早早動身的話，你就會在晚上達到目的地。)

If he were to call, tell him to wait. (如果他來訪時，要他等一下。)

He wouldn't do it unless you were to order him to. (除非你命令他做，否則他是不會做的。)

It would be appropriate if they were to blow a siren. (他們只要吹一下號角就對了。)

Supposing I were to die as I sit at this table, what would the difference be? (K. Mansfield) (即令我現在坐在這桌子上就是這樣死了，也不會有什麼不同呀。)

If anything were to happen to him the family would be left poorly off. (如果他發生了什麼事情，那一家人的衣食就成問題了。)

If you were to throw him to the lions, that would no doubt be persecution. (Shaw) (若是你把他投向獅子，那無疑就是迫害呀。)

Would it spoil it if I were to ask his name? (我要是問問他的名字不會壞事吧。)

【習題103】

1. If the sun were to be extinguished, the whole earth would be fast bound in a frost so terrible that every animal would die.

2. If we were to think that Mrs Gerard were right, my dear Judge, then we should quit you judging men and I analysing them, and we should follow her.

(104) 含有條件意味的字眼

(a) A *close* observer would have noticed it.
如果是一個細心的觀察者，就早注意到了。

(b) *With* his aid you would succeed in it.
有他幫忙，你就可以成功。

(c) You would do well *to write* more distinctly.
你要是再寫得清楚一點就好了。

【解 說】

英文表示假設的方法很多，並不一定要用明顯的條件句，如 (a) 例中用的一個形容詞 "close"，即含有 "if the observer had been close" 之意。(b) 例中的介詞 "with"，也含有 "if you had his aid" 之意。(c) 例中的不定詞 "to write"，也含有 "if you should write" 之意。此外其他的字，也都可以用為假設的。

【類 例】

Anybody *who* should do that (=if anybody should do that, he) would be laughed at. (任何人如果那樣做，就要被人笑的。) (關係代名詞)

I am otherwise engaged, *or* (=if I were not otherwise engaged) I would go myself. (我要不是因為有別的事，我就親自去了。) (連詞)

I would have let you know by letter, *but* there was no time. (=if there had been time). (我要有時間的話，我早就用信通知你了。) (連詞)

He said he would have done, *only* you treated him so off-hand. (=if you had not treated him so off-hand). (他說他本打算要做的，只是因為你待他太不客氣了。)(副詞)

Turning (=If you turn) to the right, you will find the house. (你向右轉去，就看見那房子了。)(現在分詞)

The book cannot be interesting, *judged* (=if it is judged) by its contents. (從內容上看來，這本書不會有趣的。) (過去分詞)

Your *refusal* to come (=If you should refuse to come, you) might give offence. (你要不到會得罪人的。) (名詞)

A *Chinese* (If he were a Chinese, he) would not do this. (這種事中國人是不會做的。)(名詞)

【習題104】

1. He would have paid more attention to a *pretty* girl.

2. *Without* history we should be at a loss to understand our presence on the earth either as a nation or as individuals.

3. He would be wrong *in* refusing to go.

4. *To hear* him talk, one would take him for a fool.

5. The same thing, *happening* in wartime, would amount to disaster.

6. *Born* in better times, he would have done credit to the profession of letters.

X. 形容詞副詞的造句

(105) "the＋形容詞"的兩種用法

(a) *The righteous* are bold as a lion.

正義之士，其勇如獅。

(b) *The beautiful* lives forever.

美是不朽的。

【解　說】

英文的"the＋形容詞"，可以等於複數普通名詞，也可以等於抽象名詞，即是單數的名詞。二者全看形容詞的性質而定，在字面上是看不出來的。如(a)例所示，"the righteous" 爲 "righteous people" 之意。說 "the righteous" 是複數，單數要說 "a righteous man"。最常見的這種用法有 "the rich"＝rich people. "the poor"＝poor people. 如 (b) 例所示，則完全不同了。"the beautiful"＝beauty. 是一個抽象名詞，這是近乎文言的語法。英詩人 Keats 的名句 A thing of beauty is a joy forever. (美的東西是永遠的喜悅)，和上舉例句意思相近。他例如 "the

sublime"=sublimity. 這兩種用法也可適用於 "the+現在分詞" 及 "the+過去分詞", 不過不一定是等於複數普通名詞吧了。

現在且把這個 "the+形容詞(分詞)" 的用法分成四類來翻譯: (1) "...的人們", 如 *The sick* are here cared for. (病人們在這裏受到看護。) *The wounded* and *the dying* were rushed to hospital. (受傷的人們和垂死的人們被急送到醫院去了。) (2) "…的一個人", 如 *The deceased* was a great friend of mine. (死者是我的好朋友。) *The accused* was soon acquitted. (被告隨即就宣告無罪了。(3) "…的一切", 如 In the old society many readers loved *the sensational*. (在舊社會裏許多讀者愛好駭人聽聞的一切事情。) He has no eye for *the beautiful*. (他沒有審美的眼光。) (4) "…的一件事", 如 *The unexpected* always happens. (意料不到的事常會發生。天有不測風雲。) *The inevitable* was not long in coming. (那不可避免的事不久就發生了。)

在 "the" 與形容詞之間還可以再加形容詞, 用法不變, 如 "the leisured rich" (有閑的濶人們), "the hungry poor" (飢餓的窮人們), "the aged poor" (年老的窮人們), "the bereaved poor" (孤苦無依的窮人們) 等等。

【類 例】

The beautiful is higher than the true. (美高於眞。)

Confucius did not talk of the supernatural. (子不語怪力亂神。)

The oppressed and the exploited looked forward to their liberation. (被壓迫的人們和被剝削的人們盼望得到解放。)

The rich are apt to look down on the poor. (濶人常要輕視窮人。)

The power of fortune is acknowledged by the unhappy; for the happy impute all their success to their merits. (運命的力量爲不幸者所承認; 因爲幸福的人把他們一切的成功都歸於他們自已的實力。)

The living may have less to say to us than the dead. (現在活着的人也許沒有死去的人那樣多的話要對我們說的吧。)

Local government was generally regarded as a hobby of the well-

to-do and the retired.(地方政治一般認爲是富裕的人和退休的人所有的癖好。)

The deceased was 102 years of age.(死者有一百零二歲。)

The accused held back the names of his partners.(被告不肯說出同謀者的名字來。)

The sublime is in a grain of dust.(一粒塵土之中也有崇高的東西。)

In their education the useful has of late been encroaching on the ornamental.(近來在他們的教育上,有用的東西侵入到裝飾的東西當中去了。)

By nature she had a taste for the gorgeously beautiful.(她生性愛好華美。)

We are apt to accept the obvious too easily. (我們輕易要接受明顯的東西。)

Adventure allows the unexpected to happen to us.(冒險引起意外。)

In an attempt to explain the unknown, primitive man fashioned various kinds of superstitions.(爲着想要說明未知的東西,原始人作出各種各樣的迷信來。)

The poet had an ardent yearning for the supernatural. (詩人憧憬超自然的東西。)

【習題105】

1. It is generally the idle who complain they cannot find time to do that which they fancy they wish.

2. There is but a step from the sublime to the ridiculous. (Napoleon)

(106) 最上級形容詞含有 even 之意

The shortest cut would take us five hours to get there.

卽令走捷徑也要五小時才能到達。

【解　說】

英文這種 "the+最上級" 的形式,不宜只照字面翻譯爲「最」,因爲其中包含得有 "even" 的意味,應譯爲「卽令」,「那怕是」等才對。

【類 例】

The best brewer sometimes makes bad beer. (即令是最好的釀造家，有時也不免要造出壞啤酒來。)

The lion's roar will strike terror to the bravest heart. (聽到獅吼，那怕是非常勇敢的人也不免要驚恐。)

There is no smallest doubt about it. (毫無疑惑。)

This does not concern me in the least. (毫無關係。)

It fulfilled every faintest hope. (那怕是極微的希望都試過了。)

【習題106】

1. By the law of nature the stream will run down, and the strongest man cannot stop it.

2. The industrial arts are necessary arts. The most degraded savage must practise them and the most civilized genius cannot dispense with them.

(107) "the＋比較級…the＋比較級"

The richer a man is, *the greedier* he gets.

人越有錢越是貪婪。

【解 說】

這是一種複句 (Complex Sentence)，前爲附句，後爲主句，故第一個(附句中的) "the"＝in whatever degree; to what extent，爲關係副詞，而第二個(主句中的) "the"＝in that degree; to the extent，則爲指示副詞。在主句中有時可用 "do" 以加重語氣，如 The farther we proceed, the more difficulties *do* we meet. (我們愈前進，遭遇的困難愈多。) 這個 "do we meet" 是強調，不是倒裝。這種複句，常用省略的說法，如 The sooner, the better. (愈快愈好。) 是略去了主語和動詞的。The nearer the bone, the sweeter the meat. (愈靠近骨頭的肉其味愈美。) 是略去動詞的。More haste, worse speed. (欲速則不達。) 是

略去副詞的。有時又可把主句放在附句的前面去，如 I sing the worse, the more I practise. (=The more I practise, the worse I sing.) (愈練習愈唱得壞。)

【類　例】

The sooner he comes, the happier I shall be. (他愈早來，我愈高興。)

The more he gets, the more he wants. (愈有愈貪。)

The more he flatters, the less I like him. (他愈逢迎我愈不喜歡他。)

The stone gets the harder, the longer it is exposed to the weather. (愈是在空氣中暴露得久，石頭變得愈硬。)

The higher a mountain is, the more people like to climb it; the more dangerous the mountain is, the more they wish to conquer it. (山愈高，人愈愛爬山；山愈危險，人愈想克服它。)

My experience has led me, the longer I live, to set the less value upon mere cleverness. (因爲經驗增長的關係，年齡愈大，我對單是聰明愈覺得沒有什麼價值。)

The more things a man is interested in, the more opportunities of happiness he has, since if he loses one thing he can fall back upon another. (人對愈多的事物發生興趣，便愈多獲得幸福的機會，因爲他失去對一件事物的興趣，又可從另外一件事物上獲得興趣。)

The more complex his material, the greater must be his art. (作家的材料愈是複雜，他的技術愈要偉大。)

The nearer the train approached the scene, the drearier became the aspect. (火車愈接近現場，那光景愈加可怕。)

【習題107】

1. Lying on the grass, he looked straight up into the sky. It was very blue, and the longer he looked, the higher it seemed to look.

2. A great part of our lives is occupied in reverie, and the more imaginative we are, the more varied and vivid this will be. (Maugham)

(108) "the＋比較級＋理由"

I like him all *the better for* his faults.

因爲他有缺點，我更加喜歡他。

【解　說】

這個表現法是只用一個 "the＋比較級"，後面就接上表理由的 "for", "because", "on account of", "owing to"等，具有「更加」的意思。常出現的爲 "all(或much)the＋比較級" 的形式，這個 "all" 或 "much" 是爲加強語氣而用的，可以不必譯出。句中的 "the"＝to that degree.

成語說的 "none the less" (依然。但仍不失爲。) 如 He has faults, none the less he is the best student of the class. (他有缺點，但仍不失爲這班上最好的學生。) 實有「雖然如此」(nevertheless) 之意，也和本項爲同一用法。

有時可將說理由的字句省略，而在別的地方表示出那個理由來，如 I *said nothing*, which made him all the more angry. (我一言不發，使他更爲生氣。) We are apt to *undervalue the purchase* we can not reach, to conceal our poverty the better. (我們常有將自己買不起的東西過低估價的傾向，藉以隱藏我們的貧窮。)

【類　例】

We do not like him the less *because* he has faults. –We like him none the less *for* his faults. –*He has faults*, but we do not like him the less. –We do not like him the less *on that account*. (我們並不因他有缺點，而較少喜歡他。)

If he doesn't understand English, it is all the better for you. (如果他不懂英語，那對你更好呀。)

The danger makes the sports only the pleasanter. (那運動因有危險而更加有趣。)

He is the worse for drink. (他喝醉了。)

We should not think the worse of a man because he is ill-dressed.

(我們不應因人衣服襤褸而藐視其人。)

I think none the worse of him because he accepted their offer. (他接受了他們的建議,我並不因此就對他不尊敬了。)

The coat is much the worse for wear. (那上衣穿得很破了。)

He won't come.—So much the better. (他不來更好。)

I am the more inclined to help him, because he is poor. (因爲他窮,我更加想要幫助他。)

It is none the less true because it sounds strange. (聽來很怪,却是眞的。)

It is all the more dangerous for not being generally recognized as such. (一般不認爲危險的,反而更加危險。)

You may be as neat as you please and I shall love you the better for it; but this is not neatness, but frippery. (Goldsmith) (你們照自己的意思弄整潔就好了,那樣我會更加愛你們的,但照現在這樣,並不是整潔,而只是矯飾〔俗麗〕而已。)

【習題108】

1. Indulged in to excess, reading becomes a vice—a vice all the more dangerous for not being generally recognized.

2. I think one of the most useful discoveries I ever made was how easy it is to say "I don't know". I never noticed that it made anyone think the worse of me. (Maugham)

(109) "the last…+不定詞"
"the last…+形容詞子句"

(a) He is *the last* man *to accept* a bribe.
他決不是受賄賂的人。

(b) He is *the last* man *I wanted to see*.
他是我最不願見的一個人。

【解　說】

句中的 "last" 爲 "the least likely" 的意思,是否定地加以推論的

想法。譯爲「最不大可能的」,「最不適的」。由原意的「最後去做」,變成「決不去做」。

【類　例】

He is the last man to do such a thing. (他決不做這樣的事。)

You should be the last man to wish it. (你決無希冀此事之理。)

I should be the last man to speak lightly of the profession of a clergyman. (我決不輕視牧師的職務。)

The very last thing of which man can make his boast is his knowledge. (人類對自己的知識是決難誇口的。)

That is the last thing one would expect. (那是一種最不可能預期到的東西。)

The author should be the last man to talk about his work. (作者最不宜討論他的作品。)

Money is the last thing he wants, and you won't succeed by offering it. (他決不要錢,你想用錢去買動他是決不會成功的。)

You are the last person I was going to see. Why did you come to see me? (你是我決不想要會見的人。你爲什麼要來見我?)

Romantic is the last thing I am. (我決不是浪漫的人。)

Certainly the last thing an Englishman should despise is poetry. (一個英國人決不會輕視詩歌的。)

【習題109】

1. He was the last man in the world to suffer his authority to be set at naught.

2. A pretext was the last thing that Hastings was likely to want. (Macaulay)

(110) "so+形容詞(副詞)+that"
"so+動詞+that"

(a) This coffee is *so hot that* I cannot drink it.
這咖啡太燙,我不能喝。

(b) He ran *so fast that* nobody could catch him up.
他跑得那樣快，誰也趕不上他。

(c) It *so happened that* he was not at home.
他碰巧不在家。

【解　說】

在"so"後接形容詞或副詞的，是表示因果關係，"so"以下表原因，"that"以下表結果。在"so"後接副詞的，多是用來表程度的。在"so"後如接動詞，就是表方法、狀態、程度或目的的。This coffee is so hot that I cannot drink it.＝This coffee is too hot (for me) to drink. 在"so＋形容詞(副詞)"後不接"that"引導的子句，而接不定詞也是可以的，不過要用關係副詞連起來，如 He was so angry that he could not speak. 一句可改為 He was so angry *as* to be unable to speak.

【類　例】

The world is probably so made that men are unable to live without loving others. (大概這個世界上的人是非愛他人就不能生活的。)

It is so easy that a boy can learn it. (那非常容易，小孩子都能學會。)

Man is so created that he lives with woman. (男人是被造來和女人共同生活的。)

He so handled that matter that he won (=as to win) over his opponents. (他爲着贏得反對者的支持，而把事情那樣處理了。)

He spoke so rapidly that we could not clearly understand him. (他說話太快，所以我們沒有能够完全聽懂。)

Those ponds and streams are so small that they cannot be shown in your maps. (那些池塘和小溪，因爲太小，所以地圖上沒有。)

They were so close (that) I heard every word. (他們很靠近我，所以他們說的每個字我都聽到。)美國口語略去"that"一字。

His income is so small that he can not support his family. (他收入太少，不能養家。)

These shoes are so small that I cannot put them on. (這雙鞋太小，我不能穿。)

It was so cold that we lost the use of our hands. (太冷,我們手都不能動了。)

He had lived so long in the east that he had got out of English ways. (他在東方住得太久,所以英國的生活習慣都忘記了。)

The orange was so sour (that) I couldn't eat it. (橙太酸我不能吃。)

I was so astonished that I could not utter even a word. (我吃驚得說不出話來了。)

The current was so strong that he could not swim against it. (水流太急,他不能逆泳。)

He spoke English so fluently that everyone was astonished. (他英語說得那樣流利,大家都嚇倒了。)

The streets were so crowded that our car had to go very slowly. (街上太擁擠,汽車只好慢慢的走。)

Explanations were of no use because he was so prejudiced that he would not listen to reason. (說明對他無用,因爲他不肯聽從道理。)

【習題110】

1. I do not think anyone writes so well that he cannot learn much from Fowler's Dictionary. (Maugham)

2. Many foods are never so cheap that the poorest people can afford to eat them.

3. May we so live that our children's children may look upon us as having set them an example. ("may＋主語＋原形不定詞"是祈願句法。)

(111) "so that"

So that it is done, I don't care who does it.

只要做好就行,我不管是誰做的。

【解　說】

這個 "so that"＝if only, so long as, provided that, 是表條件的,有時可將 "that" 省略。這是略帶古風的說法,但在美國語中用的很多,可譯爲「只要」,因係條件句,所以第三人稱單數的現在動詞上可以不加

(s), 例如 He can stay long so that he *catch* the train. (只要他能趕上火車, 儘可多呆一會。) 不過這種表條件的用法, 屬於古文體, 現在我們不宜採用。

除古文體表條件外, 現代英文又常用 "so that" 來表目的和結果。表目的的 "so that" = in order that, 後常接 "may" 及 "should", "would", "could" 等字, 口語則用 "can", 有時也可用單純過去代替 "might do"。如表目的時說 Switch the light on so that we can see what it is. (打開電燈, 好來看過究竟。) 表結果時則說 Nothing more was heard of him, so that people thought he was dead. (再也沒有聽到他的訊息, 因此人們以爲他死了。) 用單純過去時態的如 He went early so that he got a good seat. (他早早去所以佔到了一個好位子。) 比較:

He spoke clearly, so that everyone could hear. (結果)

He spoke clearly so that everyone might hear. (目的)

【類　例】

I'll write to him today so that he may know when to expect us. (我今天要寫信給他, 爲着要使他知道我們何時到達。)

They are climbing higher so that they may get a better view. (他們爬得更高, 以便看得更遠。)

School was closed early in order that the children might go home ahead of the storm. (學校早早下課, 以便學生在暴風雨前回家。)

We put up a fence so that the neighbors should not overlook us. (我們搭一個圍牆, 以免鄰居看見我們。)

He slammed the door so that his mother would know he was home. (他把門砰的一聲關上, 好讓他母親知道他回來了。)

Speak up so that the students sitting in the back of the room can hear you. (把聲音放大一點, 以便坐在後面的學生可以聽到。)

They are hurrying so that they won't miss the train. (他們匆忙趕去, 以免脫車。)

All precautions have been taken, so that we expect to succeed. (一切準備妥善, 因此我們期待成功。)

You may keep the book, so that you bring it back in good condition. (只要你不弄壞還來，你可以把這本書借去閱讀。)

To find her (=Megan) again he knew he had only...to take train himself and go back to the farm, so that she found (=might found) him there when she returned. (Galsworthy, The Apple-Tree) (爲要找到美阿他知道他只有自己搭火車回農場去，她若回家了，就會到農場來看他的。)

Put the butter in the icebox, so that it may (will) not get soft. (把牛油放在冰箱中就不會軟化。)

Come early so that you may get a good seat. (早來可以佔到好位子。)

So that it be done, it matters not how. (只要能做成，不管用什麼方法。)

So that it is true, what matters who said it? (只要確實，管它是誰說的。)

I got up early so that I might be in time for the first train. (我爲着要趕上頭班車，故特早起。) *Cf.* I got up so early that I was in time for the first train. (因我早起，故趕上了頭班車。) 前句表有意志的目的，後句表無意志的結果。

【習題111】

1. I warned him so that he might avoid the danger.

2. Society is not very particular what a man does, so that it prove him to be a man.

3. To him it was indifferent who was found guilty so that he could recover his money

(112) "so much so that"

He is very ignorant *so much so that* he cannot read his own name.

他非常無知，甚至連自己的名字都不認識。

【解 說】

在 "so much so that" 中，第一個 "so" 是承接 "that" 以下的，與前

面說過的表因果關係的"so that"的用法一樣;第二個"so"是爲避免重複起見,用來代表前面那個敍述形容詞的,在上例中卽代表"ignorant"一字。至於"much"便是爲免除兩個"so"連在一塊兒而插入其間,作爲緩衝的字眼,所以結局在本句中就等於說"so ignorant that"一樣。全句可解釋爲 He is very ignorant *to that extent or degree so that* he cannot read his own name. 如果後面不接"that"所引導出來的子句,而改用不定詞時,則爲 He cannot so much as (=even) read his own name. 或整個說出來 He is very ignorant so much as to read his own name.

【類　例】

The invalid was very tired when he returned from the ride; so much so that he could not sit up. (病人坐車回家時非常疲倦,疲倦得甚至不能坐起來。)

Ships were built, and kept thoroughly efficient, so much so that the country remained safe for very many years. (兵艦造起來了,發揮充份的效率,那樣,使國家永保太平無事。)

The first born was greatly privileged—so much so that the equal inheritance by two or more offspring was totally denied. (長子被給與很大的特權,至於由兩個或更多的兒子來平等地繼承遺產的事是完全被否認了。)

He is poor—so much so that he can hardly get enough to live. (他很窮,窮得幾乎無以爲生。)

All parts of the British Isles are noted for their dampness, and Ireland so much so that the people of Ireland have this saying," In England, it rains all day; in Scotland, it rains all night; but in Ireland, it rains both day and night." (不列顛羣島各地以潮濕著名,愛爾蘭亦復如此,所以愛爾蘭人有這樣的說法,「在英格蘭整天下雨,在蘇格蘭整夜下雨,但在愛爾蘭,日日夜夜都下雨」。)

【習題112】

1. It is very fierce and savage—so much so that the natives dread it more than they do the lion.

2. But is not the fear of death natural to man? So much so, Sir, that the whole of life is but keeping away the thoughts of it. (Dr Johnson)

(113) "such...as"
"such...that"

(a) It is *such* an easy book *as* he can read.
這是他能讀的一本容易的書。

(b) It is written in *such* easy English *that* he can read it.
這是用淺易英文寫的書，所以他也能讀。（結果）
這是用他也能讀懂的那樣淺易的英文寫的。（程度）

【解 說】

英文的 "such...as" 是表程度的，而 "such...that" 則可表結果，也可表程度。(a) 例中的 "as" 是關係代名詞，也是 "read" 的賓語，所以不要說成 "read it"。(b) 例中的 "such...that" 與 "so...that" 同義，所不同的是 "such＋(形容詞＋)名詞＋that" 而 "so＋形容詞(副詞)＋that"，這個 "that" 是連詞，所以在 "read" 後必須有一個賓語 "it"。

【類 例】

It was such a cold night that we all kept indoors. (那天夜裏冷極了，我們都沒有出門。)

The children were having such a good time that their mother hated to call them in. (孩子們玩得非常開心；母親不忍叫他們回家。)

Let us discuss such things as (＝those things which) we can talk of freely. (讓我們討論一些我們可以自由談論的事吧。)

This book is written in such easy English as beginners can understand. (這本書是用初學者也能讀懂的淺易英文寫的。)

This book is written in such easy English that beginners can understand it. (這本書是用淺易英文寫的，所以初學者也能讀懂。)

I don't know whether he is really such a great scholar as people

say.（我不曉得他是否眞如世人所說的一個大學者。）

The silkworm is an animal of such acute and delicate sensation that too much care cannot be taken to keep its habitation clean, and to refresh it from time to time with pure air.（蠶是一種感覺銳敏而纖細的生物，要注意儘量地保持它居處的清潔，時時使它獲得新鮮空氣。）

It was the discovery of this extraordinary fact by generations of people long dead that made the greatness of such works as those of Shakespeare, of Dante, or of Goethe. (L. Hearn)（使莎翁，但丁，或歌德的作品變得那樣偉大的，是由於老早就死了的多少代的人們，發現了這個異常的事實的原故。）注意：上半句爲 "the discovery of this fact by people" 的加重語氣的說法。"made the greatness of" 意爲「使之變成偉大」。

For the man sound in body and serene of mind there is no such thing as bad weather: every sky has its beauty, and storms which whip the blood do but make it pulse more vigorously. (G. Gissing)（對於一個身體健全，精神平靜的人，是沒有壞天氣的；無論什麼天氣都有它的美麗，激勵血液的暴風雨，只會使脈膊跳動得更加活潑。）"do but make" = only make.

He was no more than skin and bone, was partly paralysed, and wore spectacles of such unusual power, that his eyes appeared through the glasses greatly magnified and distorted in shape. (R.L. Stevenson)（他只剩下皮包骨，半身不遂，戴着非常深度的眼鏡，使他的眼睛經過鏡子看去，大爲擴大，且變得奇形怪狀。）

【習題113】

1. My father, I do not know why unless he was drawn by some such restlessness for the unknown as has consumed his son, went to Paris and became solicitor to the British Embassy. (Maugham)

2. Books did not much attract him; when he opened one he was sure to come upon something or other which took such possession of his thoughts, or so affected his imagination, that he went off into dreaminess, and for that day he read no more. (G. Gissing)

(114) "比較級+than"
"more+原級+than"

(a) He is *bolder than* his brother.
他比他的兄弟要大膽些。

(b) He is *more bold than* strong.
與其說他剛強,不如說他大膽。

【解 說】

(a) 例的 "bolder than" 是形容詞的普通比較級,對同一性質來比較其不同的程度或大小,至於(b)例,則是將不同性質加以比較,其中的 "more" 有 "rather"(毋寧)的意思。普通比較級的形式雖爲 "-er than", 但有時只用 "-er" 也就够了,試看下面四句:

(1) This cord is strong*er than* that one.
(2) This cord is *a* strong*er one.*
(3) This cord is *the* strong*er one* of the two.
(4) This cord is *the* strong*er* (of the two).

注意不用 "than" 時冠詞的用法。當 "more" 用作 "rather" 之意時,就是比較同一人或同一物的兩種不同的性質,在 "than" 後可接形容詞,副詞,名詞,片語或子句等。

【類 例】

It is more than probable that he will fail. (十之八九,他會失敗。)

He has more than 10,000 dollars—more than enough. (他有萬元以上,綽有餘裕。)

He is more shy than unsocial. (他是害羞,不是不愛社交。)

His mother is more kind than intelligent. (他母親不是聰慧,而是和藹。不是智者,而是仁人。)

He is more witty than wise. (與其說他聰明,不如說他機智。)

He is more dead than alive. (與其說他活着,不如說他死了。)

He is more knave than fool. (與其說他蠢,不如說他壞。)

Li Yu was more of a poet than a king. (李煜與其說是一位國君，不如說是一位詞人。)

She was dressed more than simply. (他穿得豈只是樸素，簡直近乎破爛。)

I prayed to heaven in my heart that my boy, my more than son, might live. (Haggard) (我私自心裏禱告，求上蒼讓我的兒子，我那心肝兒子，活下去吧。)

Oh, great Sciolto! Oh, my more than father. (啊，偉大的西奧圖！啊，我那單說是父親還嫌不足的親愛的人。)

Friend of my bosom, thou more than a brother,/Why wert not thou born in my father's dwelling? (Charles Lamb) (我的知交，你勝過親兄弟，你爲何不生在我父親的家裏？)

During the last fifty years the short story has developed in scope and variety more rapidly than during the preceding five centuries. (J. Hadfield) (在過去五十年中，短篇小說的視野和變化，比以前五百年都要更迅速地發達了。)

Public opinion is always more tyrannical towards those who obviously fear it than towards those who feel indifferent to it. A dog will bark more loudly and bite more readily when people are afraid of him than when they treat him with contempt, and the human herd has something of this same characteristic. (B. Russell) (輿論常是對於顯明地怕它的人比毫不介意它的人更要殘暴。狗對於怕它的人要大吠並隨時準備來咬，對於輕蔑它的人，它就沒有這樣，人類也多少具有這同樣的特質。)

【習題114】

1. Smike, more dead than alive, was brought in and locked up in a cellar. (Dickens)

2. He did not taken the fever, after all;he was more frightened than hurt.

3. I have noticed that when someone asks for you on the telephone and, finding you out, leaves a message begging you to call him up the moment you come in, and it's important, the matter is more often important to him than to you.

(115) **"more...than＋can"**

He earns *more* money *than* he *can* spend.

他賺的錢，他用不完。

【解　說】

這個表現法是不能照字面來翻譯的。在"more than"以後的文句，英文雖是肯定，但中文必須翻爲否定。這和其他接子句或接單字、片語的有所不同。注意在後接的子句中常用"can"的助動詞，當然也有不用"can"而用別的動詞的。在"more...than...can"時，意爲「達到不可能的程度」；在"more than...can"時，意爲「簡直不可能」。

【類　例】

He has more books than he can read. (=He cannot read all his books.)（他藏書多到他不可能讀完的程度。）

That is more than I can tell. (=I cannot tell that.)（那我簡直不懂。）

How he manages to live is more than I can tell. (=above my comprehension)（他怎樣生活的，我簡直猜不透。）

It is more than flesh and blood can bear.（這非血肉之軀所能忍受。）

His insolence is more than I can stand.（他的無禮我受不了。）

The beauty of the place is more than I can describe.（那地方景色之美，非筆墨所能形容。）

I don't do more than I can help.（能夠不做的我便不做。）

【習題115】

1. So many mothers and fathers died that there were more orphans than the asylum could possibly take care of.

2. We all complain of the shortness of time, and yet we have more than we know what to do with.

(116) **"more than＋動詞"**

This *more than satisfied* me

這使我十二分的滿意。

【解　說】

這是在文法上破格的造句法，把 "more than" 放在動詞之前，是表示就用更強意的動詞也無妨，用英文說時則爲 "to do more than to"，可譯爲「深爲」，「豈特」，「十二分的」等。

【類　例】

He more than hesitated to promise that. (他對於答應那件事，豈特是躊躇而已(簡直是拒絕了)。)

Morê is meant than meets the ear. (Milton) (有言外之意。)

Rose's cheeks were more than touched by the sun. (Gissing) (露絲的面頰深受太陽的傷害。)

He has more than repaid my kindness. (他豈只是報答了我的幫助而已。)

She was more than pleased with her daughter's performance. (她對女兒的演奏十二分的高興。)

I prefer autumn to spring. What we lose in flowers we more than gain in fruits. (比春天我更要喜歡秋天。我們失去春花而以秋果補償綽綽有餘。)

【習題116】

1. He more than smiled, he laughed outright. (Rowe)
2. He is more than pleased with the result.

(117) "less...than"

During the week he saw *less* of her *than* usual.
在那一星期內，他比平常要少見到她。

【解　說】

英文的 "less...than" 是低一級的比較，意爲「較少」，「較差」，「不及」，「不如」。"A is less...than B" 略等於 "A is not so...as B" 的說法。這個 "less" 作形容詞用時較爲易譯，作副詞用時，則較難譯。下面是 "less" 與 "more" 用法的比較：

Proof-reading is *not interesting*, still *less* so when it is one's own work.

Proof-reading is *uninteresting*, still *more* so when it is one's own work.

【類 例】

He was less hurt than frightened. (他受的傷不如嚇的厲害。)

I regard him less as my teacher than as my friend. (我把他看做朋友,甚過我把他看做老師。)

You're more of a scholar than he is, but you've got less common sense. (作爲一個學者你在他以上,就常識而論則你不如他。)

She eats less than a bird. (她吃得太少。)

He'll be back in less than no time. (他將馬上回來。)

His lecture left me less than satisfactory. (他的演講怎也不能使我滿意。)

This razor runs less of a chance of getting cut. (這把剃刀差不多不可能割破臉。)

Father understood less of money matter than a child. (父親對錢的事比小孩還要不懂。)

If you smoke cigars or a pipe, you're still risking cancer. But a good deal less than you are if you stick to cigarettes. (你抽雪茄或煙斗,還是有得癌症的危險,不過比抽紙煙的危險性少得多了。)

He observed with interest the errors of her face and figure, the thin underlip, too heavily penciled eyebrows, and her legs less than slim although not actually skinny. (他頗感興趣地望着她面孔和身體上的一些缺點,那太薄的下嘴唇,畫得太濃的眉毛,和她那瘦弱的雙腿,雖然沒有達到皮包骨的程度。)

【習題117】

1. A man less thick-witted than the skipper might have been forgiven if he were bewildered by Neilson's words. (Maugham)

2. Learning is, in too many cases, but a foil to common sense,

a substitute for true knowledge. Books are less often made use of as "spectacles" to look at nature with, than as blinds to keep out its strong light and shifting scenery from weak eyes and indolent dispositions. (W. Hazlitt)

(118) "much more"
"much less"

(a) He likes a child, *much more* a baby.
他喜歡小孩，更加喜歡嬰孩。

(b) He does not like a child, *much less* a baby.
他不喜歡小孩，更加不喜歡嬰孩。

【解　說】

例句中 (a)(b) 兩種表現法，都有「更加」的意思，不過用法不同罷了。(a) 是用於肯定句之後，表程度的增加，(b) 是用於否定句之後，表程度的減少。(a) 表更多，(b) 表更少。"much" 改爲 "still" 還是一樣。(a)可譯爲「更加」，「當更」。(b) 可譯爲「遑論」，「何況」。所謂否定後接 "much less"，肯定後接 "much more" 的說法，也不過是最基本的用法吧了。在文人筆下，即令是肯定句，如含有否定意時，也可接 "much less"；至於在否定的陳述之後，用 "much more" 的也不是沒有。這個 "much less" 普通有 "not to speak of" 之意，故上面把它譯作「遑論」。在 "it is impossible" 後不接 "much less"，而要接 "much more"，卽有 "much more impossible" 之意。

【類　例】

It would be impossible for any American much more an American who was stupid and provincial to gain their confidence. (Whitford)
(任何美國人，尤其是愚笨而粗俗的美國人，更不可能獲得信任。)

It is scarcely imaginable how great a force is required to stretch, still more break, this ligament. (Curme) (要把這條韌帶拉長，尤其是要把它拉斷，需要多大的力量，簡直不可想像。)

I like music, much more dancing. (我喜歡音樂,更加喜歡跳舞。)

I don't like music, much less dancing.(我不喜歡音樂,更不喜歡跳舞。)

I do not even suggest that he is negligent, much less that he is dishonest. (我甚至沒有暗示說他怠忽,更沒有說他欺詐。)

If you must work so hard, how much more must I? (你尙且如此刻苦,我一定要更加努力才行。)

No other country accepted the proposal, much less acted upon it. (沒有別的國家接受那個提案,更沒有那個國家採取行動的。)

Every one has a right to enjoy his liberty, still more his life. (人人都有享受自由的權利,生命更加如此。)

Not all verse is poetry; not all prose about the past is history, nor is all literary work literature. The discrimination is habitually applied to other subjects, and clearly it is the quality which is decisive, not the quantity, scope or subject-matter, still less the popularity, of the work. (並非所有的韻文都是詩,並非所有關於過去的散文都是史,並非所有的著作都是文學。這種辨別常可應用到別的科目上,很明顯的,有決定性的,是那作品的質,而不是量,也不是它的範圍或題材,更不是它的聲望。)

【習題118】

1. One would not wish to visit the white mountains in winter, still less would he be willing to live there in that season.

2. If worship even of a star had some meaning in it, how much more might that of a Hero (Carlyle)

(119) "would sooner (rather)...than"
"would as soon...as"

(a) I *would sooner* (rather) die *than* disgrace myself.

(b) I *would as soon* die *as* disgrace myself.

我寧死不受辱。

【解 說】

這表現法中的"would"是表願望的,與"wish (to)"相同。句中的

"soon" 也不作「早」,「快」解,而是「願意地」,「高興地」(readily, willingly) 的意思,(a)例中的 "sooner" 爲比較級,結局與 "rather" 同義。英文的 "rather" 原來是 "rathe (=early, soon)" 的比較級,不過現在只剩下 "rather" 一字,但仍保持它比較級的作用。(b) 例中的 "would as soon die as",是用的平等比較,一般的情形誰也不希望死,所以這句話的意思是希望與那同樣的程度,結局也是 "would sooner...than" 的意思。"would sooner (rather)" 可譯爲「寧願」,"than" 以下便要譯成否定。"rather than"=might as well...as.

【類　例】

He would sooner die than consent to such a plan. (他寧死也不肯同意這個計劃。)

The brave soldier would as soon die as yield to such an enemy. (那個英勇的軍人寧死也不肯屈服於這樣的敵人。)

What strikes me most is that here are three thousand young men, every one of whom would rather lose a game than play it unfairly. (最使我感動的是這裏的三千個青年,人人都寧肯比賽失敗,而不願作弊取勝。)

I would sooner die at once than live in this agony. (與其生存在這種苦痛中我寧肯早死的好。)

I would rather you came tomorrow than today. (我寧願你明天來。)

I would rather be deaf than blind (if I were to be either of them) (我寧願聾不願瞎。)

He would rather resign than take part in such dishonest business deals. (他寧肯辭職而不願參加做這種不正當的勾當。)

I would just as soon stay at home (as go). (我寧願呆在家裏。)

I would rather you remained here. (Dickens) (我寧願你留下不走。)

I would rather never allude to the past for it is very painful to me. (C. Doyle) (我不願再提到過去,因那使人痛苦。)

【習題119】

1. I asked if she would like a taxi. "No, I'd sooner walk, it's such a lovely day," she answered. (Maugham)

2. I'd as soon put that little canary into the park on a winter's day, as recommend you to bestow your heart on him! (Bronte)

(120) "no sooner...than"
"hardly...when"

(a) He had *no sooner* seen me *than* he ran off.
(b) He had *hardly* seen me *when* he ran off.
他一看到我就跑掉了。

【解 說】

這兩種表現法都是「隨即」的意思，表示兩種動作跟着發生，幾乎是同時的現象。我們要注意的是不可把兩個意義相同的表現法混亂，英美未受教育的人每每說成 "no sooner...when"，其實只須看 "sooner" 是比較級，當然是要接上 "than" 才通。這個 "hardly" 有時說成 "scarcely" 也是一樣，後接的 "when" 稍古的說法爲 "before"，意思不變。如用稍古的說法，將 "no sooner" 或 "hardly (scarcely)" 置於句首時，就要把主語和動詞顚倒過來，如 No sooner had he seen me 及 Hardly had he seen me. 這種說法在意義上沒有什麼不同，只是語氣上有些加強而已。與此同義的還有 "as soon as＋主語＋動詞"，"the moment (或 the instant)＋主語＋動詞"，及 "directly (或 immediately)＋主語＋動詞"。例如 As soon as (或 the moment 等) he saw me, he ran off. 還有在動名詞項下說過的 "on＋動名詞" 也有 "as soon as" 的意味；如 On arriving home he wired me. (他一到家就打電報給我了。)

【類 例】

No sooner had I started than it began to rain.＝Scarcely (Hardly) had I started when (before) it began to rain. (我一動身天就下雨了。)

Let me know directly (immediately) he comes. (他一來就請通知我。)

He ran away the moment (the instant) I came in. (我一進來他就逃了。)

I had scarcely started before a man came up to me and asked me

if he was right in thinking my name was so-and-so. (Maugham) (我甫出門就有一個人走過來問我是不是姓什麼的。)

Directly he had gone, she burst into great sobs. (他一走她就啜泣起來。)

The instant that we heard the sound, Holmes sprang from the bed, struck a match, and lashed furiously with his cane at the bell-pull. (Doyle) (我們一聽到有聲音，福爾摩斯就立刻從牀上跳將起來，擦燃一根火柴，用手杖去猛擊那鐘繩。)

I had no sooner opened the cage than out flew the little bird. (我一開籠小鳥就飛出去了。)

No sooner had I glanced at this letter than I concluded it to be the one of which I was in search. (我一見那信便知道正是我找尋的一封。)

No sooner had I come into contact with him than I determined to get to know him well. (我一接近他，馬上我就決心要和他做好朋友。)

【習題120】

1. No sooner had the thief perceived that than he sprang to his feet and took to flight.
2. Hardly had he started when the sky became overcast and down came the rain again.
3. The moment the door was opened, the dog flew to the chest.
4. As soon as a man begins to love his work then he will begin to make progress.

(121) "anything but"
"nothing but"
"all but"

(a) He is *anything but* a scholar.
他決非一個學者。

(b) He is *nothing but* a scholar.
他不過是一個學者。

(c) The boy *all but* fell into the well.

那孩子幾幾乎掉到井裏去了。

【解　說】

英文的 "anything but"＝never. "nothing but"＝only. "all but"＝almost, nearly 在這三種表現法中的 "but", 都有 "except"（除開）之意。"anything but" 意即「除此之外別的都是」, 是表強調的否定的。"否定字＋anything but"＝"nothing but", 意即「除此之外別的都不是」。至於 "all but" 是指 "everything short of", 所以結局是和 "almost", "nearly" 同義了。

【類　例】

He is anything but a scientist.（他決非科學家。）

I'm nothing but a student.（我不過是一個學生而已。）

A trouble of the eye all but drove me mad with fear of blindness.（Gissing）（我的眼痛使我生怕要瞎幾乎為之發狂。）

Famous as the actress may be, her manners are anything but gracious.（那女伶雖很有名然舉止欠佳。）

Strange to say, man is nothing but a bundle of habits.（說來奇怪, 人不過是一堆習慣而已。）

If nothing but plain common sense were admitted, we should have had little or no great poetry.（R. Lynd）（如果是普通常識以外什麼都不認可的話, 那末, 我們就不會有偉大的詩篇了。）

The house was all but completed when he was drafted and sent to the East.（那房子幾乎快落成了, 而他便受到徵召, 送往東方去了。）

It is anything but pure.（不純。）

His English is anything but correct.（他的英文錯誤百出。）

His English is all but correct.（他的英文幾乎是正確的。）

His English is nothing but correct.（他的英文只是不錯而已。）

He is anything but a fool.（他決不是傻子。）

He is all but a fool.（他幾乎可說是傻子。）

【習題121】

He wandered up and down among the crowd in anything but

a calm frame of mind.

2. Science is, I believe, nothing but trained and organized common sense.

3. Physical labour carried beyond a certain point is atrocious torture, and it has very frequently been carried so far as to make life all but unbearable. (Russell)

(122) "short of"
"be short of"
"nothing short of"

(a) *Short of* theft, I will do anything I can for you.
除了偷竊之外，我什麼都願爲你效勞。

(b) We *are short of* hands at present.
我們目下人手不够。

(c) His conduct was *nothing short of* madness.
他的行爲簡直是發了狂。

【解　說】

英文的 "short of"=except，是副詞的用法。在這前面常用的動詞有 "come"，"fall"，"run" 等，有「不足」，「欠缺」的意思，其 "of" 作 "from" 解。至於 "be short of" 及 "nothing (或 little) short of" 中的 "short of" 則爲形容詞，在 "be short of" 時意爲「不足」或「離開」，在 "nothing short of" 時意爲「完全」，用法仍有如副詞一般。

【類　例】

The result fell short of my expectation. (那結果出乎我所預料。)

The result was nothing short of my expectation. (那結果正如我所預料。)

Short of some tremendous accident or untoward event it could not be anything else. (除了是一件重大事件或不幸事件外，這不可能是別的事情。)

They were short of money. (他們缺少錢。)

They were still five miles short of their destination. (他們距目的地還差五哩。)

It was little (或 nothing) short of miraculous (或 a miracle). (這幾乎是奇跡。)

The arrow fell short of the mark. (矢未中的。)

We have run short of tea. (我們的茶葉不够了。)

He committed every crime short of murder. (他只差沒有殺人，什麼罪都犯了。)

We have reason to believe that our education falls short of what we should wish it to be. (我們有充分的理由相信，我國的教育還未達到我們所理想的境地。)

【習題122】

1. In this instance fame has fallen short of the truth.

2. Sleep was out of the question; for even if they dared to stay, they knew that to lie down on the ground was little short of certain death.

3. To impose a new civilization on an ancient culture is naturally a gigantic undertaking; and Japan can only be admired for attempting it, and having so well succeeded in accomplishing it. Could the achievement have been realized without losing some of the virtues of either civilization, it would be nothing short of a miracle.

(123) "ever so"

(a There are *ever so* many schools in Taiwan.

臺灣的學校非常的多。

(b) Be a man *ever so* rich, he ought not to be idle.

人無論怎樣有錢，也不可以懶惰。

【解　說】

在 (a) 例中的 "ever so"＝very; exceedingly, 可譯作「非常」，在

(b)例中的 "ever so", 便有讓步的意思, 等於說 "however", 有 "in or to whatever conceivable degree or extent 的意思, 可譯作「無論怎樣的」。這個 "ever so" 的古寫法是 "never so", 從字面看去好像意思相反, 其實完全同義, 例如英文名歌中有一句膾炙人口的句子, 便是用的古文說法: Home is home, be it never so humble. (=however humble it may be)。(無論怎樣卑陋, 家總是自己的好。)我們由下面三個句子可以看出文字演變的跡象來: (1) He looked never before so healthy [as then]. — (2) He looked never so healthy. — (3) He looked ever so healthy.

【類　例】

He is ever so strong. (他非常強壯。)

The patient is ever so much better. (病人好得多了。)

Betide what may, we will not despair, were the world never so unfriendly. (Carlyle) (無論發生什麼事情, 我們也不會絕望, 即令世界變得非常冷酷無情。)

I like it ever so much. (我非常喜歡它。)

Thank you ever so much for your kindness. (眞謝謝你的幫忙。)

No one will be vexed or uneasy, linger I ever so late. (無論我呆到好晚, 也沒有人討厭的。)

She's got ever so many books. (他有非常多的書。)

Let him be ever so bad, he has some good points. (Curme) (他雖很壞, 却也有他的好處。)

He was ever so tired. (=He was as tired as he could possibly be). (他非常疲倦。)

There is no place like home, be it never so homely. (即令很鄙陋, 還是自己的家好。)

Such a mean fellow, though never so rich, should not be admitted into society. (這樣卑鄙的人, 雖則有錢, 也不應允許他進入社交界。)

【習題123】

1. There he heard ever so many more voices, and it was noiser

than ever.

2. If my life's journey is to be along an easy road to success, I shall have no objection; if it is to be along a hard one, let it be ever so rough, I will make it smooth and gain my object nevertheless.

3. He is in error, though never so wise.

(124) "good and 的副詞用法"

The apples are *good and* ripe.
這些蘋果完全成熟了。

【解　說】

普通用 "and" 來連結兩個形容詞時，是表示兩個形容詞的對等作用，但第一個形容詞如果是 "good", "nice", "fine" 等字的話，當它和 "and" 結合起來時，便構成 "well" 或是 "nicely" 意味的副詞同等語了。在美國口語中，這種表現法用得很多，是作爲強意語(intensifier) 用的，例如 "good and sweet", "good and cold", "good and plenty" 等皆是，意爲 "very" 或 "thoroughly"，翻譯時應特別注意，不可把 "good and ripe" 譯成「又好又熟」，它的原意實爲 "well ripe" (熟透) 罷了。這個表現法普通都可改爲副詞，如 "nice and cool"＝nicely cool (涼爽)，"snug and warm"＝snugly warm (暖適)。在 COD 上將 "nice and" 解釋爲 "satisfactorily"。他例還有 "fine and", "lovely and", "bright and", "rare and", "big and" 等等。"lovely and warm"＝delightedly warm (溫暖)是女性用語。

【類　例】

I am good and tired. (我很疲倦。)

It's good and cold out. (外面很冷。)

When it was good and dark I slid out from shore before moonrise. (Mark Twain) (天完全黑了，我就在月亮出來以前從河岸上溜出去了。)

The boy was bad. Yes! He was good and bad. (那孩子壞呀。是的！他眞是很壞。)

The house stands nice and high.（那房子位置很高。）

The room was nice and cool.（房間涼爽。）

He's good and dead, he is. (Stevenson)（那傢伙死僵了。）

You're fine and strong, aren't you? (G. Eliot)（你孔武有力。）

You'll make yourself fine and beholden to Aaron. (G. Eliot)（你對愛倫要很感激才是。）

The place is nice and healthy.（那地方對健康很好。）

The dish is nice and warm.（菜熱的好吃。）

I was rare and hungry. (Stevenson)（我很飢餓。）

She would make thee rare and happy, Seth. (G. Eliot)（塞司，她會使你幸福的。）

【習題124】

1. The car is going nice and fast.

2. I wish your eyes would always flash like that, for it looks so nice and manly. (Doyle)

(125) "to one's＋感情名詞"
"to the＋感情名詞＋of"

(a) *To my* joy, he was quite free from danger.
令我高興的是他已脫險了。

(b) He has recovered, much *to the delight of* his friends.
他病好了，使得他的朋友們大爲歡喜。

【解　說】

這是表結果的副詞片語，句中的"to"就是表結果的介詞。這兩種形式和表感情的抽象名詞結合時，意爲「令人（喜、怒、哀、樂）的」。

【類　例】

I found to my horror that the man was mad.（我發覺那人已發了瘋大吃一驚。）

To my shame I must confess that I wronged you.（實在可羞恥，我

我必得自認錯怪了你。)

I found to my joy (=was rejoiced to find) that he was alive. (令人可喜的是他還活着。)

To our surprise (或 astonishment) he has succeeded. (他的成功使我們感到驚異。)

To my disappointment, I found that he had left this country. (聽說他已出國使我悵惘。)

So the matter has ended to the unspeakable relief of everybody. (事情如此了結，大家都非常安心了。)

She revenged herself to her heart's content. (她盡情報復了。)

The little animal, to the astonishment of the spectators, expired without showing any signs of pain. (使觀衆大吃一驚的是那個小動物竟一點痛苦的樣子也沒有就氣絕了。)

To her horror she saw clouds of smoke issuing from her master's nose! (使她大爲恐怖的是她看到一陣陣的煙從她主人的鼻孔中冒出來！)

【習題125】

1. And to his great surprise and sorrow, he saw that his dear old mother was seriously ill in bed, looking very pale and almost without consciousness.

2. One of the commonest faults of writing is the use of long and many-syllabed words when short, simple words would do as well. The greatest writers often do this, to their shame.

(126) "so far"
"so far as"
"so far as...is concerned"

(a) *So far* so good. (=Up to this point everything is satisfactory.)
到目前爲止一切良好。

(b) He isn't dead *so far as* I know.
據我所知他並未死。

(c) *So far as* his eyes *were concerned*, he was already an old man.

單就視力來說，他已經是一個老人了。

【解　說】

英文的 "so far" = so far forth = thus far, 意爲「到目前爲止」。"so far as" 與 "as far as" 同，照字面譯時爲「像…那樣遠」，如 We did not go so far as the bridge.（我們沒有走到橋那樣遠去」，引伸爲「就…而論」，如 So far as I know, he has not much money.（就我所知，他沒有很多的錢。）至於 "so far as...is concerned"，意爲「就關於…來說」，「別的不說，單就…來說」。"so far as I am concerned" = as for me.（就我個人來說）。"as far as" 由「距離」而變成「範圍」，"as far as" 是一個介詞片語(Preposition Phrase)，而 "so far as" 一般用作連詞片語 (Conjunction Phrase)，表程度或界限的 "in so far as"，則常用作連詞，如作介詞用是不合文法的 (ungrammatical)(MEU)。"so far as" 雖與 "as far as" 通用，但 "so far" 却與 "as for" 不同，"as for" 與 "as to" 一樣，是再提到已說過的事時用的，意爲「關於」，如 As for me, I think I'd rather stay at home.（至於我呢，則寧留在家裏。） As for news, I have little to say.（關於報導，無可奉告。）

【類　例】

So far you have been successful.（到目前爲止，你是成功了。）

In as far as it is an inspiration, it is a gift from Heaven. (A.A. Milne)（只要是靈感，就是天賜。）

If I understand your brother, he only means so far as your having some thoughts of marrying. (J. Austen)（就我所理解的來說，你的兄弟不過是說，只有你想着結婚的事。）

So far you are right.（到此爲止你是對的。）

Now that we have come so far, we may as well go all the way.（已經走了這麼遠，我們不難走完全程的。）

But so far there is no certainty as to the main starting grounds of the locusts. (Henry Jackson)（但是到現在爲止，我們還不知道蝗蟲主要的出發點在那裏。）

No casualties were reported thus far. (至今爲止還未接到死傷的報告。)

Very wisely, he did as she ordered, for as far as he knew the revolver might be loaded. (H. Horn) (很聰明地他照她吩咐的做了，因爲就他所知，那手鎗也許是上了子彈的。)

Man is a rational animal—so at least I have been told. Throughout a long life, I have looked diligently for evidence in favour of this statement, but so far I have not had the good fortune to come across it. (人是理性的動物——至少我聽說的是如此。通過長的生涯，我一直勤勉地在搜尋支持此說的證據，但至今爲止我沒有那般好運找到它。)

So far as the style is concerned (=as regards the style), it leaves very little to be desired. (僅就文章來說，幾乎無可指摘。)

The sun appears to take his daily course over the earth, while it is really the earth which moves. The sun, at least, so far as we are concerned, is standing still. (太陽好像是每天圍繞地球在走，而實際走動的却是地球。至少就我們地球上的人來說，太陽是屹立不動的。)

【習題126】

1. The man who enjoys watching football is so far superior to the man who does not.

2. As far back as history goes men have always had some knowledge of the facts of nature; and those nations, like the Egyptians and Chinese, which long ago had become highly civilized, had learnt a great deal, and must probably have known some things of which we are still ignorant.

3. So far as people who have no ear for music are concerned, it would be a waste of time and money for them to try to learn music.

4. The literature of the past is only of value in so far as it has significance today, just as history is only of use if it can throw a light upon the contemporary scene.

XI. 連詞的造句

(127) "and that"

Return to your work, *and that* at once.
回去工作，而且要馬上去。

【解　說】

這個 "and that" 應譯爲「而且」，是加強語氣的省略說法，如 You must tell him at once. 一句普通的話，加強語氣說時，便是 You must tell him, and tell him at once. 再簡略地說，便成爲 You must tell him, and that at once. 了。可知這個 "that" 是代表 "tell him" 的。一般都是將這個指示代名詞的 "that"，用來代表上文的全部或一部分，如例題的句子便是以 "that" 代表 "return to your work." 整個句子的。OED 上說，"Used emphatically, instead of repeating previous words or phrase. Preceded by *and* (rarely *but*), and referring, to something in the previous clause". 一般都是用 "and that" 的形式，不過如指前面的複數名詞時，也可說成 "and those"，例如 I have only three rings, and those not of the best. (and those＝and those three rings)。又如 With very short intervals of sleep, and those entirely filled with dreams. (Fielding)

【類　例】

The snow began to come down and that in earnest. (開始下雪了，而且下得很大。)

He makes mistakes, and that very often. (他弄錯，而且常常弄錯。)

He will come, and that soon. (他要來，而且馬上要來。)

I studied Greek and Latin, when I was young, and that at Oxford. (我年輕時學過希臘拉丁文，而且是在牛津大學學的。)

All men seek after happiness, and that without any exception. (所有的人都要追求幸福，且無例外。)

Every moment may be put to some use, and that with much more pleasure than if unemployed.(時時刻刻都是可加利用來做點什麼事的，而且比不做事更爲快樂。)

He speaks English, and that very well. (他會說英語，而且說得很好。)

The ostrich swallowed a stone, and that a considerably big one. (鴕鳥吞下了一個石頭，而且是一個相當大的石頭。)

【習題127】

1. They alone have the right to change it, and that only in a particular way. (James Bryce)

2. I have tried in vain to account for the fact that with their absurd habits of eating and indolence, the German students can study so many hours and that to extreme old age.

(128) "at once...and"

The novel is *at once* pleasing *and* instructive.

那部小說既有趣又有益。

【解 說】

普通說 "at once" 的意思是「立刻」(immediately)，如 She told him to leave the room at once. (她要他立刻離開那房間。)但這個 "at once"也可作「同時」(at the same time) 解，尤其是後面跟得有 "and" 時爲然，例如 Do not all speak at once. (不要大家同時說話。) 英文的 "at once A and B" 與 "both A and B" 同義，都是所謂相關連詞 (Correlative Conjunction)。

【類 例】

I was at once (=both) comforted and terrified by this thought. (這樣一想既安心而又恐懼。)

His father was at once strict and kindly. (他父親又嚴厲又仁慈。)

The expression was at once grand and sweet. (Hawthorne) (那表情既威風而又溫和。)

He was at once detested and despised. (他既可恨又可鄙。)

The story he told us was at once interesting and instructive. (他講給我們聽的故事，既有趣，又有益。)

【習題128】

1. Very few will doubt that it is science which has at once quickened the demand for general education in modern times and the education itself effective.

2. Accustomed to play the host in the highest circles, he charmed and dominated all whom he approached; there was something at once winning and authoritative in his address (=personal bearing); and his extraordinary coolness gave him yet another distinction in this half maniacal society. (R.L. Stevenson)

(129) "in that"

Men differ from brutes *in that* they can think and speak.
人之所以異於獸類，就在能說話又能想事。

【解　說】

這是一種近乎文言的表現法，意思由「在那樣的一點上」，而變成「因爲」(since; because) 了。有時也可以說 "in this"，二者都是很莊重的文體，在正式的論述中常見的用法。

【類　例】

The budget is unrealistic in that it disregards increased costs. (這預算不符實際，因爲忽視了增加的費用。)

Vinyl is similar to cellophane in that it is transparent. (乙烯基在透明的一點上，與玻璃紙相似。)

He didn't think the better of her in that she had a lot of imagination. (因爲她的想像力豐富，他對她的評價不高。)

There is not a war in the world, no, nor an injustice, but you women are answerable for it, not in that you have provoked, but in

that you have not hindered. (世界上任何一次戰爭,不,任何一次不講道義的行爲,都應由你們女人來負責,並不是因爲那是你們鼓勵起來的,而是因爲你們沒有去加以阻止。)

【習題129】

1. Some things they do in that they are men...some things in that they are men misled and blinded with error. (Hooker)

2. The scheme differs from the common method of accounting for the origin of our affections in this, that it supposes what is personal or selfish in our affections to be the growth of time and habit. (Hazlitt)

(130) "It is true...but"

It is true I went there, *but* I saw none.

我誠然去過那裏,但我沒有見到一個人。

【解　說】

這種 "It is true...but" 的形式,意爲「誠然是…不過」。"It is true" 有時可換用 "I admit", "It is admitted", "no doubt", "indeed", "to be sure" 等字樣,"but" 也可換用 "yet", "still" 等字,"it is" 也可以略去,意思都是一樣。

【類　例】

It is true he is young, but he is prudent for his age. (誠然他是年輕,但以他的年齡,他是謹愼明智的。)

It is true he is old, but he is still strong. (老則老矣,然其體力猶健。)

A good method, to be sure—but hard to practice. (誠屬妙策,然不易實行。)

For me, indeed, there is no labour at any time, but nevertheless does Sunday bring me repose. (對我來說,誠然是任何時候都沒有勞動,不過到了禮拜天才眞正獲得心神的安靜。)

Life is indeed a tragedy at times and a comedy very often, but

as a rule it is what we choose to make it.（誠然人生有時是悲劇，而常常是喜劇，不過一般說來，還是看我們自己要它是什麼就是什麼。）

It is true that he did his best, but on this occasion he was careless.（誠然他是盡了全力，但在這個場合，他却不免疏忽了。）

His music was not classical indeed, but was good of its kind.（他的音樂誠非古典，但是在那一類中還算是好的。）

It is hot, no doubt, but then the heat is dry.（確是很熱，但沒有濕氣。）

【習題130】

1. It is true that road travel in the old days was difficult, tedious, and uncomforable, but it was comparatively safe.

2. Those who are born in the purple have indeed many advantages, but they pay dearly for them.

XII. 其他的造句

（131）"one"

"as such"

(a) If you want a watch, I will give you *one*.
如果你想要一隻錶，我就給你一隻。

(b) He is a student, and must be treated *as such*.
他是一個學生，我們一定要以學生待他。

【解　說】

爲避免反復使用同一個名詞，我們常要採用代名詞，如果是同名同物時用"it"，如果是同名異物時則用"one"，如：

(1) If you want *the* watch, you can have *it*.

(2) If you want *a* watch, you can have *one*.

第一句是代表同名同物，故用"it"；第二句是代表同名異物，故用"one"，我們也可以說，"it"是指特定的東西，而"one"則是指不定的東

西。作爲反複代名詞用的"such",只有"as such"一個用法。換句話說,反複代名詞普通是用"one",如在"as"後就換用"such",即不說"as one",而說"as such"。英文的"as such"含義有二,其一爲「照其資格」(in that capacity),另一爲「其本身」(in itself 或 in themselves)。

【類 例】

I have lost my umbrella; I think I must buy one. (我把雨傘丟了,我想要另買一把。)

When the telephone was invented and was ready to use, hardly anybody cared to install one.(當電話發明了,且可供實用時,却很少的人要裝置它。) the telephone 指一般的電話,故不用"it"而用"one"。

He is a child, and must be treated as such. (他是一個小孩,必須把他作小孩看待。)

He is the master, and as such must be obeyed. (他是主人,因此必須服從他。)

He was a foreigner and was treated as such. (他是一個外國人,所以被當作外國人看待。)

It was as a physician that he presented himself, and as such was cordially received. (Hawthorne) (他以醫師的身分在這裏出現,而大家便熱誠地把他當作醫師來接待他。)

History as such is too often neglected. (歷史本身常被忽視。)

Wealth, as such, doesn't matter much. (單是有錢算不得什麼。)

In country places strangers are welcome as such. (在鄉下外來的人就因爲這個理由而大受歡迎。)

【習題131】

1. He had not been bred a soldier, and had no inclination to become one.

2. New-year resolutions are good enough as such, but unless they are got into heart and life, as well as down in neat lines on papers, they will amount to little.

3. Witty men are apt to imagine they are agreeable as such.

(Steele)

(132) "one thing...another"

It is *one thing* to speak and *another* to act.
說是一件事,做又是另外一件事。

【解　說】

在"one thing...another (thing)"的表現法中,"one"和"another"是對立的,正好像"some...other"是對立的一樣,不可把這兩個同義的表現法混淆起來。"one thing"有時可以略去,有時又可將"thing"字換用別的名詞。這可翻譯爲「…是一事…又是一事」,表示二者判然不同,不可混爲一談。

【類　例】

Theory is one thing and practice (is) another, so they don't necessarily go together. (理論和實際判然不同,不一定能達到一致。)

For one reason or another (或 For some reason or other) he resigned his post. (不曉得什麼理由他辭職了。)

To know is one thing, and to teach is another. (自己懂得是一件事情,要教人又是另外一件事情。)

That's quite another thing. (那是另外一件事。)

One man's meat is another man's poison. (施於甲爲肉,施於乙爲毒。利於甲者未必利於乙。)

【習題132】

1. It is one thing to own a library; it is quite another to use it wisely.

2. There is no more dangerous experiment than that of undertaking to be one thing before a man's face and another behind his back.

(133) "in＋人物"

They have an enemy *in him.*

他才是他們的敵人。

【解 說】

這個 "in"＝in the person of (在那人身上), 表一個人身上所有的性質、資格、能力等, 原是由於形狀 (與形狀有關的用 "in", 如 "in a circle", "in print", "in couples", "in a heap", "in human shape", "in ruins" 等) 所轉來, 而有「即…是也」,「就是」的譯法。這種 "in" 多出現在 "have", "find", "see", "behold", "lose" 等動詞的後面。

【類 例】

We found a true friend in (the person of) him. (他才是我們眞正的朋友。)

I have a good companion in (the shape of) a dog. (我有良朋, 即犬是也。)

We have lost a good teacher in Mr Wong. (王先生之死, 使我們痛失良師。)

They see a great man in every Chinese. (他們見到中國人都認爲是偉大的。)

He had something of the hero in him. (或 in his nature) (他有英雄氣槪。)

The love of beauty is inherent in poets. (愛美乃詩人之天性。)

I didn't suspect she had it in her. (我想她沒有那種氣質。)

I will defend him as far as in me lies. (我要盡力爲他辯護。)

China lost a great artist in (the death of) Chi Pai-shih. (齊白石之死, 使中國失去了一個偉大的藝術家。)

【習題133】

1. If ever thou wanted a friend, thou shalt have one in Richard Steele. (Thackeray)

2. You behold in me one who has slain the monster.
3. I recognized an old friend in the star actor.

(134) "before 的四種譯法"

(a) *Before* he came here, he was in America.
他來此以前是在美國。(以前)

(b) You must not count your chickens *before* they are hatched.
小雞尚未孵出不可作數。(尚未)

(c) It was long *before* he came.
他過了許久以後才來。(以後)

(d) It was not long *before* he came.
他不久就來了。("before" 不要譯出)

【解　說】

這個連詞的 "before", 不可只照字面譯爲「以前」, 因爲由句子的不同, 還有其他各種譯法, 甚至譯成相反的意思, 或根本不去理它。我們翻譯成中文時, 必須注意中文的語法, 不可死抱着英文原文的意思不放, 如 "before they are hatched" 一句話, 常被人譯成「未孵出前」, 又是「未」, 又是「前」, 不免重複, 不如譯成「未孵出時」或「在孵出前」。

【類　例】

He went away before I could reply. (或 before I had time to reply). (我未及作答他已離去。)

She became a mother before she had attained her fifteenth year. (她不到十五歲已做了母親了。)

It was midnight before he returned. (他在夜半以後才回來。)

I had not waited long before he came. (稍候即至。)

I had not gone a mile before I felt tired. (沒有走到一哩路, 我已經疲倦了。)

They had not been married a month before they quarrelled. (結婚未匝月, 夫妻已反目。)

My father died before I was born.（父親在我出生以前就去世了。）

He arrived there before it began to rain.（他到達那裏的時候，天還沒有下雨。）

【習題134】

1. He had gone some distance before he missed the book.

2. They had not proceeded far before they perceived a bear making toward them with great rage.

第三編

疑難句法及文章譯例

壹　英文類似句辨異

英文中常常有些句子，看去很是相似，其實總有一點不同，而那一點不同，就使得意義大爲懸殊。這些句子最易使初學者難於覺察，而把意義弄錯。讀書誤解，譯書謬誤，大都是由於這些地方有欠仔細所致，所以不要以爲是小處，其實大有細心研究的必要。所謂差之毫釐，失之千里，正是像這樣的。有時只因爲在句子中多加了一個小小的冠詞，而使得意義大變；有時兩個成語，除有的多了一個不定冠詞外，別無差異，而意義也就大不相同。有時因一個形容詞或副詞的地位不同，也會使句子產生不同的意義。諸如此類，不勝枚舉，茲就見聞所及，採集一百二十例，除附譯文外，又多加以注釋，俾使研習翻譯的學生，有所了解，而獲助益。

1. (a) *A number* of members *are* absent.
   (b) *The number* of members *is* alarming.
   (a) 多數的會員沒有到會。
   (b) 會員人數多得可驚。
   注　英文的 number 一字，有兩個主要的含義：一爲「數目」或「總數」，如(b)例，故爲單數。一爲「許多」或「多數」，如(a)例，故爲複數。他例如 The number of fools is infinite. (愚人的數目是無窮盡的。) He owns a number of houses in this street. (他在這街上有許多屋子。)

2. (a) They are *the students* of our school.
   (b) They are *students* of our school.

(a) 他們是本校的全體學生。
(b) 他們是本校的一部分學生。

注　有定冠詞的複數名詞代表全體，無定冠詞的複數名詞，代表一部分。他例如 The Americans are an active people. (美國人是活躍的民族。) Americans think that they can win the war in Vietnam. (美國人以爲他們可在越南戰勝。)

3. (a) His success is *out of question.*
   (b) His success is *out of the question.*
   (a) 他必成功。
   (b) 他必失敗。

注　out of question=beyond question. 無疑；不待言。out of the question=not to be thought of; quite impossible. 決不可能；無討論的價值。

4. (a) The enemy is *in possession of* the fortress.
   (b) The fortress is *in the possession of* the enemy.
   (a) 那砲臺一時爲敵人所佔領。
   (b) 那砲臺的主權爲敵人所有。

注　in possession of=having in one's possession. 保持在某人手中，但主權並非某人所有。in the possession of=held by; possessed of. 爲某人所有，卽主權屬於某人。前者爲一時佔有，後者爲主權所有。前者以人爲主語，後者以物爲主語。

5. (a) She was *with a child.*
   (b) She was *with child.*
   (a) 她帶了一個孩子。
   (b) 她身懷六甲。

注　be with child=be pregnant. 懷孕。

6. (a) She *kept the house.*
   (b) She *kept house.*
   (a) 她守在家裏。
   (b) 她管理家務。

注　keep house=manage the affairs of a household. 還可以再加形容詞，如 keep a good house=provide good food and plenty of comfort. 治家有條。所以管家婆就叫 housekeeper。

7. (a) A lawyer would *make a better statesman than a soldier.*
   (b) A lawyer would *make a better statesman than soldier.*
   (a) 律師比軍人更易成爲好政治家。
   (b) 律師改做政治家比改做軍人更易成功。
   註 (a)句的 than a soldier=than a soldier would make a statesman. 兩人相比,應重複 than 後的冠詞。(b)句的 than soldier=than he would make a soldier. 兩職相比,便在 than 後不要重複冠詞。

8. (a) He is *rather a foolish fellow.*
   (b) He is *a rather foolish fellow.*
   (a) 說他是一個愚笨的人更爲恰當。
   (b) 他是一個有點愚笨的人。
   註 (a) 句中的 rather 是修飾 a foolish fellow 的, (b) 句中的 rather 只是修飾 foolish 一字的。他例如 We have come rather a long way. (way=distance) (我們是從相當的遠距離來的。) We have come a rather long way. (way=route) (我們來自頗遠的路程。)

9. (a) Miss Taylor was *in charge of* the children.
   (b) The children were *in the charge of* Miss Taylor.
   (a) 戴小姐負責管理孩子。
   (b) 孩子由戴小姐照顧。
   註 如果把受照顧者作主語時,就應在 charge 前加一個定冠詞。他例如 The patient is in the charge of the nurse. 或 The nurse is in charge of the patient.

10. (a) The new harbour is *in course of* construction.
    (b) Fossils were found *in the course of* the work.
    (a) 新碼頭正在興建中。
    (b) 在工事中發現了化石。
    註 in course of=in process of. 正在。in the course of=during or before the end of. 在…中;在…時間之內。

11. (a) The maid of honour had grey *hair.*
    (b) The maid of honour had grey *hairs.*
    (a) 白頭宮女。
    (b) 二毛宮女。

注　(a)句中的 hair 是一個集合名詞，代表整體，即全部的頭髮。如說 She has golden hair.（滿頭金髮。）這是一個不可數的 (uncountable) 名詞，不能加〔s〕使它變成複數的。但 (b) 句中的 hairs，便是一個可數的 (countable) 普通名詞，指一部分而言，如說 grey hairs，意爲頭髮花白，兩色相間，故中文稱爲「二毛」，通例指老年，如左傳上說的「不擒二毛」，聖經上說的 bring down a person's grey hairs in sorrow to the grave.（使老年憂愁促其早死。）

12. (a) He is *a child of ten.*

(b) He is *a father of ten.*

(a) 他是一個十歲大的孩子。

(b) 他是一個有十個孩子的父親。

注　(b) 句的表現法，可以看出語言的經濟。

13. (a) She served me with *a kind of coffee.*

(b) She served me with *coffee of a kind.*

(a) 她請我喝一種咖啡。

(b) 她給我一杯說是咖啡而非咖啡的東西。

注　(b) 句是表現出一種輕蔑的說法，意爲徒有其名，實則太無味了。參考 a kind of gentleman 雖不能說很標準，總算是一種紳士。a gentleman of a kind 也稱爲紳士，實在是冒充的，強調 non-typical position of the individual，非典型的，算不了什麼紳士。

14. (a) You have offended the girl as deeply *as I.*

(b) You have offended the girl as deeply *as me.*

(a) 你觸犯了那女子之深和我一樣。

(b) 你觸犯了那女子和觸犯了我一樣的深。

注　(b) 句中的 me 爲 offended 的賓語，而非 as 的賓語。as me＝as you have offended me.

15. (a) You love me better *than he.*

(b) You love me better *than him.*

(a) 你愛我比他愛我更甚。

(b) 你愛我比愛他更甚。

注　(a) than he＝than he loves me.

(b) than him＝than you love him.

16. (a) *This is no place* for me to go to.

(b) *There is no place* for me to go to.

(a) 那不是我去的地方。

(b) 我沒有地方好去。

注 there is 爲「有」, there is no 爲「沒有」。

17. (a) Under the Mongol Dynasty Chinese men of letters stood *at the foot of* the social ladder.

(b) He lay the money and treasures *at the feet of* the beautiful lady.

(a) 在元朝統治之下，中國的文人社會地位最低。

(b) 他把財寶獻給那個美婦。

注 (a) at the foot of 在底層，在基部，如 the foot of a mountain 山脚。 at the foot of the page 在頁底。 My house stands at the foot of a hill. 我家位於山麓。Notes are given at the foot of every page. 每頁下端有注。(b) at the feet of 在脚跟前，在足下，如 They fell down at the feet of their enemy. 他們降服了。屈伏在敵人的足下。

18. (a) This is *my portrait.*

(b) This is *a portrait of me.*

(c) This is *a portrait of mine.*

(a) 這是我畫的肖像畫。

(b) 這是我的肖像。

(c) 這是我所藏的肖像畫。

注 除 (b) 意爲 representing me（畫的是我的像）以外，其餘二句都不十分肯定，如 (c) 除 my property（所藏）一義外，還有 painted by me（所繪）的意思。(a) 更是幾乎三個意思都有，既有所繪意，也有所藏意，還有畫的我的肖像的意思。

19. (a) They are *an industrious people.*

(b) They are *industrious people.*

(a) 他們是一種勤勵的國民。

(b) 他們是一些勤勵的人們。

注 a people = a nation 國民。 people = men 人們。

20. (a) You will find *some cigars of mine* in the drawer.

(b) You will find *some of my cigars* in the drawer.

(a) 在那抽屜裏你可以找到我的雪茄煙。

(b) 在那抽屜裏你可以找到我有些雪茄煙在那裏。

注 (a) 表示全部, (b) 表示一部分。又如說 three of my sisters 意爲我許多姊妹中的三個;說 three sisters of mine 則表示三個以外再沒有姊妹了。

21. (a) *No* one appeared from *anywhere.*

(b) They appeared from *nowhere.*

(a) 任何地方都不見人影。

(b) 他們不知是從那裏來的。

注 (a) 句中的 anywhere 和 (b) 句中的 nowhere 都是名詞。(b) 句中的 nowhere = no place (無論那裏都不是的地方。) The rumor came from nowhere. (那謠言不曉得是從那裏來的。) 如說「他逃到不知那裏去了。」英文就說 He has escaped nobody knows where. (= He has escaped God knows where.)

22. (a) We met *nobody*.

(b) We didn't meet *anybody*.

(a) 閱無一人。

(b) 我們一個人也沒有看見。

注 (a) 句帶點文言的味道, (b) 句才是口語的說法。

23. (a) He is *not a fool.*

(b) He is *no fool.*

(a) 他不是傻子。

(b) 他不但不傻,而且聰明。

注 一般的情形是 *No* sound was to be heard = *Not a* sound was to be heard. He has *no* money. = He has *not any* money. 但這個 no 又可以表示與它後接的字相反的意思,如上舉例句說的 He is *no fool.* = He is a *clever* man. 及 He showed *no great* skill. = He showed very *little* skill. 上舉的(a)句爲普通的否定句,意即 He is not foolish. (他並不傻。) (b) 句意爲 He is nobody's fool. 昔日國王豢養的小丑或弄臣叫做 fool, 是供人愚弄的,現在說他不受任何人的愚弄,可見他不傻,而且是很聰明的。

24. (a) He has *no more than* ten books.
    (b) He has *not more than* ten books.
    (a) 他只有十本書。
    (b) 他至多不過十本書。
    注 no more than=only. 僅只。
    not more than=at most. 至多;或不足。

25. (a) It is *not always good* to live alone.
    (b) It is *not good always* to live alone.
    (a) 離羣索居不一定好。
    (b) 老是離羣索居是不好的。
    注 (a)是部分否定。(b)是全部否定。

26. (a) He is *not a little* afraid of it.
    (b) He is *not a bit* afraid of it.
    (a) 他非常怕。
    (b) 他一點也不怕。
    注 not a little=much. not a bit=not at all. 二者皆係副詞片語。

27. (a) He has *not a little* experience.
    (b) He has *not the least* experience.
    (a) 他很有經驗。
    (b) 他毫無經驗。
    注 not a little=much. not the least=no. 二者皆係形容詞片語。

28. (a) He is *not quite* so diligent as she.
    (b) He is *not nearly* so diligent as she.
    (a) 他沒有她那樣勤學。
    (b) 他決無她那樣勤學。
    注 not quite=a little less...than 稍稍不及(不足),稍劣。not nearly=far from 大爲不及(不足),大劣。

29. (a) I *ask you nothing.*
    (b) I *ask nothing of you.*
    (c) I *ask you for nothing.*
    (a) 我沒有什麼要問你的。
    (b) 我沒有什麼要求你的。

(c) 我沒有什麼要請求你的。

注 (b)有時也可以說成(a),因爲這個 of 是 out of 的意思。(c) ask for 意爲 demand (要求,請求),如 ask for a loan of money. (請求借貸。)

30. (a) We *hadn't anything* to eat.

(b) We *didn't have anything* to eat.

(a) 我們家裏一點吃的東西也沒有了

(b) 我們什麼也沒有吃。

注 (a)句意爲 We had no food in our possession. (b)句意爲 We did not partake of any food.

31. (a) Write and tell me *whether* I am to come.

(b) Write and tell me *if* I am to come.

(a) 請寫信通知我看我有去的必要沒有。

(b) 如果我沒有去的必要你就不必回信了。

注 表示「要不要」或「是不是」等意時,英文常用 whether 一字,有時在口語中則用 if 代 whether, 二者原是沒有什麼分別的。不過把兩句話比較研究時,也多少可以發現有些歧異,據 Palmer 的說法,用 if 時,等於說 Send me a letter if I am to come, but if I am not to come, don't trouble to send me a letter.

32. (a) This is *the same* knife *as* I have lost.

(b) This is *the same* knife *that* I have lost.

(a) 這把小刀和我失掉的一把完全一樣。

(b) 這就是我失掉的那把小刀。

注 the same...as 同類物。the same...that 同一物。

33. (a) Ask him *when he comes back.*

(b) Ask him *when he will come back.*

(a) 他回來的時候你就問他。

(b) 你問他要什麼時候回來。

注 (a)句中的 when he comes back 是副詞子句,故要用現在時態代未來時態;(b)句中的 when he will come back 是名詞子句,故仍保留未來時態。

34. (a) I *have to spend much money.*

(b) I *have much money to spend.*

(a) 我非花許多錢不可。

(b) 我有許多錢可花。

注　(a)句中的 have to = be obliged to, 不得不, 必須。(b)句中 have much money = am rich enough. 他例如: (a) I have to tell you something. (我必須告訴你一件事。) (b) I have something to tell you. (我有話要跟你說。) 可見 have to 分開和連續, 意思是可能發生歧異的。

35. (a) *Whoever says so* is a liar.

(b) *Whoever may say so*, he is a liar.

(a) 說那種話的人, 不問是誰, 都是撒謊。

(b) 誰說那種話, 也就是撒謊。

注　在 (a) 中的 whoever = the person that. 在 (b) 中的 whoever = though any person.

36. (a) They say Joe is mad, and *so he is.*

(b) She is mad, and *so is he.*

(a) 人們說喬發狂了, 他眞是那樣的。

(b) 她發狂了, 他也是一樣。

注　"so + 主語 + 動詞" 中的 so, 意爲 yes (正是)。"so + 動詞 + 主語" 中的 so, 意爲 also (也是)。

37. (a) *I am sorry* to disturb you.

(b) *I should be sorry* to disturb you.

(a) 打擾你眞對不起。

(b) 如果會打擾你的話, 那就眞對不起啦。

注　(a) 句意爲事實上是在打擾。(b) 句意爲還不曉得是不是會打擾, 如果是的話。類例如: (a) I think it is not true. (我想這不會是眞的。) (b) I should think it is not true. (我看這恐怕不會是眞的。)

38. (a) She wrote she *was coming.*

(b) She wrote (for) me *to come.*

(a) 她寫信說要來。

(b) 她寫信要我去。

注 (b)句中的 for，說話時可省略。英文說的 write for 是寫信去要什麼，如 I will write for a copy. (我就寫信去買一部。) 句中的 to come，是賓格補語，即是說要我到她那裏去。「去」的意思而用「來」表示的，是主觀的說法。

39. (a) It *makes* him *fear.*

(b) It *makes* him *feared.*

(a) 那使他怕起來。

(b) 那使他受嚇不小。

注 (a) 句指自己怕；(b) 句指別人使他怕。

40. (a) I *left* the window *open.*

(b) I *kept* the window *open.*

(a) 我讓窗子開着。

(b) 我故意不關窗。

注 (a) 意爲讓它去，不在乎。(b) 意指故意的動作。

41. (a) I had money enough *to buy it.*

(b) I had money enough *to have bought it.*

(a) 我曾有足够買那東西的錢。

(b) 如果我要買那東西的話，我是有足够的錢的。

注 (b)句中實含有 I had money enough, but I did not buy it. 的意思，用 to have bought，是表示與過去的事實相反的情形，在本句中即是說「未買」。有的文法家把它看作假設語氣。

42. (a) Did you say *what* he wanted?

(b) *What* did you say he wanted?

(a) 你曾說他要什麼是不是？

(b) 你曾問他要的是什麼？

注 (a)句的答案是 Yes, I did. 或 No, I didn't. (b)句的答案是 I said he wanted some paper. 之類，(b) 句中的 did you say 是插入句。

43. (a) Did you do *any work* last evening?

(b) Did you do *some work* last evening?

(a) 昨天晚上你做了點什麼事嗎？

(b) 你要做的事昨天晚上又做了一點嗎？

注　(a)句的說法是對別人做的事或沒有做，完全不知道的時候發問的，而(b)句則是知道對方有事要做(今晚)，問他進行的情形如何時而說的。

44. (a) He is *as good as dead.*

(b) His brain is *as good as ever.*

(a) 他簡直像死了一樣。

(b) 他的頭腦還是和從前一樣的好。

注　(a) 句中的 as good as 是一個成語，意爲「幾乎等於」，「簡直一樣」，(b) 句中的 good 作「好」的本意解釋，照字面譯即可。

45. (a) *Which train* are you going by?

(b) *What train* are you going by?

(a) 你坐那一班車去？

(b) 你坐幾點鐘的車去？

注　(a)句中的 which 是指「那一個？」，即在許多當中指定一個。(b) 句中的 what，作疑問形容詞用，意爲「什麼？」問什麼火車，即指幾點鐘開的火車。

46. (a) He is afraid to die.

(b) He is afraid that he will die.

(c) He is afraid of death.

(d) He is afraid of dying.

(e) He is afraid of being killed.

(a) 他怕死。

(b) 他懼怕他會死。

(c) 他怕死亡。

(d) 他擔心會死。

(e) 他擔心被殺。

注　在 be afraid 後，可自成段落，不必接任何字，也可以接 that 引導出來的子句，或不定詞或 of 片語。這比說 fear，更爲口語化。(a) 句的 He is afraid to die.＝He dare not die. 因爲恐怖那種結果而不敢嘗試。又如說 He is afraid to swim，是說他怕而不敢下水去游泳。如說 He is afraid of drowning，就是他生怕淹死。前者是未下水，後者是已下水。(d) 句的 He is afraid of dying.＝He is afraid lest he should die. 意爲他擔心他會死。這個 lest，用於 fear 或 be afraid 後意爲

that. 至於在 afraid of 之後,可接動名詞或名詞,而 (e) 句的 afraid of being killed, 還是一樣,只是加了一個被動進去而已。(c) 句的 He is afraid of death.=He is afraid to die. 在afraid 後接子句時(如 lest...should, that...might 等),不問是假設語氣或直陳語氣,都是指不希望有的事,所謂 unpleasant probability, 擔心有那樣的事發生。他例如 I am afraid lest I should (=that I might) hurt his feelings. (生怕使他不高興。) I am afraid (that) we are not in time. (我恐怕我們到遲了。) I am afraid (that) it will rain. (=lest it should rain). (怕會下雨。) 普通 "afraid+子句", 表遺憾或抱歉的意思, 如 I am afraid (that) I cannot lend you $1,000. (對不起, 我恐怕不能夠借給你一千元。)

47. (a) He is *certain of returning.*

(b) He is *certain to return.*

(a) 他自信一定要回來的。

(b) 他一定會回來的。

注 (a) 句是表示其主語的「他」, 對他自己將要回來的事毫無疑惑; (b) 句是說別人對他將要回來的那回事沒有疑惑。同樣地 He is sure of success. (他自認一定成功。) He is sure to succeed. (我想他一定成功。)

48. (a) It has been raining *continually* for two days.

(b) It has been raining *continuously* for two days.

(a) 斷續地下了兩天的雨。

(b) 不停地下了兩天的雨。

注 (a) continual=frequently or closely repeated 表斷斷續續, 即是間歇的。(b) continuous=without interruption 表繼續不斷的。

49. (a) Have you finished your homework *yet*?

(b) Have you finished your homework *already*?

(a) 你的課外作業做好了嗎?(還是沒有?)

(b) 你的課外作業就已經做好了?(真快!)

注 (a) 句是普通情形,問對方是否已經做好。(b) 句則知道對方已經做好, 而不免覺得驚奇對方何以如此的快, already 一字要唸得重一點。

50. (a) *Happily* he did not die.
(b) He did not die *happily*.
(a) 他幸免於死。
(b) 他未死於安樂。
注　(a) 句中的副詞 happily, 是修飾整句的, 而 (b) 句中的副詞 happily 則是修飾動詞 die 的。

51. (a) *Any* doctor will say *something* to please his patients.
(b) *Some* doctor will say *anything* to please his patients.
(a) 任何醫生都會對他的病人說點安慰的話的。
(b) 有的醫生會對他的病人說點安慰的話的。

52. (a) He is *the only son* of a poor man.
(b) He is *only a son* of a poor man.
(a) 他是一個窮人的獨子。
(b) 他不過是一個窮人的兒子。
注　在 (a) 句中, only 作形容詞用, 比較簡單。在 (b) 句中, only 作副詞用時就複雜多了。作副詞用的 only, 最好是儘可能接近它所修飾的字, 否則意義就變了。隨着一個句子的語詞的多少, 而使 only 一語變動其地位, 因而產生同數含義不同的句子出來, 如由 only, the English, love, sports 四語構成的句子, 則產生下列四種不同的句子: (1) Only the English love sports. (只有英國人愛好運動。)意指沒有別的人。(2) The English only love sports. (英國人只是愛好運動而已。) 而並不實際去運動。 (3) The English love sports only. (英國人只愛好運動。) 別的都不愛好。(4) The English love their only sports. (英國人愛好他們唯一的運動。) 並沒有別的運動。

53 (a) *By trimming* the sails, he tided over the crisis.
(b) *Trimming* the sails, he tided over the crisis.
(a) 臨機應變, 渡過危機。
(b) 見風轉舵, 他得以渡過難關。
注　(a) 句是普通的表現法, (b) 句則爲生動 (vivid) 的表現, 因句中加上了一個 by 字, 就顯得語調太硬了。trim the sails = set sails to suit the wind, 引伸爲 change one's opinion, views, etc. to suit circumstances.

54. (a) It was *the second year* of the Republic.
(b) It was *in the second year* of the Republic.
(a) 時在共和二年。
(b) 那是共和二年發生的事。
注　(a) 句中的 it 是代表「時」的, (b) 句中的 it 是代表「事」的。

55. (a) He *agreed to* the plan.
(b) He *agreed with* the plan.
(a) 他贊成那計劃。
(b) 他認爲那計劃很好。
注　(a) 句的 agree to=give consent to, 而 (b) 句的 agree with=regard...with approval.

56. (a) He was *familiar to* me.
(b) He was *familiar with* me.
(a) 他是我很熟悉的人。
(b) 他跟我太親密了。
注　(a) 句中的 familiar to=well known to; accustomed to. 如 His face is familiar to me. (很是面善。) (b) 句中的 familiar with 如對事物說時, 意爲「精通」(well versed in), 如對人來說, 則含有輕蔑之意, 表示超越身分, 交情等不當的親密。他例如 He made himself much too familiar with my wife. (他對我的太太過分親密太冒失了。) I am familiar with the countryside. (對這鄉間我很熟悉。)

57. (a) I have a *friendship for* him.
(b) I have a *friendship with* him.
(a) 我跟他有交情。
(b) 我和他交遊。
注　(a) 句的 have friendship for somebody, 意爲對某人具有好感, 例如 His friendship for Byron began in the same year. (他和拜倫的交誼也是同一年開始的。) (b) 句的 have friendship with somebody, 意爲「與之交遊」, 卽和某人交際, 彼此有往來, 但不一定有交情。

58. (a) *At the beginning* of the term, our teacher addressed us in an eloquent speech.
(b) *In the beginning* God created the heaven and the earth.

(a) 在學期開始的時候，我們的老師洋洋灑灑地向我們說了許多話。
(b) 起初上帝創造了天和地。

註　(a) 句的 at the beginning=at the start，意爲「在開始的時候」，(b) 句的 in the beginning=at first，意爲「起初」。同類的句子還有 at the end=at last，意爲「最後」，如 At the end of the term we shall have examinations (在學期結束時，我們有考試。) in the end =after all; finally，意爲「畢竟」，「終於」，如 In the end he found out all the secret. (他終於發覺了所有的秘密。)還有 at the middle =between beginning and end，意爲「在半途」，如The novelist was born at the middle of the 19th century. (那小說家生於十九世紀中葉。) I entered the school at the middle of April. (我是四月半入校的。) in the middle=in the centre or heart 意爲「在中央」，如 The boy stretched himself at full length in the middle of the room. (那男孩伸長手脚睡在房間的中央。) In the middle of the night, there was a fire near my house. (在夜半我家附近起了火。)

59. (a) I am busy *at the moment.*
(b) Let's set aside *for the moment* the question of expense.
(c) Try to be calm and sensitive *in the moment* of danger.
(d) He is one of the men *of the moment.*
(e) She burst out crying *on the moment.*
(f) The clock is timed *to the moment.*

(a) 我目下很忙。
(b) 我們暫時不妨把費用問題擱在一邊。
(c) 危險當頭，必須鎮定靈敏。
(d) 他是當今風雲人物之一。
(e) 她當場就哭出來了。
(f) 那時鐘報時絕對準確。

註　at the moment=just now.　for the moment=temporarily.　in the moment=in case.　of the moment=important at the present time.　on the moment=all at once; on the spot.　to the moment=with absolute punctuality.

60. (a) I have to be *at business* by nine.
(b) I have been pressed *by business*.
(c) He has a good head *for business*.
(d) He is *in business* with his father.
(e) Are you in London for pleasure or *on business*?
(f) In my daily walk *to business* I frequently meet a certain gentleman.
(a) 我九點鐘就要到店裏去營業。
(b) 我一直非常繁忙。
(c) 他有經商之才。
(d) 他們開一爿父子商店。
(e) 你來倫敦是爲遊玩還是因公？
(f) 我每天走去店裏的時候，常遇到一位紳士。
注 at business 到店裏去營業，出差，在執行任務。by business 由於事務，例如 I was prevented by business. (爲事所阻。) for business 爲着事務，爲經商。in business. 從商，從事實業，如 a man in business (實業家)。This firm is now more than 60 years in business. (那店已經開辦六十年了。) on business 因商務，因公，有事。No admittance except on business. (非公免進。) to business 辦公，上班。At what time do you go to business every morning? (每天早晨你何時去上班？)

61. (a) The animal likes to live *by itself*.
(b) The bird builds its nest *for itself*.
(c) The door opened *of itself*.
(d) It is a small thing *in itself*.
(e) He was *beside himself* in joy.
(f) He had the room all *to himself*.
(a) 那動物愛獨居。
(b) 那鳥自力營巢。
(c) 那門自開。
(d) 這本來是小事。

(e) 他得意忘形。

(f) 那房間歸他專用。

註　by oneself=alone, 意爲「獨自」,「離羣索居」, 但往往用作「自力」,「自然地」的意思。for oneself=independently, 意爲「獨立」,「自力」,「不依賴他人」, 但往往有 for its own sake (爲自己)的意思。of oneself =spontaneously (出於自動, 自然而然), 但往往用作「獨自」,「不假外力」的意思。in oneself=absolutely 意爲「原來」,「本來」。beside oneself =wildly excited; mad; out of one's sense, 意爲「神經錯亂」,「忘形」,「瘋狂」。to oneself=for one's use solely. 意爲「專用」,「限於自己一人」。

62. (a) He went to Taipei *for pleasure.*

(b) He went to Taipei *with pleasure.*

(c) He went to Taipei *at pleasure.*

(a) 他往臺北遊玩去了。

(b) 他高興地到臺北去了。

(c) 他隨心所欲地到臺北去了。

註　for pleasure, 意爲「尋樂」,「行樂」。with pleasure, 意爲「樂意地」,「願意地」。at pleasure, 意爲「隨意地」,「恣意地」。他例如 He likes traved for pleasure. I will do it with pleasure. Will you come with us? Yes, with pleasure. You may come or go at pleasure.

63. (a) He spoke nothing *on purpose.*

(b) He spoke nothing *to the purpose.*

(c) He spoke nothing *to no purpose.*

(a) 他什麼也沒有故意說。

(b) 他說的一點也不得要領。

(c) 他所言無不生效。

註　on purpose 故意。to the purpose 中肯。to no purpose 無效, 毫無結果。例如 People sometimes work to no purpose. 人們有時辛苦工作而無收穫。

64. (a) He presented a pistol *to me.*

(b) He presented a pistol *at me.*

(a) 他送了我一枝手鎗。

(b) 他以手鎗向我。

注 (a) 爲好意的餽贈，(b) 爲敵意的威脅，at 在此表目標。

65. (a) The boat was *under the bridge.*

(b) The boat was *below the bridge.*

(a) 船在橋拱下面。

(b) 船在橋的下流。

66. (a) I shall be here *till* three o'clock.

(b) I shall be here *by* three o'clock.

(a) 一直到三點鐘，我都在這裏。

(b) 至遲三點鐘，我會到這裏來。

注 till=as late as, up to, 至，直到。by=not later than, as soon as, before, 迄，到…爲止。by 可以不到指定的時候，till 則一定要到指定的時候。二字都是表示時間的限度，即「爲止」，(a) 句說的是人已經在此。(b) 句說的是人還未來。

67. (a) *With this* he went away.

(b) *On this* he said so.

(c) *At this* he got angry.

(a) 他一面這樣說，一面就走了。

(b) 他隨即這樣說了。

(c) 他一見到這個就生氣了。

注 with this=as saying 這樣說着。on this=hereupon 於此，隨即，隨後。at this=at seeing (或 hearing) this 見到這個，聽到這話。

68. (a) I am quite *at fault.*

(b) You are much *in fault.*

(c) He is faithful *to a fault.*

(a) 我十分迷惑。

(b) 你咎有應得。

(c) 他非常忠實。

注 at fault=at a loss, in a puzzled or ignorant state, 不知所措，昏亂，迷惑。in fault=guilty, to blame. 有過失，應尸其咎。to a fault =excessively, too (much). 太，過於，非常。

69. (a) *In a word*, he is only a student.
(b) He calmed them *at a word*.
(a) 一言以蔽之, 他不過一介書生而已。
(b) 他一句話, 就把他們鎮定下來了。

70. (a) He *sticks to* nothing.
(b) He *sticks at* nothing.
(a) 他對任何事都無恆心。
(b) 他無所躊躇。
注　stick to, 意為「堅持」。stick at, 意為「猶豫」。

71. (a) He has *as much as* she.
(b) He has *half as much as* she.
(c) He has *as much again as* she.
(d) He has *half as much again as* she.
(a) 他有她一樣多(的錢)。
(b) 他只有她一半那樣多(的錢)。
(c) 他有她兩倍那樣多(的錢)。
(d) 他有她一倍半那樣多(的錢)。

72. (a) He will love his books *as long as* he lives.
(b) He will love his books *so long as* they are instructive.
(a) 在他有生之日, 他總是愛書的。
(b) 只要那些書對人有益, 他總是愛的。
注　as long as = while, 當…之間, so long as = if only, provided that, on condition that 只要。但二者也常混用。

73. (a) I run away *for my life*.
(b) I cannot run *for the life of me*.
(c) I never ran so fast *in my life*.
(a) 我拚命地逃跑。
(b) 要我的命我也跑不動。
(c) 我一生中從來沒有跑過這樣快的。
注　for one's life, 意為「拚命」,「無論如何」。for the life of one, 意為「怎也不能」,「要命也不能」。in one's life, 意為「一生當中」, 多用於否定句中。

74. (a) His English is *anything but* correct.
(b) His English is *nothing but* correct.
(c) His English is *all but* correct.
(a) 他的英文錯誤百出。
(b) 他的英文只是不錯而已。
(c) 他的英文差不多沒有錯誤。
注 anything but=far from, not at all, 决非,並不。nothing but=only, 祇,不過。all but=almost, 差不多。

75. (a) The portrait *is drawn from* [*the*] *life.*
(b) The portrait *is drawn to the life.*
(c) The portrait *is drawn as large as life.*
(a) 這張肖像是寫生的。
(b) 這張肖像栩栩如生。
(c) 這張肖像和眞人一樣大。
注 draw from life, 意爲「寫生」,只表畫的過程,而不問畫的結果。至於 draw to the life, 則意爲「逼眞」,「和活的一樣」,只提畫的結果,不管畫的過程。其中 from 指由來, to 指結果。as large as life, 是說畫的大小,和眞人一般大。

76. (a) They *inquired about* the matter.
(b) They *inquired into* the matter.
(c) They *inquired after* me.
(d) They *inquired for* me.
(a) 他們曾詢及此事。
(b) 他們曾查究此事。
(c) 他們曾來問我的安。
(d) 他們來問我在不在。
注 inquire about = ask to tell about 詢及,問到。inquire into= investigate 調查。inquire after=ask about a person's health or welfare 請安,問候。inquire for=try to learn where a person is. 探問某人的行踪。

77. (a) He was *at home in* English.
(b) He was *at home* wherever he was.

(a) 他精通英文。
(b) 他隨遇而安。

注　英文的 at home 一個片語，有很多意思。其基本含義爲「在家裏」，因爲人在自己家裏很是隨便而感舒適，所以又有「無拘束」，「安祥」，「舒適」之意。第三有接見客人的意思，at home 爲「會客」，not at home 爲「不會客」，「不接見客人」，如云 He is not at home to anyone except relatives. (他除親人外不見客。) 在 at home 後接上介詞 in 時，則有「精通」之意，如 He is quite at home in modern history. (他精通現代史。)

78. (a) I have no opinion *as to* the result.
(b) *As for* me, I have no opinion at all.
(a) 關於那結果我沒有意見。
(b) 至於我個人，是毫無意見的。

注　as to 及 as for，都有「關於」的意思，不過 as for，則有「別人(物)怎樣我不知道，至於我(這個)…」之意。

79. (a) They are all *of age*.
(b) They are all *of an age*.
(a) 他們都已成年。
(b) 他們都是同年的。

注　of an age 中的 an，有 the same 的意思。

80. (a) Speak to him *as soon as* you can.
(b) Speak to him *as fast as* you can.
(a) 你馬上就去對他說的。
(b) 你對他說話愈快愈好。

注　(a) 句意爲「立刻」，指時間的遲早。(b) 句意爲「儘快地」，指動作的速度。

81. (a) He is *a man of family*.
(b) He is *a family man*.
(a) 他是世家子弟。
(b) 他是有家室的人。

注　(a) 句中的 of family=nobly born，出生名門。(b) 句中的 family man=man with family，即 domestic person，有妻室兒女的人，或

愛好呆在家裏的人。說 family marriage，意爲生有兒女的婚姻。類似的表現法有 a man of the world (勞苦的人)，a worldly man (俗物)。a teacher of English (英文教師)，an English teacher (英國教師，不一定是教英文的)。

82\. (a) We must get it *at any price.*

(b) We must get it *at any cost.*

(a) 無論要多少錢，我們都得買來。

(b) 無論任何代價，我們都得把它弄到手。

註 price 是專指關於金錢的，cost 則與勞瘁，努力，健康，甚至生命，都有關係。

83\. (a) He *has an eye for* pictures.

(b) He *has an eye to* pictures.

(c) He *has kept an eye on* this picture long before he bought it.

(a) 他有識別畫的眼力。

(b) 他專只注意那些畫。

(c) 他購此畫之前，久已注意及之。

註 (a) have an eye for＝be able to see well or quickly，有鑑別力。

(b) have an eye to＝have as one's object，着眼，作爲注視之的。

(c) keep an eye on＝have one's eye on，keep watch on (lit. & fig.)，watch carefully，目不離的注意，留心照拂。

84\. (a) He is *too* glad *to do* so.

(b) He is *only too* glad *to do* so.

(a) 他高興得不能去這樣做。

(b) 他極高興去這樣做。

註 (a) too...to do，意爲「太…而不能」，他例如 She is too young to understand such things.＝She is so young that she cannot understand such things. (她太年輕不懂得那樣的事。) The news is too good to be true. (消息太好恐不足信。) (b) only too...to do，意爲「正是所願」，「甚爲」，無否定意。他例如 I am only too willing to serve you. (極願效勞。) I am only too pleased to help you. (我極高興來幫助你。)

85. (a) He knows German, *to say nothing of* English.
(b) He knows German, *not to say* English.
(a) 他懂得德文，英文自不待言。
(b) 即不說英文，德文他也懂得。
註　to say nothing of，自不待言，更不必說。not to say，姑且不說，卽使不說。他例如 He is dishonest, to say nothing of his other faults.（他不正直，其餘的壞處更不必說。）He is very good-natured, not to say foolish.（他老實得幾乎有點愚笨。）

86. (a) Won't you *go* to the concert this evening?
(b) Won't you *come* to the concert this evening?
(a) 今天晚上的音樂會你去不去聽？
(b) 今天晚上的音樂會你也去聽聽好嗎？
註　在邏輯上應當說「去」的時候，常改說爲「來」，是客氣的表現，因爲是拿對方做主體，以他的立場來說話。我去你家，你來我家云云，是以「我」爲主體的說法，如說，「明天我來看你」代替「去看你」，就是以「你」爲主體的。上舉的 (a) 例是漠不相干的問法，而 (b) 例用上 come 一字，則含有「我也將去聽」的意思在內，因爲不是去到對方的家，所以用不着客氣，而只是表「我當然是要去的」含義，因此在譯文中用了一個「也」字，來表示此種內涵。

87. (a) I *hate to lie*.
(b) I *hate lying*.
(a) 我不能撒謊。
(b) 我素來不喜歡撒謊。
註　(a) 句是說臨時的，指現在，指在這場合。(b)句則含有「素來」，「一向」的意思，語氣較強。在 hate 一個動詞後面，接用不定詞或動名詞皆可，含義微有不同。

88. (a) I *remembered mailing* the letter.
(b) I *remembered to mail* the letter.
(a) 我記得發有那信的。
(b) 我記起要發信。
註　(a)句在 remember 後接動名詞，是說過去的事，有 remember having done 的含義，(b) 句在 remember 後接不定詞是說未來的事，有 not to forget to do 的含義。相反的字 forget 用法也是一樣。

89. (a) She *stopped talking*.
(b) She *stopped to talk*.
(a) 她停止說話了。
(b) 她停下來說話。
註 (a)句中的 talking 爲動名詞,是動詞 stop 的賓語。(b)句中的 stop 爲自動詞, to talk 爲不定詞的副詞用法。

90. (a) I *saw* him only once.
(b) I *have seen* him only once.
(a) 我只見過他一次。
(b) 我生平只見過他一次。
註 (a)句的意思是指「他在這裏的時候」,而(b)句則可在句尾加入 in the whole of my life 來解釋,即「在我一生之中,先後只有一次」。

91. (a) I *have not looked* at the paper this morning.
(b) I *did not look* at the paper this morning.
(a) 我今天還沒有看報。
(b) 今天的報都沒有工夫看。
註 (a)句是上午說的,(b)句是下午或晚上說的。

92. (a) *Have you ever seen* such a picture?
(b) *Did you ever see* such a picture?
(a) 你看到過這樣的畫沒有?
(b) 你恐怕沒有見過這樣的畫吧?
註 (a)句是平常 colourless 的問句,而(b)句則含有「我想你是沒有的」的意味在內。要加上 ever 一字時才有此意。

93. (a) You *must not* play here.
(b) You *will not* play here.
(a) 你們不可以在這裏玩。
(b) 你們不要在這裏玩。
注 (b)句的說法雖同是禁止之辭,但比(a)句來說委婉而又優雅。

94. (a) I *soon informed* them of the affair.
(b) I *had soon informed* them of the affair.
(a) 我馬上把那事情通知他們了。
(b) 我隨即就把那事情儘快通知他們了。
註 (b)句是生動的(vivid)表現法。

95. (a) This book *is* worth reading.
(b) This book *should be* worth reading.
(a) 這本書值得一讀。
(b) 這本書確是值得一讀。
注　(b) 句是加強語氣的說法。

96. (a) Let'*s go*.
(b) Let *us go*.
(a) 我們去吧。
(b) 你讓我們走吧。
注　(a) 句的意思爲 shall we go? (b) 句的意思爲 Set us free. 如果是一個人則說 me 以代 us. 如 Let me go! = Take your hands off me. 或 Don't hold or keep me.

97. (a) He *doesn't need* to be told.
(b) He *needn't be* told.
(a) (他已經知道) 用不着告訴他。
(b) (他知道怎樣去做的) 用不着告訴他。
注　(a) 強調現狀。(b) 強調今後的行爲。

98. (a) If you *want anything*, let me know.
(b) If you *want for anything*, let me know.
(a) 假使你要什麼, 告訴我好了。
(b) 假使你需要什麼而得不到的話, 告訴我好了。
注　(a) 句中的 want 爲他動詞, 意爲「想要」或「需要」。(b) 句中的 want 爲自動詞, 所以後接用介詞 for, 意爲「欠缺」或「不足」。英國話說的 I want you to come. 美國話則說 I want for you to come.

99. (a) The surgeon *consulted* the orthopedist in reaching his decision.
(b) The surgeon *consulted with* the orthopedist in reaching his decision.
(a) 那外科醫生請教過整形醫生之後才作決定。
(b) 那外科醫生與整形醫生商量之後才作決定。
注　(a) 句中的 consult 是他動詞, 意爲 seek advice or an opinion from a qualified source (請教, 諮詢)。(b) 句中的 consult 爲自動詞, 所以後接 with, 意爲 confer with (商量)。

100. (a) I *know* him.
(b) I *know of* him.
(a) 我認識他。
(b) 我知道他。
注 (a) 句意爲 I have made his acquaintance, 認識, 彼此有接觸, 有往來, 也可稱爲朋友。(b) 句意爲 I know about him. 或 I know him by reputation. 或 I have been told about him, but probably have not met him personally. 只知其名, 如在報上每天見到的大人物, 也知其身分, 地位, 或品德學問, 但多半從來沒有見過其人。句中的 of, 作「關於」解。

101. (a) He *had trouble* on my account.
(b) He *took trouble* on my account.
(a) 他爲得我而惹了麻煩。
(b) 他爲得我而不辭勞苦。
注 have trouble 含有討厭之意。take trouble 有不憚煩之意。

102. (a) He *must needs* go at once.
(b) He *needs must* go at once.
(a) 他堅持立刻要去。
(b) 他必須立刻就去。
注 needs 在此是副詞, 由於放在 must 的前後不同, 而意義有別。must needs = insist on doing, 意即主張一定要怎樣, 而 needs must = cannot help doing, 意即不得不。

103. (a) He *was proved* to be a swindler.
(b) He *proved* to be a swindler.
(a) 業已證明他是一個騙子。
(b) 後來判明他是一個騙子。
注 (a)句中的 prove 是他動詞, 他例如 His guilt was clearly proved. (他的罪已明白地證明了。) (b)句中的 prove 是自動詞, 有 turn out (後來判明)之意。他例如 Our reference books proved (to be) insuficient. (我們的參考書顯得不够。)

104. (a) I *can but* read the book.
(b) I *cannot but* read the book.

(c) I *do nothing but* read the book.

(a) 我只好讀那本書。

(b) 我不得不讀那本書。

(c) 我一味讀那本書。

注　can but＝can only 唯有。cannot but＝am compelled to, 爲加強 must 的說法，意即「不得不」。至於 do nothing but, 意爲別的什麽都不做，就只是…。

105. (a) I *hope* he *will* do it.

(b) I *wish* he *would* do it.

(a) 我希望他會做。

(b) 他要肯做就好了。

注　(a)句的 I hope, 表可能實現的希望。(b)句的 I wish, 表不可能實現的希望。所以在 hope 後接直陳語氣 (Indicative), 而在 wish 後就要接假設語氣 (Subjunctive)。

106. (a) He writes *well.*

(b) He writes *a good hand.*

(a) 他的文章做得好。

(b) 他的字寫得好。

107. (a) He has no one *help him.*

(b) He has no one *to help.*

(c) He has no one *to help him.*

(a) 他不要人幫他的忙。

(b) 他沒有人要幫忙。

(c) 他沒有人幫他的忙。

注　(a)句 "have＋人＋原形不定詞", 有「令」,「使」之意。他例如：Please *have* the boy *bring* the books to my house. (b)句中 help 的賓語爲 no one. (c)句中 help 的賓語爲 him.

108. (a) He *made me a teacher.*

(b) He *made a teacher of m*

(a) 他派我去做了一個教師。

(b) 他把我做成了一個教師。

注　(a)是任命我爲教師。(b)是使我受必要的師範教育而成爲教師。

109. (a) You *had better make it* at once.

(b) You *had it made better* at once.

(a) 你最好馬上去做。

(b) 你馬上把它改好。

註 (a) 句中的 you had better, 是一種假設語氣的說法, 含有勸告的意思, 可釋爲「最好是」。(b) 句中的 had it made better, 爲 "have＋賓語＋過去分詞" 的句法, 在此爲使動。它又可作被動用, 其主語可分有意志與無意志兩種, 例如 I had my watch mended. 是有意志的, 而 I had my watch stolen. 便是無意志的了。

110. (a) I *sent* a maid *to the doctor*.

(b) I *sent* a maid *to the doctor's*.

(c) I *sent* a maid *for the doctor*.

(a) 我已派女僕到醫生那裏去了。

(b) 我已派女僕到醫生家裏去了。

(c) 我已派女僕去請醫生來了。

註 在中國話 (a)(b) 兩句很容易相混, 不過內容還是有分別的, 即 (a) 是有事直接去找醫生商量, 到他家裏也行, 到他診所也行, 只要能找到他本人即可。而 (b) 的意思, 就專限於到醫生家裏或送禮或取物, 不一定要找到醫生本人。(a) 句注重在人, (b) 句注重在地。至於 (c) 句, 則意爲請醫生來。說 send for 是英文的慣用句, send for him＝tell him to come (請他來)。send for the book＝order it as purchase (定購)。

111. (a) He *may be* a good man.

(b) He *may possibly be* a good man.

(a) 他也許是一個好人。

(b) 他是一個好人也未可知。

註 (a) 充滿可能性 (possibility), 好人的成分多。(b) 缺乏可能性, 外表雖則像是好人, 骨子裏怎樣却不知道。possibly＝perhaps. (或許, 可能)。

112. (a) He *cannot be* a good man.

(b) He *cannot possibly be* a good man.

(a) 他不會是好人。

(b) 他決不會是好人。

注　在 cannot 上加一個 possibly, 意爲絕對不會, 絕對不能。如 How can I possibly do it? (我如何能做這事？)

113. (a) I will *allow* him to do so.

(b) I will *permit* him to do so.

(a) 我將讓他去那樣做。

(b) 我將允許他去那樣做。

注　allow 表默認。permit 表許可。

114. (a) You *may well say* so.

(b) You *may as well say* so.

(a) 你說的有理。

(b) 你也可以這樣說。

注　兩個 well 都是副詞, 而具有 with reason, justice or fairness 之意, 至於 as well 則意爲 with equal reason, advantage, etc.

115. (a) He *used to go* out at night.

(b) He *was used to going* out at night.

(a) 他以前常在晚上出去。

(b) 他曾習慣於晚上出去。

116. (a) He *kept smoking* all the while.

(b) He still *kept on smoking.*

(a) 他在那個時間中始終在抽着煙。

(b) 他至今還是抽煙如故(尙未戒除)。

注　"keep＋動名詞" 表繼續不斷的動作, "keep on＋現在分詞", 表保持某種狀態不變。

117. (a) I must *have this coat ironed.*

(b) I must *have ironed this coat.*

(a) 我必得把這件上衣拿去燙一下。

(b) 我一定是燙過了這件上衣。

注　(a) 句爲 "have＋賓語＋過去分詞" 的形式, 是表未來要做的。(b) 句爲 "must have＋過去分詞" 的形式, 是表過去推量的。

118. (a) I *saw* him *enter* the room.

(b) I *saw* him *entering* the room.

(a) 我看見他走進那房間裏去了。

(b) 我看見他正走進那房間裏去了。

注 (a) 句意爲 He entered the room and I saw it. (b) 句意爲 He was entering the room when I saw him. (a) 句是敍述那件事實的，而 (b) 句則是說明那種動作的。

119. (a) He *guessed my age.*

(b) He *guessed at my age.*

(a) 他猜出了我的年齡。

(b) 他試猜着我的年齡。

注 同一動詞常有他動自動兩種用法，用於他動的意思比較確實的，用於自動的意思就表示不可靠了。如 catch a ball (接球) 是表示確實可以抓到它的，這是用的他動詞，但 catch at a ball (搶球)是表示大家爭奪去抓那球，不一定抓得到手，這是用的自動詞。guess 用作他動詞時，意爲「猜想」，「猜出」，例如 You guessed right. (你猜對了。) I should guess his age at 50. 或 I should guess him to be 50. (我猜想他有五十歲了。)作自動詞用時，含有「猜猜看」的意思，如 Can't you even guess at her age? (你猜猜她的年齡看。) I cannot even guess at her age. (我對她的年齡甚至連猜都猜不出來。)

120. (a) He *proceeded to* the question.

(b) He *proceeded with* the question.

(a) 他已開始研究那問題了。

(b) 他繼續去研究那問題了。

注 (a) 句中的 proceed＝begin, go forward (to do)，開始進行。(b) 句中的 proceed＝continue, go on (with, in)，(停止後)繼續進行。

習 題

試就 (a), (b) 不同的含義譯成中文：

1. (a) I met a young *man* in the street.

(b) I met a young *person* in the street.

2. (a) He came *to the town* in the evening.

(b) He came *to town* in the evening.

3. (a) You can tell me your opinion *while we eat.*
   (b) You can tell me your opinion *while we are eating.*
4. (a) They *will be* coming.
   (b) They *are* coming.
5. (a) It *seems* he is rather slow-witted.
   (b) It *would seem* he is rather slow-witted.
6. (a) They *live* in Singapore.
   (b) They *are living* in Singapore.
7. (a) He *pushed* the door.
   (b) He *pushed at* the door.
8. (a) He went out *on a fine day.*
   (b) *One fine day* he went out.
9. (a) She *sat up for* her husband all night.
   (b) She *sat up with* her husband all night.
10. (a) We are sure *that man is mortal.*
    (b) We are sure *that man is dead.*
11. (a) *The* cause of John's anxiety was his failure to pass the examination.
    (b) *A* cause of John's anxiety was his failure to pass the examination.
12. (a) The prime minister appeared *on television.*
    (b) The prime minister's address was broadcast *by television.*
13. (a) This is a *credible* story.
    (b) This is a *creditable* achievement.
14. (a) He is *not a teacher.*
    (b) He is *no teacher.*
15. (a) What do you *want from* me?
    (b) What do you *want with* me?
16. (a) He has *no less than* ten books.
    (b) He has *not less than* ten books.
17. (a) I have been *wired to* from home.
    (b) I have been *wired for* from home.

18. (a) This is a flash of humour *which surpasses Lin Yutang.*
    (b) This is a flash of humour *which Lin Yutang surpasses.*
19. (a) He is *sure of success.*
    (b) He is *sure to succeed.*
20. (a) *Few* of us know the truth.
    (b) *A few* of us know the truth.
    (c) *Not a few* of us know the truth.
21. (a) *On the contrary* he said nothing.
    (b) He said nothing *to the contrary.*
22. (a) *It is a pity* you did not go.
    (b) *It is a mercy* you did not go.
23. (a) I *wonder that* it is so.
    (b) I *wonder how* it is so.
24. (a) It *may* be done.
    (b) It *might* be done.
25. (a) I *wish I were* as rich as he.
    (b) I *wish to be* as rich as he.
26. (a) Let us *repair* our house.
    (b) Let us *repair* to our house.
27. (a) He wrote a letter *to me.*
    (b) He wrote a letter *for me.*
28. (a) He threw a bone *to the dog.*
    (b) He threw a bone *at the dog.*
29. (a) The lamp is *on* the table.
    (b) The lamp is *over* the table.
30. (a) He *is possessed of* great wealth.
    (b) He *is possessed with* dangerous ideas.
31. (a) I *doubt if* he is guilty.
    (b) I *suspect that* he is guilty.
32. (a) He always *interferes in* my business.
    (b) He always *interferes with* my business.

33. (a) He *passed by* a scholar.
    (b) He *passed for* a scholar.

34. (a) Air *consists of* oxygen and nitrogen.
    (b) Hapiness *consists in* contentment.
    (c) His action *consists with* his words.

35. (a) What is he *about to speak*?
    (b) What is he *to speak about*?

36. (a) I saw *a great many men* there.
    (b) I saw *many a great man* there.

37. (a) I never *heard her sing*.
    (b) I never *heard her song*.

38. (a) We hired the boat *by the hour*.
    (b) We hired the boat *for an hour*.

39. (a) Whose brothers *take you* to the park?
    (b) Whose brothers *do you take* to the park?

40. (a) *Many* of the jewels were stolen.
    (b) *Most* of the jewels were stolen.

41. (a) He was *looked upon as* a genius.
    (b) He was *looked up to as* a genius.

42. (a) I must *look to* the matter.
    (b) I must *look into* the matter.

43. (a) I *don't care* to go abroad.
    (b) I *don't mind* going abroad.

44. (a) I *shall* have some people come tomorrow.
    (b) I *will* have some people come tomorrow.

45. (a) The island is five miles *around*.
    (b) The island is five miles *across*.

46. (a) I *have studied* English for five years.
    (b) I *have been studying* English for five years.

47. (a) He *has been to* New York.
    (b) He *has gone to* New York.

48. (a) They are *at play* in the garden.
    (b) They said so only *in play*.

49. (a) He did it *in haste*.
    (b) He did it *in a hurry*.

50. (a) I have nothing *to write*.
    (b) I have nothing *to write with*.
    (c) I have nothing *to write on*.

51. (a) There is nothing *to see*.
    (b) There is nothing *to be seen*.

52. (a) Such men are *hard to find*.
    (b) Such men are *hard to be found*.

53. (a) I am *anxious about* the result.
    (b) I am *anxious to know* the result.

54. (a) I *did not notice* him.
    (b) I *took no notice of* him.

55. (a) She *met* a friend in the street.
    (b) She *met with* an accident in the street.

56. (a) Is there *any* difficulty in this?
    (b) Is there *some* difficulty in this?

57. (a) I admire her as much *as he*.
    (b) I admire her as much *as him*.

58. (a) I will pay at the end of *the* month.
    (b) I will pay at the end of *a* month.

59. (a) I came to the meeting *in time*.
    (b) I came to the meeting *on time*.

60. (a) I *think* it is not true.
    (b) I *should think* it is not true.

貳　常易譯錯的文句

I　中　譯　英

1. 中國的京戲你覺得怎樣？

   How do you think of Chinese opera? (誤)

   What do you think of Chinese opera? (正)

   How do you feel about Chinese opera? (正)

   How do you like Chinese opera? (正)

   注　How do you like it? = Do you like it much or little or dislike it?

2. 第二次世界大戰是一九四五年八月十五日結束的。

   The World War II came to an end on August 15, 1945. (誤)

   World War II came to an end on August 15th, 1945. (正)

   The Second World War ended on August 15th, 1945. (正)

3. 昨天晚上我們整晚在看電視。

   We spent last evening watching *the television*. (誤)

   We spent last evening watching *television*. (正)

   注　television 是一個不可數的名詞，不能加冠詞，也不能變成複數，但如有 set 一字時則非加冠詞不可，如 She won't leave *the* television set even though her husband is waiting for his supper.

4. 旅行社告訴了我們許多關於夏威夷的情形。

   The travel agency sent us *many informations* about the Hawaiian Islands. (誤)

   The travel agency sent us *much information* about the Hawaiian Islands. (正)

   注　information 也是一個不可數的名詞，不能說成複數。

5. 假期從明天開始。

   The vacation begins *from tomorrow*. (誤)

   The vacation begins *tomorrow*. (正)

注 中文的「從」字在這場合是不要譯出的，其他場合也不要譯成 from，例如「新學期從四月開始。」The new term begins *in* April.「新學期從四月五日開始。」The new term begins *on* the 5th of April.「茶會從六點開始。」The tea party begins *at* six o'clock.「教育從一個人出生開始。」Education begins *with* a man's birth. 例句中的 tomorrow，是一個副詞，副詞前是不可以用介詞的。April, the 5th, six o'clock, birth 都是名詞。

6. 這隻錶的價錢很貴。

The price of the watch is *dear*. (誤)

The watch is *dear*. (正)

The price of the watch is *high*. (正)

注 以物品爲主語時用dear或 cheap，以定價爲主語時就說 high 或 low.

7. 我和他是好朋友。

I am *a great friend* with him. (誤)

I am *great friends* with him. (正)

8. 旅行我總是坐三等。

I *travel always by* the third class. (誤)

I *always travel* third class. (正)

I always take a third-class car. (正)

注 說坐幾等時不要用介詞，說坐船，坐車，坐飛機等才要，如 by boat, by train, by plane 之類。幾等的等級前，不要用定冠詞，但如不用 travel 而改用 take 時，則要在等級前加一個不定冠詞，等級後加一個名詞，如上譯例。

9. 我不想去。——他也是。

I don't wish to go.—*So* does he. (誤)

I don't wish to go.—*Nor* does he. (誤)

I don't wish to go.—*Neither* does he. (正)

注 nor 在古文中雖可作副詞用但現爲連詞，neither 古爲連詞，現爲副詞。

10. 我不喜歡喝酒。——我兄弟也是一樣。

I dislike to drink.—*Neither* does my brother. (誤)

I dislike to drink.—*So* does my brother (正)

注 dislike 一字雖有否定之意，但表面上並沒有否定的字樣，在使用時仍可

看做是肯定的，故譯文應將 neither 改爲 so 才對。如說 I don't like to drink，雖意義相同，但字面上有否定 (don't)，所以後面可以援用 neither 一字。

11. 誰在敲門？

Who is *knocking* the door? (誤)

Who is knocking?(正)

Who is at the door?(正)

Who is *knocking at* the door? (正)

12. 你什麼時候到過倫敦的？

When *have you been* to London? (誤)

When *did you go* to London? (正)

When *were you* in London? (正)

13. 他沒有告訴我說他什麼時候回來。

He *has* not *told* me *when* he *will be* back. (誤)

He *didn't tell* me *when* he *would be* back. (正)

14. 那一點你是錯了。

You *have mistaken in* that point. (誤)

You *are mistaken on* that point. (正)

15. 倘戰爭爆發我們會變得怎樣呀？

What shall *we become* if war breaks out? (誤)

What shall *become of us* if war breaks out? (正)

注　自動詞的 become of＝happen to，意爲「降臨」，「遭遇」，說時則爲「怎樣」。中國話是以「我們」爲主語，但英文句中的主語則爲 what。

16. 老張也沒有來。

Old Chang has not come *also* (or *too*) (誤)

Old Chang has not come *either*. (正)

注　作「也」字解的 also 或是 too，只能與肯定連用，如果換上否定的句子，就得改用 either。

17. 昨天晚上我們玩得很愉快。

We *played* very pleasantly last night. (誤)

We *enjoyed ourselves* very much last night. (正)

We *had a good time* last night. (正)

注 玩牌，打球，演戲之類就用 play，中國話這兒說的玩是指度過一個愉快的時候，最好譯成 enjoy oneself 或 have a good time。

18. 如果他來，我願盡力爲他服務。

If he comes, *I'm glad* to do anything I can for him. (誤)

If he comes, *I'll be glad* to do anything I can for him. (正)

注 在副詞子句中是用現在時態代替未來時態的。

19. 王君是一九六五年南洋大學畢業的。

Mr. Wong *graduated* Nanyang University in 1965. (誤)

Mr. Wong *graduated at* Nanyang University in 1965. (正)

Mr. Wong *was graduated from* Nanyang University in 1965. (正)

注 英國人說 graduate at，美國人說 be graduated from，不過近來美國偶有略去 from 而說成 graduate college 的。

20. 他在那裏專攻中文，榮譽畢業。

There he *specialized* Chinese literature and graduated with *honour*. (誤)

There he *specialized in* Chinese literature and graduated with *honours*. (正)

There he *took* Chinese literature and graduated with honours. (正)

There he *majored in* Chinese literature and was graduated with honours. (正)

注 「專攻」美國話說 major in，英國話單說 take 一字就行了。榮譽畢業即獲得優等成績，注意 honours 要用複數。

21. 上個禮拜我們班上討論了關於男女同校的問題。

Last week our class *discussed about* coeducation. (誤)

Last week our class *discussed* coeducation. (正)

22. 我慣於遲睡。

I *am used to sit* up late at night. (誤)

I *am used to sitting* up late at night. (正)

注 be used to = be accustomed to，「慣於」，後接名詞或動名詞，不可接不定詞。如前無助動詞，單說 used to 時，則後接不定詞，是指過去的習慣行爲。參考：I used to sit up late at night. 意爲「我以前常很遲睡覺」；現在睡得早了。

23. 你喜歡看看我蒐集的郵票嗎？

Do you like to see my stamp collection? (誤)

Would you like to see my stamp collection? (正)

24. 他正忙着在寫信。

He is *busy to write* a letter. (誤)

He is *busy writing* a letter. (正)

25. 他們坐在小船上渡過河去了。

They crossed the river *on a boat*. (誤)

They crossed the river *in a boat*. (正)

26. 她生於一九五零年。

She was born in *the year of 1950*. (誤)

She was born *in the year 1950*. (正)

She was born *in 1950*. (正)

27. 我在一九三九年夏天離開倫敦。

I left London *in the summer 1939*. (誤)

I left London *in the summer of 1939*. (正)

28. 我想要一架電視機，但我沒有錢買它。

I want a TV set, but I can't afford to buy *it*. (誤)

I want a TV set, but I can't afford to buy *one*. (正)

注　it 是代表前面用有定冠詞 (the) 的名詞，如前面的名詞是冠有不定冠詞 (a) 時，則須用 one 爲代名詞。

29. 他的情形跟我不同。

His case is quite different from *me*. (誤)

His case is quite different from *mine*. (正)

30. 那地方像江南三月的溫暖。

The place is as warm as *March of Kiangnan*. (誤)

The place is as warm as *Kiangnan in March*. (正)

注　place 不能與 March 比較，應以同類的名詞「江南」來比。

31. 我跟叔父學英文。

I *studied* English *from* my uncle. (誤)

I *studied* English *under* my uncle. (正)

I *learned* English *from* my uncle. (正)

I *was taught* English *by* my uncle. (正)

32. 他的職業是教師。

His *profession* is a *teacher*. (誤)

He is a *teacher by profession*. (正)

33. 我的國籍是中國。

My *nationality* is *China*. (誤)

My *nationality* is *Chinese*. (正)

34. 我的教授主張我去申請獎學金。

My professor *suggested me to apply* for a scholarship. (誤)

My professor *suggested that I apply* for a scholarship. (正)

35. 請即回信。

Please *reply this letter* early. (誤)

Please *answer this letter* early. (正)

Please *reply to this letter* promptly. (正)

36. 那婦人跑到警察局去求救。

The woman ran to the police *for getting help*. (誤)

The woman ran to the police *to get help*. (正)

The woman ran to the police *for help*. (正)

37. 許多人在海上喪生。

Many people lost *their life* at sea. (誤)

Many people lost *their lives* at sea. (正)

38. 聽寫我完全不錯。

I didn't *have mistakes* in *the* dictation. (誤)

I didn't *have any mistakes* in dictation. (正)

39. 他從來不撒謊。

He always *says* the truth. (誤)

He always *speaks* the truth. (正)

He always *tells* the truth. (正)

40. 他前妻生了兩個孩子。

He has two children *of* his former wife. (誤)

He has two children *by* his former wife. (正)

注 by 有 born to him by 之意。

41. 我的見解和你相反。

My views are *opposite from* yours. (誤)

My views are *opposite to* yours. (正)

注　在 different 後才可接 from。

42. 他的意見和你的正相反。

His opinion is the very *opposite to* yours. (誤)

His opinion is the very *opposite of* yours. (正)

43. 大多數的子女都想要自立，不願依賴他們的父母。

Most children want to be *independent on* their parents. (誤)

Most children want to be *independent of* their parents. (正)

注　dependent 後接 on，而 independent 後接 of.

44. 我把窗子打開一下你不在乎嗎？

Do you mind if I *opened* the window? (誤)

Would you mind if I *opened* the window? (正)

Do you mind if I *open* the window? (正)

45. 請你到這兒來一下好嗎？

Do you *mind to come* here for a moment? (誤)

Do you *mind coming* here for a moment? (正)

Do you *care to come* here for a moment? (正)

46. 我開一下窗子你不在乎嗎？

Will you mind my opening the window? (誤)

Would you mind my opening the window? (正)

47. 他對中學教師講授英語教授法？

He lectured *teaching method of English* to high school teachers. (誤)

He lectured to high school teachers *on methods of teaching English*. (正)

48. 不久又有新的麻煩發生？

It *didn't take long before* new troubles *arose*. (誤)

It *wasn't long before* new troubles *arose*. (正)

It *didn't take long for* new troubles *to arise*. (正)

49. 旅行社宣佈不再接受旅客前往開羅的定票。

A travel agency *announced not to accept* any more bookings for tourist travel to Cairo. (誤)

A travel agency *announced that it would not accept* any more bookings for tourist travel to Cairo. (正)

50. 我很高興接受你的邀請。

It *gives me* much *pleasure in accepting* your invitation. (誤)

It *gives me* much *pleasure to accept* your invitation. (正)

I *have* much *pleasure in accepting* your invitation. (正)

I *take* great *pleasure in accepting* your invitation. (正)

注 take great pleasure=greatly enjoy. 如說 have the pleasure 則後不接 in 而接 of, 如 I have the pleasure of accepting your invitation. 也是通的，不過此種語法多用於下類句中：May I have the pleasure of taking a glass of wine with you? I once had the pleasure of being introduced to you. I am sorry I cannot have the pleasure of accompanying you today. I hope you will give me the pleasure of dining with me at 8 o'clock tomorrow evening at my place. There are many famous men whom I have not yet had the pleasene of meeting so far.

51. 這問題值得再討論一下。

It is *worth discussing* the question further. (誤)

It is *worth while* to discuss the question further. (正)

The question is *worth discussing* further. (正)

注 句中的 it 爲形式上的主語，眞正的主語是 discussing the question further. 因此 worth 變成沒有賓語了，故第一句譯文是不通的。第二句中的 it 仍爲形式上的主語，眞正的主語爲 to discuss the question further，而 worth 另有 while 一個名詞成爲它的賓語，所以就成爲一個完善的句子了。注意 worth 這個形容詞，後面必須接用賓語。

52. 他給了我一張伍佰元的支票。

He gave me a cheque *of* $500. (誤)

He gave me a cheque *for* $500. (正)

53. 他呼吸有大蒜味道。

He breathes *with garlic smell.* (誤)

His breath *smells of garlic.* (正)

注 他例如:「這咖啡有點大蒜味道」,不可譯爲 This coffee has a garlic taste. 應譯爲 This coffee tastes of garlic.

54. 我最好來講一個故事給你聽。

I can *do* no better than *to tell* you a story. (誤)

I can *do* no better than *tell* you a story. (正)

注 在 than 後的字的形式應和 than 前的一致,句中前面是 can do, 後面只能說 (can) tell, 不能說 (can) to tell. 他例如 It is better *to win* than *to lose.* I'd rather *stay* at home than *go* for a walk.

55. 錯誤顯然是在你那一邊。

The fault clearly *lies at* your side. (誤)

The fault clearly *lies with* your side. (正)

注 在自動詞 lie 後可採用各種各樣的介詞,惟含義各有不同,如 Sheets of paper lie *about* the room. (紙張散滿一屋。) The village lie *across* the river. (村莊在河的對岸。) Accusation of theft lay *against* him. (控他以盜竊罪。) The path lies *along* a stream. (小路沿溪。) The hot springs lie *among* pretty scenery. (溫泉在風光明媚之中。) The blame lies *at* his door. (錯在他。) A happy future lies *before you.* (幸福就在你的前途。) What mystery lay *behind* the disappearance of the girl? (少女失縱的後面潛在着什麼神秘?) The truth lies *between* extremes. (眞理存於兩個極端之間。) He has the mss. lying *by* him for the next number. (下一期的原稿在他那裏。) The charm of travel lies *in* its new experiences. (旅行的妙味在於新奇的經驗。) The ship is lying *off* the mouth of the river. (船停在河口以外。) The book lies *on* the floor. (書在地上。) A white mist lay *over* London. (倫敦爲白霧所籠罩。) The person lies *under* the suspicion of corruption. (那人有受賄的嫌疑。) The choice lies *with* you. (任你選擇。) 在 lie 字後採介詞 with 時, 意爲「是…的義務」,「是…的

責任」,他例如 It lies with you to decide.（決定的責任在你。你有義務來作決定。取決於你。）It lies with you to accept or reject the proposal.（接受或拒絕那個建議就全看你了。）The fault does not lie with the government officials.（責任不在政府官員。）

56. 那房間是用電力照明的。

The room is lighted *with electricity*.（誤）

The room is lighted *by* [means of] *electricity*.（正）

The room is lighted *with electric lamps*.（正）

注 用於無形的手段時要用 by，所以與抽象名詞連用，但用於有形的手段時則須用 with，所以與普通名詞連用。electricity 爲抽象名詞，electric lamps 爲普通名詞。

57. 他覺得那雜碎是他從來沒有嘗過的美味，那怕是在中國也沒有。

He thought the Chop Suey was more delicious than anything he had ever tasted before, *not even* in China.（誤）

He thought the Chop Suey was more delicious than anything he had ever tasted before, *even* in China.（正）

He thought the Chop Suey was such a delicacy he had *never* before tasted anywhere, *not* even in China.（正）

58. 美國成爲現今世界上最富有的國家。

The United States *become* the richest country in the world.（誤）

The United States *has become* the richest country in the world.（正）

注 The United States 要接單數動詞。說「現在已經成爲」應該用現在完成動詞。

59. 我剛才把它寫完了。

I *have* written it *just now*.（誤）

I *have just* written it.（正）

I *wrote* it *just now*.（正）

60. 他雖然生病但是仍去上學了。

Though he was ill, *but* he went to school.（誤）

He was ill, *but* he went to school.（正）

Though he was ill, [yet] he went to school.（正）

61. 我在下星期一去那裏。

I will go there *Sunday next.* (誤)

I will go there *next Sunday.* (正)

I will go there *on Sunday next.* (正)

注　凡 last, next 等字用於星期、年、月之前時,可將介詞略去,用在那些字後面,就必須加上介詞。

62. 你怎樣認識他的呀?

How you *come to know* him? (誤)

How *come* you *to know* him? (正)

注　慣用法在 come to do 的問句中,要將 do, did 等發問的虛字略去,這是古來的傳統。但在現今的口語中可說 How did you come to know him? 美口語還可以說 How come you didn't say anything? (你爲何一言不發?)

63. 我從來沒有聽見講過有這樣的事。

Never I have heard of such a thing. (誤)

Never have I heard of such a thing. (正)

64. 他稱讚他妹妹的勤快。

He *praised* his sister's *diligence.* (誤)

He *praised* his sister *for* her diligence. (正)

65. 有五百元一月就够生活了。

Five hundred dollars a month is enough *to live.* (誤)

Five hundred dollars a month is enough *to live on.* (正)

注　live 是自動詞,故要加介詞的 on.

66. 我從小孩子的時候起就認識他。

I have known him *since* a child. (誤)

I have known him *from* a child. (正)

I have known him *since* his childhood. (正)

注　從過去某一時期到現在爲止,英文要用現在完成時態,介詞就用 since,但有時不說「迄」(till) 也可以說「起」(from) 的,即用"from+普通名詞" 代替 "since+抽象名詞"。但在 from後也同樣可接抽象名詞,所以不說 He has been blind since childhood, 而說 He has been blind from childhood, 也是一樣。

67. 我們登得愈高，天氣愈冷。

We ascended *the higher*, it became *the colder*. (誤)

The higher we ascended, *the colder* it became. (正)

68. 他既不會說華語，也不會說英語。

He *neither* speaks Chinese *nor* English. (誤)

He speaks *neither* Chinese *nor* English. (正)

69. 消防隊員死了不止一人。

More than one firemen were killed. (誤)

More than one fireman was killed. (正)

70. 她打擊了他的頭，使他不省人事達一小時之久。

When she struck his head, he remained unconscious for an hour. (誤)

After she struck him on the head, he remained unconscious for an hour. (正)

He remained unconscious for an hour *after she struck him on the head*. (正)

71. 我正在聽她唱歌。

I *am hearing* her sweet song. (誤)

I *am listening to* her sweet song. (正)

72. 那便是我所收到的最後的消息。

That is *the last news* I've received. (誤)

That is *the latest news* I've received. (正)

73. 雙方的意見並沒有什麼不同。

There is no difference *between both views*. (誤)

There is no difference *between their views*. (正)

There is no difference *in their views*. (正)

74. 他有自己的一幢房子。

He *has his own house*. (誤)

He *has a house of his own*. (正)

注 英文的屬格代名詞 (Possessive Pronouns) 有兩種形式，普通的形式爲 my 等，後必須接名詞如 my book，絕對的形式爲 mine (=my book) 等，是爲避免重複地來說那名詞而採用的，例如 Your house is larger than mine (=my house)。在屬格代名詞的前面如再加指示

代名詞時，即在 my book 前再加 this, that, a, some, any, no 等字樣時，普通的形式便得改爲絕對的形式，以避免指示代名詞與屬格代名詞連在一起。三百年前的英文是可以運用的，即是可以說 this my book，而現代英文則必須改爲 this book of mine 才行。反身屬格 (Reflexive Possessive) 的 my own, your own, his own 等，也要採用絕對的形式，因爲現代英文已不說 He has *that his* own house. 或 She has *some her* own reasons. 而必須改成 He has that house of his own. 或 She has some reasons of her own.

75. 他是我父親的朋友。

He is a friend of my *father*. (誤)

He is a friend of my *father's*. (正)

注 名詞前面的屬格，可代定冠詞用，如 my brother'*s* wife = ***the*** wife of my brother. 又 my brother's friends = (all) ***the*** friends of my brother. 如果不是指某一個特定的人或幾個人時，則須用不定冠詞 (a)，那是不能用屬格來代替的，即是用了屬格，還得有不定冠詞，但我們又不能說my brother's *a* friend. 或 *a* my brother's friend, 所以只好說 a friend of my brother's. 這種表現法所含有的意味是 a friend (that is) my brother's 或 one of my brother's friends. 這便是英文的兩重屬格的由來。

76. 我和王君久別重逢至爲高興。

I am very glad to meet Mr. Wang again after a long *parting*.(誤)

I am very glad to meet Mr. Wang again after a long ***separation***. (正)

注 part 指離別的動作，如說離別的期間則用 separate.

77. 我在橋頭和他分手。

I *parted with* him on the bridge. (誤)

I *parted from* him on the bridge. (正)

注 與人分離說 part from, 與物分離說 part with, 例如 He hates to part with his money. (他極捨不得用錢。)

78. 這學校有三千個學生。

The school *has* three thousand students. (誤)

There are three thousand students in the school. (正)

註 英文的動詞 have 有三義：(1) 物質上的所有，如 I have a lot of friends.（我有許多朋友。）(2) 心身上的具有，如 I have a poor memory.（我的記性很壞。）(3) 構成上的含有，如 A week has seven days.＝There are seven days in a week.（一星期有七天。）例句中的 have 與 (3) 相似，但仍是似是而非，因學校是一個地點，不是機構，學校與學生的關係，不是不可分離的，不像星期少了一天就不成。還有 "there＋be" 原意為「存在」，存在於某處，因而變成「有」的意思。

79. 你方便的話，請在六點鐘來。

Please come at six if *you are convenient.*（誤）

Please come at six if *it is convenient to you.*（正）

80. 你有必要這樣去做。

It is *necessary of you* to do so.（誤）

It is *necessary for you* to do so.（正）

註 一個形容詞可以用來指「行為」，又可以用來指「行為者」，如 kind, good, foolish, nice, careful, careless 之類皆是。這種形容詞可以援用 of 來造句，如 It is kind of you.（行為）＝You are kind.（行為者）。另外有些形容詞，只能用來指「行為」，不能用來指「行為者」，如 necessary, impossible, inconvenient, unbearable 之類皆是。這種形容詞是不可以援用 of 來造句的，它只能援用 for，例如 It is necessary for you to go. 而不能說 You are necessary to go.

81. 她父親決不贊成她嫁給這樣一個窮人。

Her father will never *approve her marrying* such a poor man.（誤）

Her father will never *approve of her marrying* such a poor man.（正）

82. 由於整夜未睡，我們疲倦得要死。

We were tired to death *through* having sat up all night.（誤）

We were tired to death *from* having sat up all night.（正）

註 動名詞前的 through 是表理由的，要from 才能表原因。

83. 那囚犯的處死引起了很多的物議。

The prisoner's execution has caused a lot of public censure.（誤）

The execution of the prisoner has caused a lot of public censure.（正）

註 英文的屬格有兩種用法：一爲主格作用 (Subjective Possessive)。一爲賓格作用 (Objective Possessive)。例如 She has come to sing *his praise*. (她來讚美他。) 是賓格作用。 She doesn't want *his praise*. (她不要他讚美。) 是主格作用。說 his praise (他的讚美) 用作主格作用是不會有誤解的，但說 his praise (讚美他)用作賓格作用，即屬格變成了賓格，就令人費解了。這兩種作用在文字上是沒有分別的，讀者要從意義上才能加以辨明。如上例句中所說的 the prisoner's execution，意爲處死囚犯，當然是賓格作用，因爲被人處死，是被動，決不可能變成囚犯自己處死的，所以不能說成 the prisoner's execution，只能改用 of 的造句而說成 the execution of the prisoner，因爲用 of 的造句多是表賓格作用的，例如 the choice of him＝the act of choosing him. (選擇他)。如說 his choice＝the person or thing he has chosen (他所選定的人或物)，就是主格作用了。

84. 戰爭結束以後他就出洋去了。

After the war being over, he went abroad. (誤)

The war being over, he went abroad. (正)

註 在 Absolute Participle 的前面不要再加連詞或介詞。改正後的句子是屬於 Written English 方面的，如改爲 spoken English，則爲 After the war was over, he went abroad.

85. 雖則他病過好幾年，現在却完全好了。

Though having been ill for years, he is now quite well. (誤)

After having been ill for years, he is now quite well. (正)

Having been ill for years, he is now quite well. (正)

註 though 是連詞，只能用於連結兩個子句(clause)。句中 having been ill for years，不是一個子句，至多前面只能用介詞 after，或根本什麼都不要。

86. 一到新加坡，我的朋友就在機場等我。

On arriving at Singapore, *my friend* was waiting for me at the airport. (誤)

On arriving at Singapore, *I* found my friend waiting for me at the airport. (正)

注 凡是帶有介詞的動名詞，或是單獨的分詞，必須有一個意味上的主語，來配合這個動作。達到新加坡的是「我」，而主句中的主語卻是「我的朋友」，動作不能配合，所以是錯誤的。介詞 before 與 after 的情形和 on 一樣，故下面的兩句也是錯的：After finishing his work, I paid him.（他把工作做完，我就付錢給他。）Before reading the text, the vocabulary should be learned.（在閱讀課文之前應先學習生字。）

87. 他滿足於默默無聞的生活。

He is *content of living* in obscurity.（誤）

He is *content with living* in obscurity.（正）

He is *content to live* in obscurity.（正）

88. 他禁止孩子們吸煙。

He has *prohibited* the boys *to smoke*.（誤）

He has *prohibited* the boys *from smoking*.（正）

注 古代英文原是可以接不定詞的（如 God prohibited Adam to eat of the fruit of a certain tree.）但現代英文必須接 "from＋動名詞"。另一個同義字的 forbid，則可接不定詞，如 I have forbidden the boys to smoke.

89. 我確信可以獲得任命。

I am *confident in getting* an appointment.（誤）

I am *confident of getting* an appointment.（正）

注 confide 和 confidence 後皆接 in，如 He confided in your honesty.（他信任你的誠實。）She has great confidence in her success.（她自信她會成功。）但形容詞的 confident 後卻要接 of，例如 We are confident of victory.（我們確信會勝利。）

90. 他後悔不該那樣說的。

He *repents to have* said so.（誤）

He *repents of having* said so.（正）

He *repents his words*.（正）

91. 他堅持拒絕我的要求。

He *persisted to refuse* my request.（誤）

He *persisted in refusing* my request.（正）

92. 總而言之，日本人在思想上有島國根性。

The Japanese people are insular in their thinking *to sum up*.（誤）

To sum up, the Japanese people are insular in their thinking.（正）

注 獨立片語，如 to sum up, to tell the truth, strictly speaking, taking everything into consideration, judging from…等等，都是應該放在句首的。

93. 日本的氣候比英國溫和。

The *climate* of Japan is milder than *England*.（誤）

The *climate* of Japan is milder than *that* of England.（正）

注 比較一定要同性質的才可以，例句中以氣候比英國，故誤。改正爲 that 代表 climate，如前面名詞爲複數則用 those 代表。

94. 無知與疏忽是這錯誤的原因。

Ignorance and negligence *have caused* this mistake.（誤）

Ignorance and negligence *has caused* this mistake.（正）

注 兩個以上的主語用 and 連起來表示一個單純的目的或觀念時，動詞要用單數才對。他例如 Truth and honesty is always the best policy. Slow and steady wins the race. Bread and butter is his abomination.

95. 林博士代表新加坡大學出席會議。

Dr. Lim, on behalf of the University of Singapore, *attended* the conference.（誤）

Dr. Lim attended the conference on behalf of the University of Singapore.（正）

注 主語與述語務必放在一起，不要隔開。

96. 麥餅比米餅便宜。

A cake made of wheat costs less than *that* made of rice.（誤）

A cake made of wheat costs less than *one* made of rice.（正）

注 that 是從 the 變來的，屬於定冠詞的範圍之內，所以它只能代表有定冠詞的單數名詞，如 The cost of oil is less than that of gas.（油價比煤氣便宜。）但凡是有不定冠詞的單數名詞，就不能用 that 代表，只能用 one 代表，如上舉的兩個例句：one＝a cake 而 that＝the cost. 對於有定冠詞的單數名詞，也並不一定非用 that 代表不可，如

The step you have taken is *that* of much risk. (你所採取的步驟,是一個很危險的步驟。)一句中的 that 就錯了,應改爲 one 才對,因爲在動詞 is 後應接 a step, 所以只能用 one 代表。

97. 他不但是一位作家,而且是一位畫家。

He *not only* is a writer, *but also* a painter. (誤)

He is *not only* a writer, *but also* a painter. (正)

98. 我住在離城一哩遠的地方。

I live *at a mile distant* from the town. (誤)

I live *at a mile's distance* from the town. (正)

I live *a mile distant* from the town. (正)

注 at 是介詞,應置於名詞前,不可置於形容詞前,要用 at 則後必須接名詞的 distance, 不可接形容詞的 distant, 又 mile 既是名詞,自應改爲屬格。

99. 黃君在臺大讀博士學位。

Mr. Huang *studies the doctor's degree* at Taiwan University. (誤)

Mr. Huang *works for the doctor's degree* at Taiwan University. (正)

Mr. Huang *is a doctoral student* at Taiwan University. (正)

100. 這些問題太難,我只能解答兩個出來。

The *questions* were so difficult that I could *solve* only two. (誤)

The *questions* were so difficult that I could *answer* only two.(正)

注 solve a problem 和 answer a question 爲一定的說法。

101. 彼德是一個十歲的男孩。

Peter was *a boy of ten years old*. (誤)

Peter was *a boy of ten years of age*. (正)

Peter was *a boy of ten*. (正)

Peter was *a boy ten years old*. (正)

Peter was *a ten-year old boy*. (正)

102. 學生們在星期六晚上要去參加一個舞會。

The students are going to *a dance party* on Saturday night. (誤)

The students are going to *a dance* on Saturday night. (正)

注 舞會應該說 dancing party, 不要說dance party, 但一般只說dance

也就够了。開舞會就說 give a dance，去參加舞會就說 go to a dance. 那旅館每晚舉行舞會：At the hotel dances are held nightly. 我第一次遇見她是在一個舞會上：She and I first met at a dance. 他們請我參加舞會：They asked me to a dance. 規模較大的舞會，英文又可說 ball，是從拉丁文來的。

103. 我很願意幫你做任何事。

I am willing to *assist you to do* anything. (誤)

I am willing to *assist you in doing* anything. (正)

I am willing to *help you to do* anything. (正)

104. 辯論已近尾聲。

The debate was *drawing to an end.* (誤)

The debate was *drawing to a close.* (正)

The debate was *coming to an end.* (正)

105. 他以兒子爲榮。

He is *proud in* his son. (誤)

He is *proud of* his son. (正)

He *has a pride in* his *son.* (正)

He *prides himself on* his son. (正)

註 在形容詞 proud 後要接 of，在名詞 pride 後則接 in，在反身動詞後則接 on.

106. 這章須要重新寫過。

This chapter *needs being rewritten.* (誤)

This chapter *needs rewriting.* (正)

This chapter *needs to be rewritten.* (正)

註 動詞 need 後面接的動名詞，意思雖是被動，但字面上一定要用自動。如不接動名詞，也可改接不定詞，不過形式便恰相反了，這時的不定詞，一定要把被動表示出來，不可用自動的 to rewrite，要用被動的 to be rewritten. 他例如 This house needs repairing.＝This house needs to be repaired. (這屋子要修理。) 諺語有 The best horse needs breaking, and the aptest child needs teaching. (即使是最好的馬也需要受馴，即使是最聰明的孩子也需要受教。) 如係人做主語則後可接自動的不定詞，例如 Each of us needs to master such a foolish fear. (我們每個人都需要克服那種愚蠢的恐怖。)

107. 這機器要修理。

The machine *wants to repair*. (誤)

The machine *wants to be repaired*. (正)

The machine *wants repairing*. (正)

註 動詞 want 也和動詞 need 一樣，後接動名詞時要用自動，後接不定詞時才可以用被動，用自動便錯了。如果以人做主語，也就可以用自動的不定詞了，同時也可接被動的不定詞，例如 He wants to buy a watch. (他要買錶。) He wants to be notified beforehand. (他要人事先通知他。)

108. 我現在到醫院去看我兄弟的病。

I'm *going to hospital* to see my brother. (誤)

I'm *going to the hospital* to see my brother. (正)

註 到醫院去求醫是醫院的本分，不加冠詞，如 go to hospital (入院)。He is still in hospital. (他還在醫院裏。) He was taken to hospital. (他被送進醫院去了。) 反之，則須加冠詞，如 My uncle lives near the hospital. (我叔叔住在醫院附近。) Is it far from here to the hospital? (從這裏去醫院遠不遠？)

109. 那年我去了西貢，而第二年我又去了河內。

I went to Saigon that year, but *next year*, to Honoi. (誤)

I went to Saigon that year, but *the next year*, to Honoi. (正)

註 我們現在說明年，就用 next year, 如果是說過去的或未來的第二年，就得加冠詞說成 the next year. 如 The school year begins on the 1st of April and ends on the 31st of March of the next year. He started from here early the next morning. He arrived at New York on the 3rd of the next month.

110. 蘋果壞了四分之三。

Three-fourths of the apples *was* ruined. (誤)

Three-fourths of the apples *were* ruined. (正)

註 英文以分數爲主語時，由其後接的名詞來決定動詞的單複數，例句中 apples 爲複數，故動詞應改爲複數的 were。但 Three-fourths of the crop was ruined. (四分之三的收成都毀了。)

111. 貓把家裏的老鼠一掃而光。

The cat *cleared off rats from the house.* (誤)

The cat *cleared the house of rats.* (正)

The cat *swept rats out of the house.* (正)

注　用動詞 clear 時，其形式爲 "clear＋地點＋of＋物"，如用 sweep 時，則爲 "sweep＋物＋out of＋地點"。

112. 昨夜他喝得大醉了。

He *was* much *drunken* last night. (誤)

He *was* much *drunk* last night. (正)

注　drunken 是一個限定形容詞，只能用在名詞前，如 a drunken man(醉人)，不能作敍述形容詞用。

113. 笨人無藥可醫。

There is no medicine *to cure* a fool. (誤)

There is no medicine *for curing* a fool. (正)

114. 昨晚我接到了他的電話。

I *received a telephone* from him last night. (誤)

I *had* (or *received*) *a phone call* from him last night. (正)

He *called me up* last night. (正)

115. 我覺得這樣做是我的本分。

I *think to do so* is my duty. (誤)

I think *it* my duty to do so. (正)

注　英文慣用法是不用不定詞作賓語的，故以 it 代替。

116. 峨眉山是中國的最高的山。

Mt. Omei is the highest mountain *of* China. (誤)

Mt. Omei is the highest mountain *in* China. (正)

Mt. Omei is *China's* highest mountain. (正)

117. 我打網球一年來大有進步。

My tennis *has much progressed* in a year. (誤)

My tennis *has improved very much* in a year. (正)

I have *made much progress* in tennis this past year. (正)

118. 日本好像以極大的速度富裕起來。

Japan seems to be getting rich *at the tremendously speedy rate.*(誤)

Japan seems to be getting rich *at a tremendously speedy rate.* (正)

119. 去年我讀了好些海明威的小說。

Last year I read *many Hemingway's novels.* (誤)

Last year I read *many of Hemingway's novels.* (正)

Last year I read *many Hemingway novels.* (正)

120. 名畫落入了那人之手。

The famous painting *came into possession of* the man. (誤)

The famous painting *came into the possession of* the man. (正)

The man *came into possession of* the famous painting. (正)

註 「物入人手」爲 come into the possession of,「人使物入手」則爲 come into possession of, 因主語的不同, 影響名詞前冠詞的有無。

習　題

試改正下列錯誤的譯文:

1. 到公園裏去要怎樣走?

   How shall I go to the park? (誤)

2. 那講演是在禮拜五從兩點鐘開始。

   The lecture is from two o'clock on Friday. (誤)

3. 中國的風景很美。

   The sceneries of China are very fine. (誤)

4. 他們沒有房子住。

   They have no houses to live. (誤)

5. 比起福克納他更喜歡海明威。

   He likes better Hemingway than Faulkner. (誤)

6. 這隻錶要修理。

   This watch wants to mend. (誤)

7. 全家的人在九點鐘上教堂去做禮拜。

   The family go to the church at 9 o'clock. (誤)

8. 那年我身體很好, 但在那前一年我生了病。

   I was quite well that year, but ill the last year. (誤)

9. 那條沉沒的船不可能撈起來。

   It is impossible to raise the sunk ship. (誤)

10. 你早上來吧，不要晚上來。
Come in the morning instead of the evening. (誤)

11. 他的女兒嫁給一個闊人。
His daughter married to a rich man. (誤)

12. 這樣一個好天氣，你爲什麼要呆在家裏。
Why are you at home on such a fine weather? (誤)

13. 趕快，再遲就趕不上了。
Make haste, and you will be behind time. (誤)

14. 日暮途窮。
The day is falling and the road is coming to an end. (誤)

15. 我從一星期前開始就生病了。
I have been ill since a week ago. (誤)

16. 你小時候讀過的那些有趣味的故事你還記得嗎？
When you were a boy do you remember all the interesting stories you read? (誤)

17. 從汽車的遮風玻璃望過去，我們遠遠地就看見了那寶塔。
Looking out of our windshield, the pagoda would be seen by us in the distance. (誤)

18. 兔子的耳朵比貓的長。
The ears of a hare are longer than that of a cat. (誤)

19. 你去過美國嗎？
Have you gone to America? (誤)

20. 他來過此地一兩次。
He has come here once or twice. (誤)

21. 我昨天看見他。
I have seen him yesterday. (誤)

22. 我覺得那菜很好，吃得很滿意。
I found the food very good, and enjoyed to eat it. (誤)

23. 我想很快就回家去。
I think to go home very soon. (誤)
I think going home very soon. (誤)

24. 一個普通信都不會寫的人，對這樣重要的職務是不能勝任的。
    A man who is unable to write a letter is incapable to hold an office of such importance. (誤)

25. 他好像很不喜歡說實話。
    He seems to have an aversion to speak the truth. (誤)

26. 中國人是刻苦耐勞的民族。
    The Chinese are hard-working and industrious people. (誤)

27. 我可以跟你借個電話嗎？
    May I borrow your telephone? (誤)

28. 他被選爲議員了。
    He was elected councilman. (誤)

29. 王先生昨天回返新加坡了。
    Mr. Wong returned back to Singapore yesterday. (誤)

30. 這報告必須在下月六日提出。
    This report must be presented by 6th next month. (誤)

31. 請你記得要我交還。
    Please remember me to give it back. (誤)

32. 我在紐約定購了十本書。
    I ordered ten books in New York. (誤)

33. 我確信我的英語可以使人聽懂。
    I'm sure I can make myself understand in English. (誤)

34. 我確信我可以使你了解我的意味。
    I'm sure I can make you understood what I mean. (誤)

35. 汽車朝着公園的方向駛去了。
    The motor car ran to the direction of the park. (誤)

36. 我對他的正直不能信賴。
    I have no reliance in his honesty. (誤)

37. 他把大筆的錢交我代爲保管。
    He entrusted a large sum of money in me. (誤)

38. 小孩子總是這樣那樣頑皮的。
    Children are always in some mischief or another. (誤)

39. 我對他的悲傷深表同情。
I sympathize him deeply on his sorrow. (誤)

40. 他向我道歉他所犯的過失。
He apologized me on his mistake. (誤)

41. 有人這樣說，但我忘記是誰了。
Somebody said so, but I forget whom. (誤)

42. 他除了發財以外無他願望。
He has no other desire but to make a fortune. (誤)

43. 她的服裝不大入時。
Her dress does not conform to the fashion. (誤)

44. 如你所知道的，人生常比做航海。
As you know, life is often compared with a voyage. (誤)

45. 她入不敷出。
Her expenditures do not correspond with her income. (誤)

46. 我去弔慰了他父親之死。
I condoled him about his father's death. (誤)

47. 學生到了多少？
How many students did come? (誤)

48. 這些就是他們說是傻瓜的人。
These are the people whom they say are fools. (誤)

49. 臺灣比新加坡要大得多。
Taiwan is very larger than Singapore. (誤)

50. 我坐船回家要五天。
I take five days to return home by steamer. (誤)

51. 他是從後門進來的。
He entered from the back door. (誤)

52. 那個老人遭失明之痛。
The old man had his son died. (誤)

53. 這架縫衣機是中國製造的。
This sewing-machine is Chinese make. (誤)

54. 我從來沒有見過這樣高的人。
I never saw so a tall man before. (誤)

55. 他懂得知難而退。
He has good sense of quitting when he found the thing too difficult to do. (誤)

56. 馬可孛羅以一二五四年生於威尼斯一個商人的家裏。
Marco Polo was born in 1254 at a merchant's house in Venice. (誤)

57. 他從桌子上把花瓶拿去了。
He has taken the vase from the table. (誤)

58. 中國簡史的序文就是一部中國簡史。
The preface of "A Short History of China" is a short history of China. (誤)

59. 我國的早期教育發展很快。
The early education of our country grows very rapidly. (誤)

60. 由於各學院中的教授皆一時之選,致使那間大學名揚遐邇。
It is due to the outstanding professors in the various faculties that the university has won a worldwide fame. (誤)

I 英 譯 中

1. I am then never less alone than when alone. (W. Hazlitt)
我出外旅行時決不比孤獨時更少孤獨。(誤)
我出外旅行時和一人在家時同樣的寂寞。(正)

2. Nobody will be the wiser.
誰也不會更爲聰明。(誤)
誰也不懂得。(正)

註 英文形容詞 wise 有三個基本意思:(1) 聰明的,如 You were wise not to go. (你不去是聰明的)。(2) 飽學的,如 He is wise in the law. (他精通法律)。(3) 知道的,如 We are none the wiser for his explanations. (聽完他的解釋,我們還是不明白)。上例便是第三義,等於說 Nobody will know it. 通常用比較級,意爲「至今不知道的事,現在知道了」. 所謂 none the wiser = no wiser than before = as wise as before, 照舊。

3. The OED is the final court of appeal in all matters concerning English words.
牛津辭典是有關英文一切問題的最後的申訴法院。(誤)
牛津辭典是有關英文一切問題的最高權威。(正)

4. Don't you see the writing on the wall?
你不看見牆上的字嗎？(誤)
難道你看不到災難的迫切嗎？(正)
註　典出舊約全書但以理書 (Daniel 5:5-25)。

5. Truth lies at the bottom of the decanter.
眞相從玻璃酒瓶底下看出來。(誤)
酒後出眞言。(正)

6. Don't tell him home truths.
不要告訴他家裏的眞相。(誤)
不要對他講逆耳的事實。(正)

7. This will go a long way in overcoming the difficulty.
在克服困難上要走很遠的路。(誤)
這在突破難關時是很有幫助的。(正)
註　go a long way＝will be helpful. 又 go a little way with a person, 意爲對那人一點效果也沒有，對他影響很少。

8. He has a yellow streak in him.
他身上有一條黃的紋路。(誤)
他有膽小的氣質。(正)

9. One or two of the jewels would never be missed.
一兩粒寶石是決不會不見的。(誤)
失去一兩粒寶石是決不會知道的。(正)
註　作他動詞用的 miss 有四義：(1) 不中，不見，如 He hammered away, but half the time he missed the nail. (他不斷地用釘錘在釘，但一半都未釘中釘子。) (2) 略去，如 When we sing this hymn, miss out the second and fourth verses. (唱這首讚美歌時，略去第二第四兩節不唱。) (3) 逃避，避免，如 I missed the 7:30 train and so missed the accident. (我趕脫了七點半的車，所以未遇到那場車禍。) 第一個 miss，是上述第一義。(4) 覺察(什麼)不在，因(某人)不在而

想念。我們上面用來作例句的，正是這個意思。他例如 We shall miss you badly when you are away.（你走了我們一定會非常想念你的。）When did you miss your purse?（你何時才發覺你的錢包被扒去了？）Where did you miss your umbrella?（你到什麼地方才想起你的傘來?）

10. I know he meant business.

我知道他的用意在生意。（誤）

我知道他不是開玩笑的。（正）

註 口語用法的 mean business＝be serious; be earnest. 做生意的人是要認眞的，講求信用的，因此引申出上面這種意思來了。

11. This failure was the making of him.

這次失敗是他造成的。（誤）

這次失敗實爲他成功的基礎。（正）

註 動詞 make 原是「造成」的意思，又可作「發展或發達的過程。成功的原因或手段」解，例句中所用的便是這個意思。making 還可以加複數，而構成「要素」，「素質」之意，例如 He has in him the makings of a poet.（他有詩人的素質。）

12. He has never recovered her loss.

他永未能補償她的損失。（誤）

他永含失恃之悲。（正）

註 這是英文中最容易弄錯意思的一種表現法。英文屬格分主格作用和賓格作用兩種。例句說的是賓格作用，所謂 her loss＝the loss of his mother，而不是 his mother's loss，不是他母親的損失，而是他失去母親。如果說成 She has never recovered her loss. 就是主格作用，因爲 she 和 her 是同一人，her loss 就是她的損失。從他動詞變來的名詞，就能有這兩種作用。

13. I could do with more leisure time.

有更多的閑暇我就能做了。（誤）

要再多有一些閑暇就好了呀。（正）

註 can do＝be satisfied with; be content with，滿足，忍受。在 do 之前用 can 的過去 could 時，便有「要能得到就好了」，「想要」的意

思，不過常出於戲言。That man could do with a shave. (那人要把鬍子剃光就好了。)

14. She is now in a delicate condition.

她現在是在一種微妙的狀態中。(誤)

她現在是在懷孕中。(正)

注 分辨 a delicate condition 和 a delicate situation，後者意為「困難的局勢」。

15. The lecturer carried his audience with him.

講演者把他的聽衆帶走了。(誤)

講演者博得全場喝采。(正)

注 他動詞 carry 除普通作「搬運」，「携帶」解外，還有「吸引(聽衆或觀衆)」的意思，如 His acting carried the house. (他的演技博得滿場喝采。) 又有「獲勝」(在攻城略地，選舉，提案等時) 的意思，如 Our troops carried the enemy's fort. (我軍攻下了敵人的砲臺。) He carried the election. (他當選了。) The proposal was carried with acclamation. (提案在大家鼓掌喝采中通過了。)

16. General Smith and my father are on first name basis.

史將軍和我父親都是在第一名的基礎上。(誤)

史將軍和我父親是稱呼名字的知交。(正)

注 on...basis 或 on the basis of; 意為「在…原則上」,「在…基礎上」。on an equal basis (在平等的原則上)。am on a fifty-fifty basis with him. (我和他平分。)

17. The grey mare is the better horse.

灰色的牝馬是較好的馬。(誤)

牝鷄司晨。(正)

注 這是一句諺語，意為丈夫受到妻子的支配。John Galsworthy 在他的名著 The Man of Property 中說，"D'you think he knows his own mind? He seems to me a poor thing. I should say the grey mare was the better horse!" (你以為他有決心嗎？我覺得他太可憐了。簡直是牝鷄司晨呀！)

18. How much did you have to pay down on the car?

在那部車子上你一共花了多少錢？(誤)

那部車子你第一次付出多少現錢？(正)

註 down=in cash，在買東西時付出的現金，如 You pay five thousand dollars down and the remainder in installments.（你付五千元現錢，其餘分期付款。）

19. Rich and poor were sitting cheek by jowl in the audience.

在聽衆中貧富分開坐着。(誤)

窮人和濶人並肩坐在那裏聽講。(正)

註 cheek by jowl 是一個成語，意爲「極爲接近」，「密接」，因爲 cheek 是臉頰，而 jowl 是下顎，二者原是緊接在一起的。胖人因有下顎的垂肉(jowl)，而變成雙下巴 (double-chinned)。

20. Keep your chin up.

抬起頭來。(誤)

不要失去勇氣。(正)

21. The wind blows south.

風向南邊吹去。(誤)

風從南邊吹來。(正)

註 凡表示方位的字，如東南西北，用作副詞時，其意爲「朝那方向去」，如 The river flows south.（河水向南流去。）唯有說到風的時候，就恰好相反，而指「從那方向來」。如赤壁之戰那時正颳着東風，則說 At that time the wind blew east.

22. There was no living in the island.

那島上無生物。(誤)

那島不能居住。(正)

註 "There is no＋動名詞"＝"We cannot＋原形不定詞"＝"It is impossible＋to-Infinitive".

23. A drowning man catches at a straw.

一個落水的人抓住一根草。(誤)

一個將溺死的人那怕是一根草也要去抓。(正)

註 catch a straw 爲實際抓住，catch at a straw 爲還未抓到手，不過努力想去抓罷了。這個成語說的 catch at a straw 是指 an action of despair，表示絕望時的心情。

24. It was not that he had plenty of money.

他並不是有很多的錢。(誤)

那並不是因爲他有很多的錢。(正)

注　這個 it 並不代表 that 以下的子句，而只是一個普通的代名詞。在這種句式中常可將 it is 略去不說。這個 that=because，句首補上 it is，使成爲一個完整的句子而已。說得更完全時，便是 It is not that ...but it is...that...。代名詞的 it 意爲 the reason 或 what I mean.

25. The cavalry were well mounted.

騎兵都已上馬待發了。(誤)

騎兵都是騎的好馬。(正)

注　mount 在此不作「騎」解，而是指「供給馬匹」，又 well 非「善於」騎馬，而是指「好」馬而言。他例如 The woman was well dressed，不是說那婦人善於穿衣，而是說她的服裝都麗。

26. He wanted to go to sea.

他要到海邊去。(誤)

他要去當水手。(正)

注　want 作他動詞用時，除「要」一個主要意思外，又還有「缺少」的意思。如 He wants judgment.（他缺少判斷力。）作自動詞用時則一定作「缺少」或「貧困」解，如 The house wants in height.（這房子不够高。）We mustn't let him want in his old age.（我們一定不要使他在老年貧困。）wanting 無論作形容詞或介詞用，都一定是作「缺少」解的，如 Many pages of this book are wanting.（這本書缺了很多頁。）Wanting mutual trust, friendship is impossible.(無互信卽無友誼。)

27. She is careless of her dress.

她不注意她的衣服。(誤)

她不愛惜她的衣服。(正)

注　careless of，意爲「不重視」，若謂「不修邊幅」則應說 careless about.

28. None is so deaf as those that won't hear.

沒有比聽不見的人更聾的了。(誤)

沒有比不要聽的人更聾的了。(正)

注 won't＝will not，表示不要，不想要，含有意志在內，不是不能。

29. You must make good any loss.

你必須轉禍爲福。(誤)

有任何損失你必須賠償。(正)

注 make good，有「賠償」之意，如 Let me make good your loss.（讓我賠償你的損失。）又有「實踐」之意，如 You must make good a promise.（你必須實踐諾言。）

30. Those apples are good and ripe.

那些蘋果是優良且成熟的。(誤)

那些蘋果是很成熟了的。(正)

注 good and，當作一個副詞用，意爲「非常」(very)，「完全」(thoroughly)。同類型的表現法還有 nice and (＝nicely)，rare and (＝rarely) 等，如 The car was going nice and fast.＝The car was going satisfactorily fast.（車子跑得够快了。）

31. The smoke betrayed where the dwelling lay.

煙將家屋毀壞了。(誤)

炊煙起處有人家。(正)

注 動詞 betray 有四義：(1) 出賣。如 They betrayed their country.（他們出賣了自己的國家。）He was betrayed by his friend.（他爲朋友所出賣。）(2) 不忠，辜負。如 She betrayed her promise.（她不守諾言。）He will not betray our trust.（他不負我們所託。）(3) 洩露。如 He betrayed his friend's secret.（洩友之秘密。）(4) 無意中暴露，顯示。如 His behaviour betrayed his intention.（他的行爲顯出企圖。）His mistakes betrayed his lack of education.（錯誤顯出他缺乏教育。）上面的例句正是這第四義，深山中的茅屋，爲樹木所遮蔽，外人看不出來，但有炊煙升起時，就顯示出那裏有人家了。

32. Curses come home to roost.

咒詛回到老巢。(誤)

害人終害己。(正)

注 roost 原意爲巢，引申爲安歇處，說 go to roost，即爲上床睡覺。例句說咒詛回到原來出發的地方，即是反而害了自己。

33. He is brave like anything.

他像任何東西一樣的勇敢。(誤)

其勇無比。(正)

注　like anything, 意爲拿任何東西來譬喻都不相稱，引申而成「非常」「不劣於任何東西」之意。

34. It is said that his days are numbered.

據說他的日子都計算好了。(誤)

據說他的死期已近。(正)

注　number 用作被動時，有「爲數可數」之意，即「有限」，「無多」，「迫切」的意思。傳說人壽有定，當生命將盡時，可以說 His hour has come. 或 His course is run.

35. It is time he began to work.

這時他已經開始工作了。(誤)

現在是他應該開始工作的時候了。(正)

注　"It is time＋主語＋過去動詞"，就和 "It is time for＋賓語＋不定詞" 一樣的意思。句中的過去動詞是一種假設語氣的用法，他例如 It is time I was going. (我早應該告辭了。)

36. He was lost in admiration.

他被人讚揚不置。(誤)

他不勝羨慕之至。(正)

注　這句也可譯爲「他不勝讚賞。」be lost in, 原意是隱匿在什麼東西中間而看不見了，如山峯被雲遮住，就說 The summit is lost in the clouds. 說某人走失在人羣中看不見了，就是 He was lost (sight of) in the crowd. 所謂 be lost in, 即從 be lost sight of in 而來。所以 He was lost in admiration. 原意是說在 admiration 中看不見自身，也就是進入忘我的境界，因羨慕或讚賞過甚，而忘其自身的存在了。中國話說的「發憤忘食」，「得意忘形」中的忘字，正是這種情形。

37. He was strong in his time.

他在一生中都很強健。(誤)

他在年輕時身體強壯。(正)

注　in one's time (或 days), 意爲 when he was young (或 at his best)。相反的說法則爲 in one's age. (在老年)。

38. He may be drowned for all I care.

不顧我怎樣當心，他或許仍然會溺死的。(誤)

他也許會溺死，但我毫不介意。(正)

註 for all I care＝I don't care if. 英文說的 for all 或 with all, 實有不顧 (notwithstanding) 之意，如 For all his wealth, he is unhappy. (他雖有那麼多的錢還是不快樂。)

39. There is no love lost between them.

他們之間並未失掉愛情。(誤)

我們非常不和。(正)

註 這是委婉的說法，意爲他們之間根本無愛情可言，換言之，There is hatred between them. (他們之間只有憎恨。)

40. He had words with her.

他和她談過話了 (誤)。

他和她口角了。(正)

註 have words with 或 exchange words with, 爲互相爭論或口角之意。本例也可說成 They had words together. 英文的 words, 常有吵嘴的意思，如proceed from words to blows(由爭論而至毆打。)

41. He was laid up for a few days.

他被安插好幾天了。(誤)

他病倒兩三天了。(正)

註 因病或傷睡在牀上，英文說 lay up, 如 be laid up with illness (臥病)；be laid up with a broken leg (因折腿不能起牀)。

42. He took my advice in good part.

他接受了我的忠告最好的部分。(誤)

他容納了我的忠言。(正)

註 take something in good part, 意爲「善意地接受」或「順受」。相反的說法有 in bad (或 ill) part, 則爲「不悅」或「逆受」。A 教授請假一日後通知學生翌晨照常上課，在黑板上寫道 "Prof. A will meet his class tomorrow morning." 有頑皮學生惡作劇，把 class 一字的第一個字母 "c" 擦去，變成了 lass (意爲少女或情婦)，教授見到不以爲忤 (The professor took the practical joke in good part.) 進而再擦去 "l" 那個字母，如是學生變成蠢材了。

43. It is a wise man that never makes mistakes

聰明人從來不做錯事。(誤)

智者千慮必有一失。(正)

註　此句照字面解釋，似應照誤句的譯法，不過這是一句古來的諺語，凡 "it is...that (who)" 的構造，都含有「無論怎樣…都不免」的意思。參考下列各句: It is an ill wind that blows nobody good. (害於此者利於彼。人病醫生喜。人死和尚樂。) It is an ill bird that fouls its own nest. (自誹其家者未之有也。家醜不可外揚。) It is a good workman that never blunders. (無論怎樣好的工人有時都不免做錯。) It is a long lane that has no turning. (否極泰來。) It is a wise mother who knows her own child. (爲母者不知其子之惡。) It is a good divine who follows his own instructions. (能說者不能行。)

44. We parted the best friends.

我們和最好的朋友離別了。(誤)

我們在分別時是極好的朋友。(正)

註　part 是一個自動詞，the best freinds 爲補語。

45. Twenty failed, myself among the rest.

有二十人落第，但我自己不在內。(誤)

落第者二十名，我自己也是其中之一。(正)

註　the rest, 原意爲「其餘」，如 as for the rest (至於其他之點)。但 among the rest, 則係一個成語，意爲 among the number (就在那個數目之中)。

46. I am in his debt.

我是他的債主。(誤)

我借了他的錢。(正)

註　be in one's debt, 意爲「有負於人」,「欠他的債」，進而有「蒙恩」的意思。

47. He is dead, as I live.

他死了，我還活着。(誤)

他的的確確是死了。(正)

注 as I live 在此意爲 indeed (的確), 是加重前面主句的。英文還有其他類似的說法, 如 as I am here, as the sun shines, as you stand here, as my nose is on my face 等等。

48. She will make you a good wife.

她將使你做一個好妻子。(誤)

她將成爲你的好妻子。(正)

注 這個 make 是完全他動詞, 採用了兩個賓語, 前面的 you 爲間接賓語, 後面的 good wife 爲直接賓語。「母親要替我買一隻錶」一語, 如不譯爲 Mother will buy a watch for me. 時, 也可譯爲 Mother will buy me a watch. 所以上舉例句就是 She well make a good wife for you 的另一種說法。利用 make 這個他動詞, 我們還可以造出這樣的妙句: She made him a good husband because she made him a good wife. (因爲她成爲他的好妻子, 所以也把他做成了一個好丈夫。) 第一個 made 爲不完全他動詞; 第二個 made 爲完全他動詞。

49. His picture does credit to a professional.

他的畫可增加專家的信用。(誤)

他的畫較之專家所作亦無遜色。(正)

注 does credit to = be worthy of, 意爲「有成爲的價值」,「爲之增光」, 如 She does credit to the educational system pursued here. (Thackeray) (她爲這裏所追求的教育制度增光不少。)

50. I am staying with a friend.

我和一個朋友同住。(誤)

我現在住在一個朋友家裏。(正)

注 stay with = stay at -'s house. 用 with 時後接「人物」, 用 in 時後接「地方」, 用 at 時後接「房屋」。

51. They made an example of the boy.

他們以此童爲模範。(誤)

他們懲罰此童以儆其餘。(正)

注 make an example of one = punish one as an example to others. = make an example of the first offender as a warning to others. (懲初犯者以儆效尤)。注意: 如說 set an example, 就是「示範」了, 如 He set an example to his inferiors. (他爲晚輩示範。)

You should set an example for the future. (你應以身作則，垂法於後。)

52. We found them at table.

我發見他們在打牌。(誤)

我看見他們在用餐。(正)

註　green table 是指賭博，普通單說 table 一字，多半是說用餐，如 lay the table 擺刀叉準備用餐。keep a good table 餐食豐美。keep an open table 廣納食客。

53. I will make myself obeyed.

我要使自己服從。(誤)

我自己說的話必將恪守。(正)

註　參考：I made myself understood in English. (我使別人能聽懂我用英語說的話。) 例句中的 obeyed 的用法，與上例中的 understood 相同。如說 I made you understand me. (我使你了解我。) 則與說 I will make others obey me. (我要使別人服從我。) 用法相同，understand 和 obey 二字，都是略去了 to 的不定詞。

54. But for hope, life would be short.

但是因爲希望，人生是短促的。(誤)

如果沒有希望，人生苦短。(正)

註　but for = if it were not for 或 if it had not been for (如果沒有)，可作爲過去或過去完成的省略。這個 but 有否定之意，後面如不接 for，而接 that 也是一樣，如 Life could be short, but that hope prolongs it. (人生是短促的，若非希望去延長它的話。)

55. He is ignorant to a proverb.

他不懂得這句諺語。(誤)

他的無知是有名的。(正)

註　這句話又可說成 His ignorance is a proverb. 或 He is a proverb for ignorance. 所謂 proverb，是指盡人皆知的事，故 to a proverb，意即盡人皆知，達到盡人皆知的程度。參考：He is ignorant to a wonder. (他的無知令人吃驚。) 改用形容詞也是一樣，如 His generosity is proverbial = He is proverbial for his generosity. (他的大量是人所共知的。)

56. The man was generous to a fault.

那人寬恕過失。(誤)

他過於寬大。(正)

注 to a fault＝to excess; excessively, 過度地，極端地。他例如，He is kind to a fault. (他極端親切。) 用上 fault 一字，原意爲即令有缺點也滿不在乎。

57. I have no opinion of that sort of man.

我不贊成那種人的意見。(誤)

我對於那種人毫無好感。(正)

注 句中的 opinion 一字，不是「意見」，而是「評價」的意思，又可作「信用」解，如 I have no opinion of him. (我不相信其人。) 他例如 I have a very high opinion of him. (我尊敬他。)

58. He will finish it in no time.

他將永遠不能完成此事。(誤)

他馬上就會把這個做完。(正)

注 in no time＝in a moment. 立刻。

59. I have a long letter in hand.

我手中拿着一封長信。(誤)

我正在寫着一封長信。(正)

注 如果是手中拿着的話，應說 I have a long letter in my hand. 單說 have in hand 意爲 be engaged in (正進行中，擔任着，制馭着)。他例如 He has a novel in hand. (他正在寫一部長篇小說。)參考：at hand (近，在近邊，在手邊)，by hand (用手)，on hand (現存着，即來)，to hand (到手，收到)。

60. He thought all his own that she had.

他以爲他自己所有的一切都是她的。(誤)

他以爲她所有的一切都是他自己的。(正)

注 all 是 that she had 的 antecedant (先行詞)。

61. He is equal to any task whatever.

他對任何事情都是同等看待的。(誤)

他對任何工作都可勝任愉快。(正)

注 be equal to the work＝be able to do the work, 勝任愉快，應付

裕如。他例如 He was equal to the occasion. (他能應付那種局勢。他能臨機應變。) She is very weak and not equal to a long journey. (她身體很弱，不堪長途跋涉。) She does not feel equal to receiving so many visitors. (她覺得力有未逮，不能接待這麼多的客人。)

62. He has to answer to me for the letter.

他必須回答我那封信。(誤)

關於那封信他必須對我負責。(正)

注 answer for, 有「負責」的意思，如 answer for a crime (對一種罪行負責。) answer for his safety. (負責他的安全。) You will have to answer for your wrongdoings one day. (將來有一天，你會自食其惡果的。) I can't answer for his honesty. (我不能保證他的誠實。)

63. They did not answer to your explanation.

他們對你的解釋沒有回答。(誤)

那些和你的解釋不相符合。(正)

注 「回答」只能用 answer 一字，不能加 to。英文說的 answer to = correspond, 即「符合」之意。主語的 they, 指事不指人。

64. The officer was broken for neglect of duty.

那軍官破壞守則，忽視義務。(誤)

那軍官因玩忽職責而受降級處分。(正)

注 break = reduce in rank, 是美國用法，說 break an officer, 便是將他革職 (dismiss), 把他的官階降級到士兵的地位。

65. They were killed to a man.

他們被殺得只剩下一個人了。(誤)

他們被殺得片甲不留。(正)

注 (all) to a man = all without exception, (一個人都不留，全部), 實連最後一人也包括在內，並無例外。他例如 Though we expected some absences, the staff were there to a man. (我們以爲有人缺席，實則都到齊了。)

66. The village is on the side of the mountain.

那村莊在山旁。(誤)

那村莊在山腰。(正)

注 山有陰陽兩面 (two sides), 說在一面上, 自然是在半山上. 若說在旁邊, 則是指在山下的意思, 英文爲 by the side of.

67. He was at once a soldier and a writer.

他立刻成爲一個軍人和作家了。(誤)

他是一個軍人, 同時又是一個作家。(正)

注 英文成語 at once, 原有兩個意思, 卽「立刻」, 和「同時」, 例句中後面跟了一個 and, 說明是兩件事, 自然應作同時解。

68. She can play on the piano after a fashion.

她能隨時俗的所尙彈奏鋼琴。(誤)

她能稍許彈彈鋼琴。(正)

注 after a fashion = not satisfactorily but somehow or other, 乃委婉的說法, 意爲「稍許」,「略爲」。他例如She has a rough manner, but she is kind after a fashion. (她態度粗魯, 但人還和善。) 如把不定冠詞改變爲定冠詞, 就變成「追逐時髦」的意思了: after the fashion = in accordance with the prevailing style of dress, etc. 例如 This kind of hat is after the fashion. (這種帽子正在流行。)

69. He was worn out with company.

他已倦於交遊了。(誤)

來客太多使他疲於應接。(正)

注 company 在此作「客人」或「友伴」解, 例如 He is fond of company. (他好客。) Will you favour me with your company at dinner? (敬備菲酌, 恭候台光。)

70. Take this as an earnest of what is to come.

把這個當作未來熱心從事的表示。(誤)

拿這個去作爲定金, 以後再行付淸。(正)

注 earnest 作形容詞用時意爲「熱心」或「認眞」, 但作名詞用時, 則意爲「定金」、「保證」、「抵押」、「預兆」。

71. It is the man behind the gun that tells.

說話的是在大砲後面的人。(誤)

勝敗在人而不在武器。(正)

注　動詞 tell=produce marked effect (見效，奏功)。例如 Money is bound to tell. (錢到效生。) Every shot tells. (百發百中。) Years begin to tell upon him. (年老使他開始顯得虛弱起來。)

72. He never calls a spade a spade.

他從來不把鋤頭叫做鋤頭。(誤)

他從來不說直話。(正)

注　call a spade a spade=speak quite plainly (直言無隱。) 原是打橋牌的用法，因爲玩牌時手上有什麼牌常不直說，分明手上是一張 spade, 却故意說成 club, 或 heart, 或 diamond, 以亂視聽。

73. The proper study of mankind is man. (A. Pope)

人類能正當學習的只有男人。(誤)

要正當地研究人類，就應以人爲對象。(正)

注　句尾的 man, 無冠詞，仍然是指 mankind.

74. The Child is father of the Man. (W. Wordsworth)

孩子是男人的父親。(誤)

成人是由幼兒長大的。(正)

注　意指從幼兒的心中產生出大人的思想感情來，俗語說的三歲兒童百歲魂，可知一粒小的種子可以長成一株參天喬木；現在倒過來說，成爲 paradox (似非而是的警語，如越幫越忙，越忙越慢之類)，倒是很有趣的。句中 Child 和 Man 都用大寫，不但表示強調，而且含有抽象的意味。

75. Every time he snickers, he sprays his audience, like a Chinese laundryman. (Erle Stanley Gardner)

每次他用目光掃射他的聽衆時，他都不免暗笑，像一個中國洗衣匠燙衣服的樣子。(誤)

每次他笑時唾沫橫飛到他的對談者的身上，就好像中國人的洗衣作在燙衣時用口噴水一樣。(正)

76. That picture flatters her.

那是逢迎她而畫的。(誤)

那畫像實美過她本人。(正)

77. He flatters himself that he speaks English as well as an Englishman.

他誇獎自己的英語說得和英國人一樣好。(誤)

他妄自以為他說英語跟英國人一樣好。(正)

注 flatter oneself that=feel satisfaction with oneself, 妄自以為, 自鳴得意, 私自竊喜。

78. It does not belong to me to dictate to my colleagues.

要同僚給我筆錄的事是不屬於我的。(誤)

我無權對同僚下命令。(正)

注 自動詞的 belong 有四種用法：(1) 關係上的所屬, 如 He belongs to the Republican Party. (他是共和黨。) (2) 主權上的所屬, 如 This book belongs to me. (這本書是我的。) (3) 配合上的所屬, 如 That cover belongs to this jar. (那蓋是這個瓶子的。) (4) 地位上的所屬, 如 This is a place where (=to which) he doesn't belong. (這是不合他身分的地方。) 上例便是第四種用法。此字英國用法後常接介詞 to, 美國用法則可接 among, in, on, under, with 各樣不同的介詞。至於動詞 dictate, 也有二義：(1) 口述令人筆錄, 如 I dictate letters to my clerk. (我令書記筆錄信件。)(2)指示, 命令, 指定, 如 The country that won the war dictated the terms of peace to the country that lost. (戰勝國向戰敗國指令講和的條件。) I cannot give order, nor will I be dictated to. (既不能令, 又不受命。) It belongs to me to dictate to them. (我有權命令他們。) It is not for you to dictate to me. (你不可以向我下命令。) I will not be dictated to. (我不受命。)

79. Better not be at all than not be noble. (Tennyson)

與其不能高尚, 不如完全不要。(誤)

與其忍辱偷生, 不如光榮而死。(正)

寧為玉碎, 不為瓦全。(正)

注 句前省略了 It would be 三字, 有時也可看作省略了 You had 二字, 他例如 Better be a nettle in the side of your friend than his echo. (Emerson) (與其做朋友的應聲蟲, 不如做他腰間的荨蔴, 即不能萬事逢迎。)

80. Homekeeping youth have ever homely wits.
守在家裏的青年總有家常的機智。(誤)
足不出國門的年輕人,常是心智平庸的。(正)
老是呆在國內的年輕人,總是頭腦呆板的。(正)

81. I will see you hanged first.
我要看你先吊死。(誤)
那裏有人肯做這樣的事。(正)
註　see 字後面略去了 that 的連詞。這個 see 即 see to it 之略,也就是 take care 的意思。他例如 I will see you avenged. (必定使你可以報仇。)

82. She's the sort of woman who likes to be very much in evidence.
她是那種喜歡求證的女人。(誤)
她是屬於愛出風頭的女人。(正)
註　in evidence=conspicuous 顯然可見。例如 Smith is nowhere in evidence. (史密斯不見了。)

83. He doesn't know any better.
他不知道任何更好的。(誤)
他居然有這樣笨。(正)
註　know better=be wiser.

84. He is one of the institutions of the place.
他是當地機構之一。(誤)
他是當地知名人物之一。(正)
註　institution 俗語有名人之意。他例如 John W. Gardner 說的, Self-congratulation should be taken in small doses. It is habit-forming, and most human institutions are far gone in addiction. (自歌自頌只可偶一爲之,多必成癮,而大多數的達官貴人都已成爲癮君子了。)

85. I'll eat my hat if I do.
如果我做的話,我就要吃掉我的帽子。(誤)
我決不做。(正)

86. It is the watch I am anxious to have mended.
這就是我繫念着是否已修理好了的錶。(誤)

這就是我很望去把它修理好的錶。(正)

注 不可把 have mended 當作完成動詞來看,須知 watch 才是 have 的賓語,全句用單句說時,則成 I am anxious to have the watch mended.

87. I can make nothing of what he says.

我認爲他說的話一文不值。(誤)

他說的話我一點也不懂得。(正)

注 make...of, 普通是作 consider as (認爲) 解的,不過加上一個 can, 意思就大不相同了。can make...of＝understand (了解)。

88. I did what I thought was wise.

我做了我想做的事是聰明的。(誤)

我做了我以爲是賢明的事。(正)

注 句中有句, I thought 是插進去的另一個句子, was 的主語是 what. 主句是 I did what was wise. 不可把 what I thought 當作 was 的主語。

89. He talked himself hoarse.

他用粗啞的聲音說話。(誤)

他說得聲音都嘶啞了。(正)

注 hoarse 是補語,不是表手段,而是表結果的。全文意爲 He talked till he was hoarse. 類例如 She cried herself blind. (眼睛都哭瞎了。)

90. I went an enemy, and returned a friend.

我去掉一個敵人,迎回一個朋友。(誤)

我去時是敵,歸時爲友。(正)

注 enemy 和 friend 都是補語,與 I 一致。

91. He wants for something to read.

他想要有點什麼閱讀的東西。(誤)

他沒有東西閱讀正感難過。(正)

注 單說 want, 意爲「要」,「需要」,「想得到」, 是他動詞, want for 意爲「缺乏」,「短少」,是自動詞。說 I do not want for a dictionary. 不是「不想要字典」,而是「不短少字典」。

92 She made light of her illness.

她減輕了自己的病。(誤)

她輕視自己的病。(正)

注 make light of, 輕視, 瞧不起。

93. He looked thanks at her.

他看見她有感謝的樣子。(誤)

他以感謝的目光看着她。(正)

注 thanks 爲 looked 的同系賓語, 表現感激的是他, 不是她。

94. There is nothing like home.

沒有像家一樣的東西。(誤)

任何地方都沒有家裏好。(正)

注 There is nothing like, 沒有比這更好的, 勝過這個的再沒有了。

95. You have your own way to make.

你完全要照自己的意思去做。(誤)

你非獨力開拓你的前途不可。(正)

注 have one's own way, 意爲「隨心所欲」,「爲所欲爲」, 但 make one's own way, 則大不相同, 意爲「努力上進」,「獨力奮鬥」。

96. She is well-informed for a woman of the old school.

以一個古老學校出身的婦人來說, 她是見聞廣博的。(誤)

以一個舊式的女人來說, 她是見聞廣博的。(正)

注 well-informed, 見聞廣博的, 消息靈通的。old school, 老派, 舊式。

97. He will do for a teacher.

他努力想做個教師。(誤)

他適宜於做個教師。(正)

注 do＝suit, 適合。

98. I am no man's man.

我不是誰何的人。(誤)

我不是任何人的下走。(正)

注 第二個 man＝servant.

99. He takes after his father more than his mother.

他從父親遺傳比從母親更多。(誤)

他比他的母親更像他的父親。(正)

注 take after, 相貌相似。

100. I have next to nothing to say about my childhood.

其次關於我孩童時代的事我無話可說。(誤)

關於我的孩童時代我幾乎沒有什麼可說的。(正)

注 next to=almost, 故 next to nothing, 意爲「幾乎什麼都沒有」; next to impossible, 「幾乎不可能」。

101. I shall leave here for good next year.

明年我將好好地離開這裏。(誤)

明年我離開這裏不再回來。(正)

注 for good 或 for good and all, 意爲「永久地」。

102. He was caught red-handed.

他被紅手抓住了。(誤)

他在現行中被捕。(正)

103. Every man cannot be a poet.

每個人都不能成爲詩人。(誤)

人非盡可爲詩人。(正)

注 every 與否定連用時,也和 all, both 等一樣,是部分否定而非全部否定。比較: 部分否定說 Every couple is not a pair. (配合得宜的夫婦少有。) 全部否定說 No couple is a pair. (配合得宜的夫婦沒有。) 又 All is not gold that glitters. (一切閃耀的東西,未必都是黃金。)

104. Don't cough more than you can help.

不要多咳除非你能忍住的時候。(誤)

不要多咳除非你忍不住的時候。(正)

注 這句極普通的英語,嚴格地說,是完全不合理的。合理的說法應該是 Don't cough more than you cannot help, 因爲固定的成語爲 cannot help (不禁,不得不), 例如 I cannot help laughing. (我不禁發笑。)

105. You are not playing the game.

你不是在競技。(誤)

你不公平。(正)

注 英國人講究競技精神(sportsmanship),在比賽時一定要 A fair field and no favour, may the best man win. 即所謂 fair play (公

平)。這種精神運用到一般國民的日常生活上，凡事有不公平或不正直的地方，就說那不是競技的辦法，因此競技一詞就成爲公平正直的代名詞了。

106. The actress has her head turned.

那女優回過她的頭來。(誤)

那女優得意忘形。(正)

注　have one's head turned, 因不當的讚揚或意外的成功，使人改變常態，自以爲了不起。

107. I'm a Dutchman if it is true.

眞的我就是一個荷蘭人。(誤)

絕無其事。(正)

注　在英荷戰爭時，「荷蘭人」這個名詞，就成爲一切虛僞的事情或可恨的事物的同義字了。說 I would rather be a Dutchman, 是表示極強硬的拒絕。I'm a Dutchman if I do. (我決不做。) 至今英文中的 Dutch 或 Dutchman, 總是含有不好的意思，如 Dutch courage(虛勇，酒後之勇), Dutch defence (假防禦), Dutch feast (主人先客而醉的宴會), Dutch treat (各自出錢的宴會), Dutch widow (妓女), Dutch wife (竹夫人), Dutch auction (拍賣者自動落價，直到有人願出錢購買的拍賣)。

108. There are friends and friends.

那兒有許多朋友。(誤)

朋友有種種不同，有益友，有損友。(正)

注　這表現法似乎是出自 Bacon 說的 There are dinners and dinners. 一語，現應用到其他一切事情上，如 There are shopkeepers and shopkeepers. (商人有好有壞。)

109. I wish peace could be saved at the eleventh hour.

我希望在第十一點鐘和平可以得救。(誤)

我希望在最後五分鐘可以挽回和平。(正)

注　at the eleventh hour = at the last possible moment, 意爲在最後一個可能的時機中。

110. I am now a little under the weather.

我現在有點像在露天之下。(誤)

我現在有點不舒服。(正)

注 under the weather=unwell or depressed, 意爲受天氣影響而患病。

111. Somebody will have to break the ice.

有人一定會把冰敲破的。(誤)

總有人得先開口說話。(正)

注 break the ice=make a beginning, or break through reserve or stiffiness. 打破僵局，打破冷場。When you have broken the ice (=When you know him better after the first formalities) with him, you will like him. (你跟他混熟一點，不受拘束自由言行時，你就會喜歡他的。)

112. The boy cried because his schoolfellows called him names.

因爲同學的叫了他的名字，那孩子哭了。(誤)

那孩子哭了，因爲他的同學罵了他。(正)

注 call names 卽 call bad names such as "Fool" and "Dunce", 罵人。他例如 He called me all kinds of names. (他對我任意辱罵。)

113. If he has a hobby let him ride it.

如果他有一匹小馬，讓他去騎吧。(誤)

如果他有什麼得意的話題，讓他發揮好了。(正)

注 hobby 在古文中或方言中，意爲 pony (小馬)，故木馬或竹馬就說 hobbyhorse。成語有 side (或 mount) a hobby, 意爲叨叨不絕地談論自己癖好的問題，使人聽得厭倦。hobby 現爲本職以外的癖好的事物或職業，如集郵、種花、養鳥之類。

114. Why should I quarrel with my bread and butter?

我爲什麼要和牛油麵包口角呢？(誤)

我爲什麼要和自己的生計作對呢？(正)

注 bread and butter, 指我們所依靠的餬口之資，例如與衣食父母的老闆吵架，結果不免打破飯碗。

115. He used to lay down the law in a teahouse.

他從前常在茶館裏無法無天的亂鬧。(誤)

他從前常在茶館裏大發議論武斷一切。(正)

注　lay down the law=speak in tones of authority, 在辯論時,說話獨斷,裝做是權威一般地說話。此外還有斥責,下命令等義。

116. Most people have a daily fight to keep the wolf from the door.

許多人每天都在奮鬪,以免引狼入室。(誤)

許多人每天都在與饑餓奮鬪。(正)

注　wolf 爲貧苦與饑餓的象徵。

117. There is no come and go with him.

與他毫無往來。(誤)

他非常固執,怎也勸不動他。(正)

注　come and go, 爲複合名詞,意爲「往來」,尤指交通。又可作「星移物換」解,在本例中用在 no 字之後,則爲「無可變動」之意。

118. He has come off second best.

他以第二名獲得成功。(誤)

他失敗了。(正)

注　普通說 come off, 爲「成功」之意, second best 爲「第二個最好的」,但在本例中實爲一種婉說法,意指在競爭中失敗了。

119. He has got out of the bed on the wrong side today.

他今天是從牀後面爬起來的。(誤)

他今天很不高興。(正)

注　這句又可說成 rise out of the wrong side of the bed. 一開頭就錯誤,自然一天都不高興。至於 wrong 一字,常指不正當的事,如說 He was born on the wrong side of the blanket. (私生子)。She laughs on the wrong side of the mouth. (哭)。

120. Go it while you are young.

去吧,當你正年輕的時候。(誤)

青春不再,趁早努力。(正)

注　go 在此爲他動詞。go it=act with vigour and daring advocate or speak strongly, live freely. 故又可說 go it blind, (fast, strong, bald-headed, etc.) 例如 I don't like to go it blind. (毫不了解的事我不願做。) come 也有同樣的用法,例如 He comes it strong. (過於誇大,恭維過度,行之過激等。) You can't come it=You cannot succeed. (你不會成功的。)

習 題

試改正下列錯誤的譯文：

1. My shoes are the worse for wear.
   我的皮鞋更加不好穿了。(誤)
2. Everybody bridled at his remarks.
   人人都儘量控制自己說的話語。(誤)
3. Fight shy of the theoretical method of approach to the learning of English.
   從理論上來講，學英文的方法，就是要戰勝害羞。(誤)
4. It is not women and Frenchmen only that would rather have their tongues bitten than bitted.
   不只是婦女和法國人願意用舌劍脣鎗應付敵人。(誤)
5. He changed his condition only a week ago.
   他的健康狀態在一星期前改變了。(誤)
6. He got married accepting a leap-year proposal.
   他在閏年接受提議而結婚了。(誤)
7. All my advice falls flat on him.
   我的忠言使他平地跌倒。(誤)
8. You can always tell the somebodies from the nobodies at a cocktail party. The somebodies come late.
   你可以報告雞尾酒會有無人到或有人遲到。(誤)
9. The persons elected will sit till 31 Dec., 1973.
   選出的人要坐到一九七三年底爲止。(誤)
10. He is free with his money.
    他有錢很自由。(誤)
11. An airplane was ordered from France.
    從法國來定了一架飛機。(誤)
12. She has been a widow only six months.
    她只做了六個月的寡婦。(誤)
13. Your loss is nothing to mine.
    你的損失與我無關。(誤)

14. He started on New Year's Eve.
他在新年的晚上出發了。(誤)

15. He left his watch with me.
他丟下我和他的錶走了。(誤)

16. He pretended not to be ill.
他沒有假裝生病。(誤)

17. "I think not," said he.
他說,「我不以爲然。」(誤)

18. It is two years come Christmas.
耶誕日來過兩年了。(誤)

19. Men of millions are possessed with the idea.
幾百萬人都具有這種思想。(誤)

20. He is behind time.
他已落伍。(誤)

21. He went up stairs.
他上二樓去了。(誤)

22. One fine morning he found himself a ruined man.
在一個晴天的早晨他發見自己毀壞了。(誤)

23. His English leaves nothing to be desired.
他的英文毫無希望。(誤)

24. Take care that all is right.
當心一切就好了。(誤)

25. He measured his length on the floor as soon as he entered the room.
他一進房就在地板上測量了他的長度。(誤)

26. We searched him to no purpose.
我們尋找他毫無目的。(誤)

27. I met a woman with child when I came home.
我回家時遇見一個帶着孩子的婦人。(誤)

28. He succeeded to a large property.
他事業成功獲得一筆大的財產。(誤)

29. He caught me by the hand.
他用手抓住了我（誤）。

30. What shall I go in?
我要加入什麼？（誤）

31. He says what he does not mean.
他說話毫無意思。（誤）

32. No alcohol this evening.
今天晚上沒有酒精了。（誤）

33. What does c-a-m-e-l spell?
駱駝怎樣拼的？（誤）

34. He is tired of the work.
他工作得疲勞了。（誤）

35. Life is often compared to a voyage.
生命好與航行比較。（誤）

36. Better to reign in hell than serve in heaven. (Milton)
較好統治地獄，不要服事天堂。（誤）

37. Iowa's Governor Harold Hughes had withdrawn his favorite son candidacy 12 days ago and shortly afterwards announced his support for Senator Eugene J. McCarthy of Minnesota.
愛俄瓦州州長休士已經把他寵愛的兒子的候補資格撤銷，隨後不久就宣佈支持米內梭達州的參議員麥卡席。（誤）

38. If the election were held today, we would not have a prayer.
如果今天舉行選舉的話，我們就不去做禱告。（誤）

39. I would rather have his room than his company.
我寧肯要他的房間，不要他的公司。（誤）

40. That women are bad drivers is open to question.
說女人不會駕車是公開的問題。

41. The lost child was soon identified.
那失去的孩子很快就認爲係同一的了。（誤）

42. He begged to be remembered to you.
他求你記得他。（誤）

43. I have seen nothing of him of late.
    我近來沒有看見他的什麼東西。(誤)
44. He shared the little he had with the poor.
    他把和窮人共有的少許東西全分配完了。(誤)
45. What you cannot afford to buy, do without.
    不能買到的東西，就不必去買了。(誤)
46. What is done cannot be undone.
    自己做了的事不能說未做。(誤)
47. She believed he said so honestly.
    她相信他說得像實的一樣。(誤)
48. They have been broken into a dozen pieces.
    它們打碎成十二片了。(誤)
49. They that know nothing fear nothing.
    可怕的事物他們全不知道。(誤)
50. The picture was painted after Wu Chang-shih.
    這畫是吳昌碩以後畫的。(誤)
51. He knows what it is to have a boy idle.
    他知道有一個懶惰的孩子是怎麼一回事。(誤)
52. It is no proof that one cannot do a thing because one does not like it.
    因爲不喜歡就不能做，這是不能證明的。(誤)
53. I bought these books new.
    我新近買了這些書。(誤)
54. He borrowed a horse of a friend.
    他借了朋友的馬。(誤)
55. He covered ten miles an hour.
    他一點鐘包括了十哩 (誤)。
56. He helped himself to the wine.
    他幫忙自己飲酒。(誤)
57. I believe in rough, manly sports
    我信仰激烈的男性的運動 (誤)

58. He did not see the movie out.
他沒有看那電影演出。(誤)

59. Eighty poor fellows perished.
有八十個窮人死亡。(誤)

60. He said nothing to that effect.
他說的話一點效果也沒有（誤)。

叁 翻譯實例

I 中譯英

(1) 鄭燮致弟書

【原　　文】

吾意欲築一土牆院子，門內多栽竹、樹、草花，用碎磚鋪曲逕[1] 一條，以達二門[2]。其內茅屋二間，一間坐客，一間作房，貯圖書史籍，筆墨硯瓦[3]，酒董[4] 茶具其中，為良朋好友，後生小子論文賦詩之所。其後住家，主屋三間，廚房二間，奴子屋[5] 一間，共八間，俱用草苫[6]，如此足矣。或曰，此等宅居甚適，只是怕盜賊，不知盜賊亦窮民耳。開門延入，商量分惠，有甚麼便拿甚麼去。若一無所有，便王獻之之青氈[7]，亦可携取質[8] 百錢救急也。吾弟當留心此地，為狂兄[9] 娛老之資[10]，不知可能遂願否？

【譯　　文】

I am thinking of building a house enclosed with earthen walls, in which plenty of bamboos, trees and various flowers should be planted. There should be a curved path paved with broken bricks leading to the porch. There are two spacious rooms behind the porch, one used as drawing-room and the other as study. Books and paintings, records and documents, writing-brushes and inksticks as well as inkstones, wine utensils and tea-sets are to be put in these two rooms. My intimate friends and young people may come here to discuss literature and make poems. Behind these there is the residence consisting of three bed-rooms for the family, two rooms as kitchen, and one as servant quar-

ters, so the total number of rooms in this house is eight, under the same thatched roof. That will be quite enough for me. Some one says that such a house is comfortable to live in, but the trouble is that thieves might easily break in, too. But he doesn't realize that thieves are but poor people. If they should come, I would open the door and invite them to step in, so as to talk over the distribution of my belongings. They may take whatever I have. In case there is nothing at all worth taking, I would give them the hereditary blue blanket as what Wang Shien-tzc had possessed, with which they may pawn for a hundred cashes to meet their urgent need. You must know, my dear brother, that this place will serve as the last resort to spend my peaceful latter years, but I wonder if I could be able to fulfill it or not.

【註　　釋】

(1) 碎磚鋪曲逕(同徑): crazy pavement. (2) 二門: 門廊, porch. (3) 硯瓦: 中國的書畫家喜歡用漢瓦或漢磚作硯。inkstone. (4) 酒藎: 酒器。wine utensils。(5) 奴子屋: 僕人住的地方。servant quarters. (6) 草苫: thatched. (7) 王獻之之青氈: 晉人王子敬被盜時, 只說「那鋪青氈是我家祖傳的東西, 請你特別給我留下, 其餘你要的東西, 隨便你拿去好了。」the hereditary blue blanket as Wang Shien-tzc had possessed. (8) 質: 典當。pawn. (9) 狂兄: 板橋自稱的謙詞。I. (10) 娛老之資: 娛老意爲養老。資在此爲憑藉之物。last resort for my old age.

(2) 中國的山水畫

【原　　文】

要說明山水畫[1]的布置, 先得說明山水畫的構圖[2] 原理。原來山水畫的構圖, 不是對景寫實, 而是用鳥瞰[3] 的方法, 將實景縮小[4], 然後加以描寫的。眼睛[5] 中所能看到的, 只有一重[6] 山或一重水, 這樣簡單的景物, 是不容易構成山水畫面的。作畫的人, 得走入山水的深處, 遍觀所有的風景[7], 回到家裏, 把所經歷的地方, 像

畫地圖似的縮寫出來，還得把自己放的很大[8]，把風景縮的很小，好像看假山[9]似的，總能構成「咫尺千里」[10]的畫面。

【譯 文】

In order to explain the disposition of a landscape painting, we have to make clear at first the principle of its composition. Originally the composition of landscapes is not to paint a real picture as we see it, but to depict by means of a bird's eye view, namely, to diminish the subject matter in a nutshell. What we can see with our naked eyes is generally only a single layer of mountains or rivers. This of course is not enough for us to compose a scene of the landscape. The one who paints ought to go into the heart of mountains and rivers, inspecting all the scenery before he puts down from memory on returning home the whole scope of his travelled regions as a miniature as he draws a map. In doing so, he has to enlarge himself as big as possible and contract the scenery as small as a rock-work to look upon, then he can for the first time compose a picture of thousand miles represented on a few-foot piece of paper or the like.

【註 釋】

(1)山水畫：landscape painting. (2)構圖：composition. (3)鳥瞰：a bird's eye view. (4)縮小：diminish. (5)眼睛：指肉眼。our naked eyes. (6)重：layer. (7)遍觀所有的風景：inspect all the scenery. 注意 scenery 指一個地方或某一帶的風景，不可寫成複數如山景則說 mountain scenery, 海岸風光則說 coast scenery, 風景如畫則說 picturesque scenery. 又如 The scenery of West Lake is impressive. 西湖的山水留給遊人深刻的印象。(8)放大：enlarge. (9)假山：rock-work. (10)咫尺千里：a picture of thousand miles represented on a small piece of paper.

(3) 爲 學

【原 文】

天下事有難易乎[1]？爲之，則難者亦易矣；不爲，則易者亦難矣。人之爲學[2]，

有難易乎？學之，則難者亦易矣；不學，則易者亦難矣。

蜀之鄙[4]有二僧：其一貧，其一富。貧者語於富者曰：「吾欲之[5]南海[6]，何如？」

富者曰：「子[7]何恃[8]而往？」

曰：「吾一瓶一鉢[9]足矣。」

富者曰：「吾數年來欲買舟[10]而下，猶未能也。子何恃而往！」

越明年[11]，貧者自南海還，以告富者，富者有慚色[12]。

西蜀之去南海，不知幾千里也[13]。僧富者不能至[14]，而貧者至焉。人之立志[15]，顧[16]不如蜀鄙之僧哉！（彭端淑）

【譯　文】

There is nothing difficult for us to do in the world. If we do it, the difficult thing will be easy; if we don't, the easy thing will be difficult. There is nothing difficult for us to learn. If we learn it, the difficult thing will be easy; if we don't, the easy thing will be difficult.

There lived two monks in the western frontier of Szechuan, one poor and the other rich. One day the poor monk said to the rich one. "I want to go to Nanhai, what do you think?"

"On what do you depend for going there?" asked the rich monk.

"A bottle and a basin will suffice me," answered the other.

"Well, I have been meaning to go there by boat for many years, but failed. How could you go without any support!"

After one year the poor monk returned from Nanhai, and told his story to the rich one, who was ashamed to hear it.

It is so many thousand miles from the western frontier of Szechuan to Nanhai. The rich monk failed to go, but the poor one went. Couldn't we make up our minds to do something as the poor monk of the western frontier of Szechuan did?

【註　釋】

(1) 因爲一國有一國的特殊語法，翻譯是決不能完全照字面直譯的，例如本文

第一句:「天下事有難易乎?」用白話說,便是世界上的事有不有難和易的分別,如照此英譯爲 Is there a difference between difficulty and easiness in things of the world? 則不合英美語法的表現方法,所以應該意譯,看英美人對於這樣的意思是怎樣表達的,我們就怎樣來譯,不必拘泥於原文字句。注意 nothing difficult,不能說成 difficult nothing,因爲在 thing 字上已有一個形容詞,就不能再加別的字。他例如 something Chinese (一點中國的東西)也是同樣的用法。普通的情形,當然可以說 not a difficult thing (不是一件難事)。(2)爲學:to learn. (3)蜀:古地名,即今四川省。(4)鄙:指邊鄙地方,可譯 the frontier districts, 或簡說 frontier. (5)之:去。(6)南海:不可譯作 the South Seas (南半球的海洋;南太平洋),因爲此處係指普陀山,南海觀世音菩薩說法處,故音譯爲 Nanhai. (7)子:你。(8)恃:依賴,可譯作 depend on. (9)鉢:同缽,和尚盛飯的用具叫鉢。用飯鉢來化緣的和尚稱托鉢僧。(10)買舟:即買船票的意思,在此是指坐船。(11)越明年:意即經過了一年,故譯爲 after one year. (12)慚色:意爲慚愧之色,譯爲 to be ashamed 即可,色字不宜譯出。(13)不知幾千里也:意即有好幾千里,故譯爲 many thousand miles. 文學作品對於距離不必太準確,否則應以 li (里) 代 mile (哩)。(14)至:在此與其譯成 reach,不如譯爲 go,更爲適合說話的語氣。(15)立志:下決心做事。to make up one's mind. (16)顧:反而。此處只好譯成 Couldn't 的反問語氣。

(4) 光與色

【原 文】

目[1]覩物而知形[2],然形非色[3]不見;色非光不見。故色必資乎[4]光;晝資乎日,夜資乎月星與火。光盛則色顯,光微則色隱。色依[5]光以現其形:色濃則明,色淡則藏;色立乎[6]異,則相得益彰[7],色傍乎同,則若存若亡。(鄭光復:鏡鏡詅癡)

【譯 文】

We know the shape of a thing when we see it, but its shape will not be seen if it has no color. The color of a thing will not be seen if there is no light. So the color for us to see has to depend on light, just as the day on the sun; or the night on the moon and stars, and fire. When the light is strong, the color becomes apparent; and when

the light is dim, the color becomes obscure. A thing shows its shape by its color: it is conspicuous when its color is deep; it is invisible when its color is light. There will be a striking contrast if the colors of the things are quite different while their existence will not be felt if their colors are almost the same.

【註　釋】

(1)目：指我們的眼睛，英文要說「人」看，不要說「眼睛」看，故不可譯成 the eye 或 our eyes. (2)形：外形，我們見到一件東西的樣子。shape; form. (3)色：由一種特殊波長的光線所產生的效果，或是由於分解了的光線在我們眼睛上所產生的感覺。由此可知光與色的關係。(4)資乎：depend on; help. (5) 依：by means of; by. (6) 立乎：存在。be. (7)相得益彰：得到陪襯，愈爲明顯。help each other to become more conspicuous.

(5) 教學相長

【原　文】

雖[1]有嘉肴[2]，弗食[3]，不知其旨也[4]；雖有至道[5]，弗學，不知其善也。是故學，然後知不足[6]；教，然後知困[7]。知不足，然後能自反[8]也，知困，然後能自強[9]也。故曰，教學相長[10]也。(禮記)

【譯　文】

Even when there is good food, you will not know its deliciousness, if you don't taste it; even when there is a good doctrine, you will not know its virtue, if you don't learn it. Therefore, to learn makes us realize our deficiency, and to teach makes us know the difficulties. Having realized our deficiency, we may then come to reflect; having known the difficulties, we may be able to strengthen ourselves to overcome them. So, we say, to teach is to learn.

【註　釋】

(1) 雖：卽使。even. 不是雖然，故不可譯成 though. (2) 嘉肴：卽嘉餚。

table delicacy; viands. 簡易地說 good food.（注意 food 不可用複數）。(3)弗食：弗，作「不」字解。食，作「品嘗」解。這句翻譯時，應加假設語氣及主語上去。在這種副詞子句中，要用現在動詞以代未來動詞。(4)不知其旨也：you will not know its deliciousness. 不可譯成 delicacy 或 delicacies，因爲此字意爲「佳餚」，而不是「美味」。(5)至道：good doctrine. (6)不足：deficiency. (7)困：difficulty. (8)自反：即反省。reflect. (9)自強：strengthen oneself. (10)相長：benefit each other.

(6) 翻譯文欠通順

【原　　文】

辜鴻銘著「張文襄幕府紀聞」有題爲「不解」一則云：

昔年陳立秋侍郎[1]蘭彬，出使[2]美國，有隨員[3]徐某[4]，夙不解西文[5]。一日，持西報展覽[6]頗入神[7]。使館譯員[8]見之，訝然[9]曰：「君何時諳識[10]西文乎？」徐曰：「我固[11]不諳。」譯員曰：「君既不諳西文，閱此奚爲[12]？」徐答曰：「余以爲閱西文固不解，閱諸君之翻譯文亦不解。同一不解[13]，固不如閱西文之爲愈也。」至今傳爲笑柄[14]。

【譯　　文】

An Anecdote from Ku Hung-ming's "Hearsay Accounts at the Secretariate of Chang Tzu-tung."

Many years ago a Mr. Hsu was in the suite of Chen Lan-ping, who had been a vice minister at home and was then sent on a mission to the USA. Though quite ignorant of English, Mr. Hsu was seen one day holding in his hand an English newspaper, and reading it with absorbing interest. The interpreters of the Legation who had witnessed the scene asked him in surprise:

"When did you learn English?"

"I have not yet learned it," the other replied.

With great astonishment, the interpreters went on: "Since you don't know English, why on earth should you read the paper?"

"I cannot understand English," Mr. Hsu answered quietly, "nor can

I understand your translation. So I think it's better to read the original than to read the translation of yours, because both are Greek to me."

This has been told as a laughing-stock since then.

【註　　釋】

(1)侍郎：官名。vice minister. (2)出使：be sent on a mission to. (3)隨員：be in the suite of. (4)徐某：a Mr. Hsu. (5)夙不解西文．素來不懂得英文。quite ignorant of English.「夙」可譯作 from the first 或 originally，但不必譯出。(6)展覽：打開來看，但不是眞的閱讀，英文可說 pretend to read (佯裝閱讀)，但仍以不如此明說爲宜。(7)頗入神：對某事心醉神迷。with ecstasy；be in (go into) ecstasies over。(8)譯員：interpreter；translator. (9)訝然：表示疑怪的樣子。in surprise；in wonder. (10)諳識：懂得。understand. (11)固：surely；certainly；of course. (12)奚爲：爲什麼。why. (13)同一不解：both are Greek to me. (14)笑柄：laughing-stock.

(7) 學無所用

【原　　文】

魯人身[1]善織屨[2]，妻善織縞[3]，而欲徙[4]於越[4]。或[5]謂之曰：「子必窮矣。」魯人曰：「何也？」曰：「屨爲履之[6]也，而越人跣行[7]；縞爲冠之[8]也，而越人被髮[9]。以子之所長[10]，遊於不用之國，欲使無窮，其可得乎？」

【譯　　文】

A native of Lu was good at making hempen sandals and his wife at weaving silk taffeta; and they intended to move to the State of Yueh. Someone told them that they would become poor if they should do so. The native of Lu asked him, "Why do you think so?" The other said: "You know sandals are made for the feet, but the people of Yueh are barefooted. The silk taffeta is for the head, but the people of Yueh are bareheaded. Now you go to a country where your special skill is not wanted. How can it be that you will not become poor?"

【註　釋】

(1)身：本身，本人。oneself. (2)屨：(音句)麻屨。hempen sandals. cf. 屣：草屨。straw sandals. 履：皮屨。leather shoes，即俗稱革履。(3)縞：白色生絹。縞冠，a white silk cap. (4)徙：遷居。move. (5)或：有人。somebody. (6)屨之：something for the feet to wear. (7)跣行：barefooted. (8)冠之：something for the head to wear. (9)被髮：bareheaded. (10)子之所長：what you are skilled in; what you specialize in.

(8) 畫蛇添足

【原　文】

楚有祠[1]者，賜其舍人[2]卮酒[3]。舍人相謂曰：「數人飲之[4]不足，一人飲之有餘。請畫地爲蛇，先成者[5]飲酒。」一人蛇先成，引酒且飲之[6]，乃[7]左手持卮，右手畫蛇，曰：「吾能爲之足[8]！」未成！一人之蛇成，奪其卮，曰：「蛇固[9]無足，子[10]安能[11]爲之足？」遂飲其酒。爲蛇足者，終亡[12]其酒。（戰國策）

【譯　文】

A native of Chu after worshiping his ancestors gave his retainers a pot of wine. One of the retainers said, "It's insufficient for all of us, but too much for one of us. I suggest, therefore, that we draw snakes on the ground, and the one who first finishes drawing the snake will win the pot of wine." When one retainer had completed his drawing, he took the pot to drink. As he held it in his left hand, he continued to draw the snake with his right hand, saying: "I can add feet to it." While he was adding feet to his snake, another man who had then drawn his snake snatched the pot from his hand, protesting: "No snake has feet. How can you add feet to it?" Then he drank the wine. The man who added feet to the snake lost his prize at last.

【注　釋】

(1)祠：春祭叫作祠。祠者即祭祖的人。(2)舍人：古時貴族家裏的門客，侍

從，家臣。(3)卮酒：卽一卮酒。卮 (goblet) 爲古時有足無柄的酒盃。(4)之：指卮酒。(5)先成者：先畫好一條蛇的人。(6)引酒且飲之：拿起酒來打算要喝。引作取解。且作將解。(7)乃：竟然；居然。(8)爲之足：給它添上脚。(9)固：本來，實在。(10)子：你。(11)安能：怎麼能够。(12)亡：失去。

(9) 嗟 來 食

【原　文】

齊大飢，黔敖爲食於路[1]，以待餓者而食之[2]。有餓者蒙袂[3]輯屨[4]，貿貿然[5]來。黔敖左[6]奉食，右[7]執飲[8]曰：「嗟！來食[9]」揚其目而視之曰：「予惟不食嗟來之食，以至於斯也。」從而謝焉[10]，終不食而死[11]。曾子聞之曰：「微與[12]，其嗟也可去，其謝也可食。」(檀弓)

【譯　文】

There was a severe famine in Chi. Chien Ao had food ready at the roadside for the starvelings to eat. A famished man appeared staggeringly, covered his face with the sleeve because of shame, and his shoes in hand as he was too weak to wear them. He was halted by Chien Ao, who held food in his left hand and drink in the right, saying: "Holla, come, you." The man raised his eyes and looked at him. "I have become thus only because I don't want to eat anything given in such a manner," he said. So Chien Ao made an immediate apology to him for not being so polite at first, but still the man refused to take any food and died with hunger at last. On hearing this, Tseng Tzu said, "It's a pity for him to do so. He might have gone away when offered food as alms, but he should have eaten when apologized."

【注　釋】

(1)爲食於路：在路邊上準備飲食。(2)食之：食爲動詞，之指餓者。(3)蒙袂：以衣袖蒙着面孔。(4)輯屨：用手提着鞋子。(5)貿貿然：好像瞎子一樣。貿貿或寫着眊眊。(6)左：左手。(7)右：右手。(8)執飲：拿着飲料。(9)嗟來食：嗟，卽嗟乎，或咨嗟，指歎息的聲音。嗟來食，意爲喊他來吃，因哀憫賤視而施與食物，隸

毫沒有尊敬的意思，故使有自尊心的人，寧餓死也不吃這種嗟來食。(10)從而謝焉：因此便向他道歉。(11)不食而死：卽餓死。die with hunger. 在 die 字後可接三個不同的介詞，應加分別：1. die with hunger (fatigue, thirst, sword); 2. die from a disease (a wound, an accident, repletion, broken heart); 3. die of cancer (poison, an illness, old age, undernourishment, over-work, too much whisky)。(12)微與：不必啦。微作無或非字解。

(10) 老 與 少

【原　　文】

老年爲少年之過來人，少年爲老年之候補者，老與少，只不過時間上之差別而已。然中國習慣，對老少之間，往往劃有無形界限。在客觀上，有時重老而輕少，有時重少而輕老。在主觀上，老者自恃其老，少年自矜其少。幾千年來，遂形成老者自以爲持重[1]練達[2]而菲薄[3]少年爲少不更事[4]；而少年自以爲新銳精進[5]，而輕蔑[6]老者爲老朽昏庸[7]。此眞所謂偏頗[8]兩失之見也！

憶梁任公在其「少年中國」一文中，對老年人與少年人曾有一適當對比。其言曰：「老年人如夕照，少年人如朝陽；老年人如瘠[9]牛，少年人如乳虎；老年人如僧，少年人如俠；老年人如字典，少年人如戲文[10]；老年人如鴉片煙，少年人如白蘭地酒；老年人如別行星之隕石[11]，少年人如大海洋之珊瑚島；老年人如埃及沙漠之金字塔，少年人如西伯利亞之鐵路；老年人如秋後之柳，少年人如春間之草；老年人如死海之瀦爲澤[12]，少年人如長江之初發源……」

觀此，則知老年與少年，各有所長，各有其用，如能祛除[13]成見，同爲國家效力，則裨益民族，定非淺鮮。(血輪：綺情樓雜記之一)

【譯　　文】

The aged are the antecedents of the young, and the young are the candidates of the aged. The difference between age and youth is only a matter of time. But, according to the Chinese custom, there is always an invisible line of demarcation between them. Objectively speaking, sometimes the aged are held in esteem and the young are made light of; sometimes it is just the other way round. Subjectively speaking, the aged are self-conceited because of their good old age, while the

young think no small beer of their own youth. For thousands of years it has been assumed that the aged, thinking themselves experienced and more skilful, look down upon the young for their greenness in worldly affairs, while the young, thinking themselves fresh in life and more energetic, call the aged old fogies. Either of these views, of course, is far from being impartial.

Liang Chi-chao in an article entitled "Young China" made a proper contrast between the aged and the young. He said: "The old man is like the setting sun; the young man, the morning sun. The old man is like a lean ox; the young man, a cub tiger. The old man is like a monk; the young man, a knight. The old man is like a dictionary; the young man, the text of a play. The old man is like opium; the young man, brandy. The old man is like a shooting star; the young man, a coral island. The old man is like the pyramid of Egypt; the young man, the Siberian railroad. The old man is like the willow after autumn; the young man, the grass in spring. The old man is like the dead sea that turns into a lake; the young man, the source of the Yangtze River......"

From this, we know that the aged and the young both have their own merits and uses. If they will cast away their prejudices and work together for the country, their services to the people shall be immense. (Hsueh Lun: Old Age and Young)

【注　釋】

(1)持重：舉止莊重的意思，成語有「老成持重」的說法。(2)練達：精熟通達。(3)菲薄：瞧不起；輕視。(4)少不更事：年少的人歷事不多。更事當經歷講。(5)新銳精進：精明強幹，活力充沛。(6)轢轢：原意爲車輪輾過，引伸爲用權勢壓迫人的意思，成語有「仗勢轢轢」一語。在此借用爲欺侮輕蔑。(7)老朽昏庸：指因年老而糊塗無能。(8)偏頗：不正不平，側重一方面。(9)瘠：瘦。(10)戲文：戲劇的臺詞。(11)隕石：即流星。(12)豬爲澤：成語豬爲大澤，即積儲許多水而成湖海。(13)祛除：除去。祛音驅，作除去解，如祛惑，祛弊等。

(11) 雕刻奇技

【原　　文】

今日善雕刻者甚多，但重在神似，不在細巧。昔蘇州有杜士元者，擅雕刻，號稱鬼工，能將橄欖核或桃核雕刻成舟，作蘇東坡遊赤壁故事。舟雖小，而桅干兩櫓艄篷及舵篙帆檣畢具，兩面窗槅，俱能移動開闔。舟中三人，東坡爲長髯布袍，佛印則著禪衣對坐，几上縱橫列骨牌三十二張，若將搜抹者然，旁有手持洞簫啓窗外望者，則相從之客也。船頭有童子持扇烹茶，旁置一小爐，陳茶杯三盞。舟師三人，兩坐一臥，細逾毛髮。

每一舟成，人爭相購。然士元好飲，終年游宕，不輕易出手，惟貧困時，始能鏤刻，否則雖千金不能致也。

清高宗南巡，於行宮見其作品，大加贊賞，因召至啓祥宮，賜金帛甚厚。顧士元處禁垣中，終日悶悶，欲出不可，因詐癡，始得放歸。

按桃核不過兩指頭大耳，而能雕出如許人物，誠非氣靜神完者莫辦，誰謂古人藝術，不逮今人！（血輪：綺情樓雜記之一）

【譯　　文】

Today there are many good engravers. But they lay emphasis on the very moral of what they engrave, and not on the fineness of it. Once, there lived in Soochow a man whose name was Tu Shih-yuan. He was so skilful at engraving that people called him supernatural craftsman. He could engrave on an olive or a peach stone the story of Su Tungpo making an excursion to the Red Cliff. Though the boat is very small, it has its mast and rigging, sculls, poles, and what not. The windows on either side of it are movable. Inside the cabin, there are three people. Su Tungpo with a long beard and in flowing robes, sits opposite to Fu Ying, the accomplished monk, who wears a Buddhist gown. Thirty-two pieces of dominos lying scattered on the desk show that a game is being played. By their side a man, flute in hand, opens the window to look out. He is their guest who joins them in the excursion. On her bow a boy with a fan in his hand is making tea near

the stove, and by his side is a tray with three cups. Besides there are three boatmen, two sitting and one reclining—all life-like.

Every time he had finished a boat, people contended for buying it. When Tu Shih-yuan was indulging himself in wine, and idling away his time, you would find it no easy matter to have him cut such a boat. He would do the engraving only when he was hard up. If he was not short of money, he would refuse to do it for the wealth of a prince.

Kao Chung, the emperor of the Ching Dynasty, saw Tu Shih-yuan's skilled handiwork at travelling-lodges when he was touring south, and was very pleased with it. Then Shih-yuan was summoned to the palace, and the Emperor bestowed on him pots of money and silk. While living in the Forbidden City, Tu Shih-yuan was sad and depressed; for he was not allowed to wander beyond its walls. So he feigned to be mad until he was set free.

As you know a peach stone is no bigger than two of our fingers combined, but Tu Shih-yuan was able to engrave so many persons and things on it. It is indeed a piece of excellent workmanship. Who says the art of the ancients is inferior to that of the moderns? (Hsueh Lun: The Ingenious Art of Engraving)

(12) 狐　疑

【原　文】

我有一個漂亮的表姐，跟一個工程師結了婚，感情和好，生活美滿。婚後三年，她突然變態：憑空指責她丈夫有外遇，日夜悲泣不已。任憑她的丈夫怎樣解釋，都無濟於事。他祗好寸步不離她，她的疑心猶不減，責備他每日死守家屋，意在追戀女傭。他換了一個女傭，她又說是他的新戀人。換上別個女傭，無論老婦童女，她無不懷疑。終於他的丈夫決心一個女傭都不用，她却樂得自己燒飯洗衣。

不久以後，她的疑心更多了。她認爲妹妹、嫂嫂、姑姑，都是丈夫的戀人。於是，大家相信她發了狂，這才將她送進神經病院。施行電療、打針，用盡百法，毫無效果。

在完全絕望的時候，我介紹一位心理學家去看她，單獨與她密談兩小時後，他有了駭人的發現。

「夫人」，心理學家誠懇地說：「我願爲你摘去內心的痛苦，但請坦白見告，你曾經有什麼不可告人的遭遇嗎？」

這一問，好像一股電流觸及她的內心痛處，她驚跳一下，低頭啜泣。

「願向上蒼指誓，爲夫人嚴守秘密」，專家繼續說：「夫人，爲了你的終身幸福，願坦白見告。」

她終於說出了：半年前，她曾爲一個青年而墜入情網，事後，榮譽心迫她回頭改正，然而，她始終不敢正視自己既往的可恥事實，却在心裏另覓一種自慰：那便是她的丈夫在外必定也有與她相似的不貞行爲。久而久之，造成她反常的疑懼心理。

心理學家明白了她的病根所在，便輕易爲她拔除掉了。使她逐漸領悟，她的不貞行爲，乃屬於她的偶然性錯失，而非人人必然性的現象，更不能轉移於丈夫身上。

過分多疑的心理，因素很是複雜，絕非單純神經過敏可以解釋。多疑往往由於自己的「內疚」反射於他人，在心理學上稱之爲「投射作用」，我用最簡單的一句中國俗語，可以說明「心理投射作用」的深奧原理。這句俗語是：「有此心，反疑心」。（林枕客：狂人百相之一）

【譯 文】

After three happy years of conjugal life there came a sudden change in my pretty cousin's sensual nature. She suspected her husband, an engineer, to be unfaithful and reproved him for his disloyalty without any reason. Her husband tried in every way to explain but in vain. She was in so great a distress that she wept all the time. He had to stay at home with her in the hope that he might get rid of her doubt about him. But, to his amazement, this only led to her new suspicion. She thought that he remained at home all day because he was in love with the maid. He dismissed the maid and hired a new one whom his wife would call his new love. In short, she regarded any maid, irrespective of age, as the object her husband was in pursuit of. At last, her husband decided not to keep a servant in his house, leaving all the domestic work to his wife, which she undertook without a complaint.

Not many days had elapsed before she entertained more doubts about him. She suspected even her female relations, such as her sisters-in-law, being also in love with her husband. This made people think that she had gone out of her mind. She was then sent to a hospital where she was put under various medical treatments; but all of them had no effect upon her.

Such being her case, I recommended her to a psychologist. After two hours' tête-à-tête with her, the psychologist made a startling discovery.

"My dear madam," began the expert in a most sincere manner," I should be able to remove all the worries from mind if you would tell me everything frankly. Have you anything to be kept secret?"

Thus asked, she started as if she were electric-stricken and began to weep.

"If you will let me into the secret, I promise to keep it from the knowledge of others," he continued. "For your own good, and for the happiness of your life, do tell me, madam!"

She sobbed bitterly and then gave the following account: It was about half a year ago when she met a young man with whom she fell in love. But before long, her sense of honor made her repent of her folly, and she came back to her husband again. What a shame it was to recall her past conduct, so she consoled herself by thinking that her husband must have done the same thing as she did. By and by this developed into an abnormal apprehension.

When the psychologist had found out the root of her disease, it was easy for him to uproot it. He told her that her disloyalty was due to her casual wrongdoing, not to the inevitable conduct of everybody. Nor could it be transferred to her husband.

That which gives one the feeling of distrust is rather complicated. It cannot be explained merely by nervousness. To have a suspicion against others usually comes of one's own sick conscience. Psychologically speaking, it is called the project action, that is the process of

acting upon others. A Chinese proverb that presents fully the gist of this psychological action runs, "Suspicious are those who take an interest in the matter themselves." (Lin Chen-ko: Smoke Without Fire)

(13) 怕傘的姑娘

【原文】

女孩子如有特癖，出嫁後非常痛苦。在家時，父母會容忍她的特癖，但婚後丈夫未必能諒解她，這裏有一個悲劇爲例證：

有個女人，名陳竹竹。她跟一個二十歲的青年吳銘結婚。過了一個秋天，生活都很愉快。入冬雨季却帶來了悲劇：她上班去，穿雨衣走，吳銘要她再帶把傘，她不肯，說她從來不用傘。他實在太愛她，便拿把美麗雨傘交給她，她一觸到傘柄，狀極驚恐，急推地上。吳銘大爲駭異，便問：

「竹竹！你怎麼啦……」

「我害怕……」竹竹說。

「雨傘有什麼可怕呢？」吳銘問。

竹竹默然不答。青年人意氣剛強，他的太太越怕傘，他越要給她傘，企圖改變她的怪癖。竹竹在他的情感威嚴的壓力下，不得不拿，可是，她每提起傘，都要驚哭一陣，昏厥過去爲止。

這件事屢屢發生後，竹竹終於向法院請求離婚，理由是：不堪丈夫虐待，飽受強迫提傘的苦刑。當法官在庭上聽吳銘申訴竹竹下雨不肯帶傘的事，覺得很希奇。便問竹竹，她說生平怕傘，其夫偏用傘來恐嚇她，不勝驚擾之苦，非離異不可。法官不信，令刑事取傘給她，果見她嚇得臉色發青，掩面大哭。

法官認爲她有神經病，吳銘加以否認說，她除怕雨傘之外，其他完全正常。這一對好夫婦終於雙方同意地離婚了。離婚後，陳竹竹的生活正常，當然心情枯寂悲愁，幸而，嗣後，她遇見了救星，一個精神學家替她揭去內心之謎。

原來陳竹竹幼年失母，她的繼母冷酷無情，竹竹在七歲時，每天上學，沒有鞋穿，沒有書包用，也沒有一把傘，下大雨，就不上學。有一天適逢學校大考，偏偏天下大雨，她不能去，情急了，偷了繼母的雨傘走。一撐開傘，她嚇壞了，傘裏爬出一條青蛇，立即昏迷過去。從此以後，有個恐怖的觀念佔據着她；至今長大，她仍怕傘，但已忘其所以然了。

心理學家用「聯想法」使她回想起當年舊事，再以「提示法」剔除她內心所潛伏的頑固意識。最後，當她聽見心理學家親切的聲音：「你也可以有一把傘，像任何人一樣。」她何等驚喜！在醫師協助下，她伸出發抖的手，握住傘，撐開來，她覺得那是多麼新奇、安全，有趣的傘呀！她忽感到一陣害羞襲來，急把傘兒遮住臉。(林枕客：狂人百相之一)

【譯　　文】

A girl with idiosyncrasies often suffers greatly after getting married. While at home, she would not be unbearable, for all her personal peculiarities, to her parents. But it is not probable that her spouse would understand her. Here is a tragic case to illustrate the truth:

There was a girl whose name was Chen Chu-chu. She was married to Wu Ming, a young man twenty years old. Their married life was full of happiness during the first autumn. But the rainy season of winter brought them unexpected misfortunes. One day when she was setting out for her office, she put on her raincoat. Her husband asked her to take an umbrella along; but she refused, saying she had never used an umbrella. As he loved her very much, he handed her a beautiful umbrella. As soon as she touched its handle, she dazed with horror, threw it on the ground.

"What's up, my dear?" asked her husband, greatly perplexed.

"I'm afraid of......" said the wife.

"There's nothing to be afraid of in an umbrella, is there?" said Wu Ming.

Chu-chu remained silent. As young men are very obstinate, Wu Ming insisted upon his wife's taking with her umbrella, in order to do away with her peculiarity. Because of his affection for her and in deference to his wishes, Chu-chu had to take it. But every time she took the umbrella, she was horrified, burst into tears and fainted.

This happened so often that Chu-chu at last had to appeal to the court for a divorce. Her reason was that she could not stand the ill-treatment of her husband. He tortured her by forcing her to take

an umbrella. On hearing the statement of the husband the judge felt it was rather odd. In answer to the judge's inquiry, Chu-chu said that as her husband terrified her with an umbrella and made her suffer a great deal, she had to divorce him. The judge did not believe it and ordered an umbrella to be brought to her, which indeed made her turn pale and weep bitterly.

The judge thought she was neurotic, but her husband denied it, saying that she was normal with everything except with the umbrella. Consequently the well-matched couple agreed to put an end to their marriage. After the separation Chen Chu-chu lived a normal life, though she felt very lonesome and miserable. Before long, to her relief, there came an alienist, who solved the riddle of her fear of umbrellas.

It was said that Chen Chu-chu lost her mother when she was only a few years old, and was brought up by her step-mother who was very severe to her. At seven, she went to school every day without shoes or bag. As no umbrella was given her, she was obliged to stay at home if it rained heavily. One day, it was raining cats and dogs. But she had to go to school for her final examinations. Under mental stress, she stole her step-mother's umbrella, and was ready to go. But alas! When she opened the umbrella, there crawled out a green snake which terrified her and made her faint on the spot. Since then, a certain terror had dominated her thoughts. She was now a grown-up woman, but she still feared the umbrella, though she could not tell why she was afraid of it.

The psychologist used the method of association to make her recollect the bygones, and then, by means of "suggestion", got rid of the obstinacy hidden in her mind. At length, she heard the psychologist say in a kind voice: "Like everyone else, you too may have an umbrella". How glad she was to hear this! With the help of the doctor, she held out her trembling hand and took the umbrella. Opening it, she felt it was so novel, interesting, and there was nothing treacherous

in it. With shyness she hid her face behind the umbrella. (Lin Chen-ko: The Girl Who Feared an Umbrella)

(14) 偷 竊 狂

【原　文】

「十瘋九偷」，精神學家承認這句話。十個瘋子有九個患「偷竊狂」。「偷竊狂」是精神病中最通常的病徵，可憐他，起初都被人認爲「道德墮落者」，根本不把他當病人看待。直至其瘋到不可救藥，才認做瘋子。「偷竊狂」和通常偷竊很易分別，竊賊偷東西是有目的的，偷竊狂則無目的不問其需要與否，常感覺有某些東西非偷不可，彷彿把「偷」當作一種享受。讀者不難遇見一些人，經濟頗有辦法，對於有些他們家中決不缺乏的東西，也愛順手竊取，或揩油帶回家去。不論其需要與否，一拿到手滿高興。這實在是極可憐的心理病態。「偷竊狂」雖然多是精神病的病徵，但也有是童年時期在不良家庭生活中所養成的習慣。

我在師範學校一年級讀書時，發現一件怪事：大半同學的圓規、三角板、看地圖用的放大鏡都遺失了。我連續買過四次，也弄得沒有一件器具用。校長據報後，請老師抽查學生箱匱，所注意的對象多是貧苦學生。查了一個月，不但毫無下落，而且這種竊案繼續發生。我看見情形很嚴重，決心自己來捉賊。

那個星期天，我再買了一套新的，放在牀前書桌上，躺在牀上裝做午睡。妙極了！我從眼睛縫縫裏，果然發現一個人影迫近桌前。我得意極了，我就要抓到了賊。

我高喊一聲「嘿！」跳下牀來，定睛一看，那一剎那間，我失望極了。而賊不是別人，居然是本級最富有人家的子弟吳津同學。他的學問品德都好，又樂於助人，決不至偷竊這些小東西的。然而，事實表現得太殘酷了。他聽見我「嘿」的一聲，立即撲通一聲跪下哀求着：

「老林！我錯得很，饒恕我吧！」

我仍半信半疑，老吳會做賊？巧妙地笑着說：

「哈哈！老吳！够了吧，别再開我的玩笑，借去用吧！」

我放了他，可是沒有救他。有一天，他終於被捕了，搜出百多套同樣的用具。這件事，在別的學校，開除了事，幸好師範學校有教育心理學的老師，反對開除「問題學生」，請求校長准予留校察看，以供研究，並加以感化。因此組織了「研究小組」研究吳津爲什麼會偷竊？

這問題終於在家庭訪問時獲得解答：吳津家富，兄弟姊妹共有七人，他居最小，

最受父母溺愛，亦最缺乏教養，年幼時他喜愛哥哥姐姐們手上的東西就要，要不到就哭，母親就對他說，「等三姐不在時，我去偷來給你！」或是說，「等四哥出去了，我就拿來給你。」果然，兄姐們一走開，母親便去拿給他，而且教他玩的時候，別讓哥哥姐姐看見。他一拿到手，老是藏起來不玩。他從小便得到了這樣的經驗，要什麽，只要在人家不在時去拿好了。這種拿的辦法，在家庭裏無所謂，在學校中或社會上，就成爲「偷」了。他長大以後，也不自知其爲偷，但那已經成爲頑固的怪癖了。(林枕客：狂人百相之一)

【譯　　文】

It is believed to be true by psychopathists that nine out of ten insane people have an inclination to steal. In fact, kleptomania is the commonest symptom of insanity. Poor souls! They are supposed to have morally degenerated and will never be treated as kleptomaniacs until their insanity is beyond cure. In that case, they are regarded as lunatics. The distinction between kleptomania and theft can easily be made. A theft is committed with an aim, while kleptomania without any object at all. A person suffering from kleptomania steals all sorts of things whether he needs them or not; he considers larceny a kind of enjoyment. You are apt to find some people who are rather well off, indulge in stealing from others things which they are never in want of. They would be very pleased with the thing they have stolen even if it is quite useless to them. This irresistible tendency to steal we may easily ascribe to the mental disease just mentioned. Although kleptomania is a symptom of mental weakness, the habit may be formed during one's childhood in a depraved family.

Something strange had come about while I was a first year student of the normal school. It occurred that my compasses, set-squares, magnifying glasses for reading maps were always missing. Though I had bought four sets of them, yet I could not find them when I wanted to use them. After being told of what had happened, the principal asked our teacher to search for them among the belongings of the students,

especially the poor ones, in the school. The search continued for a month, but resulted in nothing. As the same thing happened again and again, I set to work to seek the mystery of the case myself.

I bought another new set of the above-mentioned instruments on a Sunday, and put it out on the desk just in front of my bed. Then I pretended to be asleep. Fancy! with half an eye, I saw a form moving stealthily towards my bed. I was so excited that I cried out "Hi!", and jumping up from my bed, ready to catch the thief on the spot, I found, to my disappointment, that he was no other than Wu Tsing, a class-mate of mine, who was from one of the richest families, and who was very generous in helping others. It seemed improbable that he, who conducted himself well at school, would steal such trifles. But on hearing my voice, he dropped down on his knees in a panic, imploring:

"Forgive me, Old Lin, for Heaven's sake. I know it's very wicked of me to do so."

I was confounded and could not believe my eyes. It was beyond my comprehension that Wu Tsing should commit a larceny. In a moment I gathered my senses and answered:

"Ha, ha! Old Wu, that's enough. Don't make fun of me any more. You are welcome to use them."

I let him go, but I did not succour him. Some days later, he was caught at last. More than hundred sets of similar instruments were found in his suitcase. If it happened in other schools, he would be dismissed at once, but ours was a normal school, and the teacher of educational psychology objected to dismissing the student in question. He asked the principal to keep Wu Tsing in school for some time for investigation. A committee was formed to find out the reason why Wu Tsing should steal and how he could be "cured".

The answer to this problem was finally derived from a visit they paid to his family. As he was the youngest of seven children of a well-to-do family, his parents doted on him so much that they spoiled

him. Whenever he saw anything interesting which his brother or sister had, he would cry for it if it was not given him. Having a weakness for the youngest, his mother would pacify him with these words: "Don't cry, my boy, I'll steal it for you when your sister is not in," or "You can have it afterwards when your brother is out." Every time when his brother or sister was away from home, his mother would fetch him the thing he liked to have without fail. Moreover, he was *told* then not to play with it in his or her presence. Having had gained the experience that anything he wanted could be obtained during the absence of its owner, he did not realize that taking things away from others secretly was a crime. Of course, it would not be regarded as a theft by his brothers and sisters at home, but it was not so in the school or society. He came to know it was theft when he grew up, but the habit had been formed and could never be shaken off.

(15) 狐假虎威

【原　　文】

虎求百獸[1]而食之，得狐。狐曰：『子無敢食我也！天帝使我長百獸[2]，今子食我，是逆[3]天帝命也。子以我爲不信[4]，吾爲子先行[5]，子隨我後，觀百獸之見我而敢不走乎？』虎以爲然[6]，故遂與之行，獸見之皆走，虎不知獸畏己而走也，以爲畏狐也。（戰國策）

【譯　　文】

A tiger went about in search of other weaker animals for food. Once in his hunting, he happened to find a fox. "You won't dare to eat me," said the fox, "as I am head of all animals appointed by God. It is against the will of God, if you eat me now. In case you don't believe what I say, let us go together. You just follow me as I go ahead to see if there is any animal that does not run away when I pass." The tiger agreed and went with the other. Certainly he saw all the animals run away on seeing the fox. He thought they were

afraid of the fox without knowing it was he himself that they feared.

【注　　釋】

(1) 百獸：各種動物，all kinds of beasts. (2) 長百獸：爲百獸之長。(3) 逆：違反。(4) 子以我爲不信：你如果不相信我的話。又可譯爲 if you don't believe me. 英文說 believe me 是說「相信我說的話」，如說 believe in me，則意爲「信任我這個人」。(5)吾爲子先行：讓我走在你的前面。(6)虎以爲然：老虎同意狐的建議。

(16) 習慣說

【原　　文】

蓉[1]少時，讀書養晦堂[2]之西偏一室。俛[3]而讀，仰而思；思而弗[4]得，輒起，繞室一旋[5]。室有窪[6]徑尺[7]，浸淫[8]日廣，每履之[9]，足苦躓[10]焉；既久而遂安之。一日，父來室中，顧而笑曰：「一室之不治[11]，何以天下國家爲？」命童子取土平之。後蓉復履其地，蹴然[12]以驚，如土忽隆起者；俯視地，坦然[13]則既平矣。已而復然[14]，又久而後安之。噫！習[15]之中人[16]甚矣哉！足利平地，不與窪適也；及其久而窪者若平；至使久而即乎其故[17]，則反窒焉[18]而不寧[19]。故君子之學貴愼始。（劉蓉）

【譯　　文】

When I was young I studied in a western chamber of the Obscurity House. Sometimes I bent down to read; sometimes I looked up to think. When I could not, after much thinking, figure out the meaning of what I was reading, I rose to my feet and walked about the room. In the earthen floor of the room there was a hollow about one foot wide; and that grew larger day by day. Every time I walked over it, I stumbled; but by degrees, I got used to it. One day Father came into my study and saw the hollow. "How can you serve your country well," he said, smiling, "when you cannot keep such a little room tidy?" So he ordered a boy to fill it up with earth. Later when I walked

over the spot again, I was surprised to find the earth there seemed swelling. I looked down, and found the hollow had already been filled up and the place was now as flat as a pancake. It was some time before I could get used to it again. Ah! how a habit works on man! You find it fit for your feet to walk on the level ground but not on places with holes. When you have, however, become accustomed to the sunken places in the floor, you will feel as if they were level. You will, on the contrary, stumble and feel uncomfortable when you walk on the spot newly leveled-up. Therefore the Superior Man is very cautious when he starts learning a thing.

【注　　釋】

(1)蓉是作者劉蓉的自稱。(2)養晦堂爲作者家中的齋名。(3)俛同俯。(4)弗當不字講。(5)旋，轉。(6)窪：低陷的地方。(7)徑尺：直徑有一尺的光景，it measures one foot in diameter. (8)浸淫：逐漸，gradually. (9)履之：走過那裏，walk over it. (10)躓：遇阻礙而顛跌，trip, stumble. (11)治：弄好，keep it tidy, make it in perfect trim. (12)蹴然：不安的樣子，unsteady. (13)坦然：平坦的樣子，as flat as a pancake. (14)復然：仍是這樣。(15)習，即習慣，a habit. (16)中人：對人的影響，works on a person. (17)至使久而卽乎其故：假使過了很久再恢復原狀，if it is restored to its former condition after an elapse of time. (18)窒焉：受到阻礙，be obstructed. (19)不寧：不舒適，uncomfortable.

(17) 黔之驢

【原　　文】

黔[1]無驢，有好事者[2]，船載以入；至則無可用，放之山下。虎見之，尨[3]然大物也，以爲神；蔽[4]林間窺之。稍出，近之，憖憖然[5]莫相知[6]。他日驢一鳴[7]，虎大駭遠遁，以爲且噬[8]己也，甚恐。然往來[9]視之，覺無異能[10]者。益習其聲[11]又進出前後，終不敢搏[12]。稍近益狎[13]，蕩倚衝冒[14]；驢不勝怒，蹄之[15]。虎因喜，計之曰[16]：技止此耳[17]。因跳踉大㘎[18]，斷其喉，盡其肉，乃去。噫[19]：形之尨者，類有德[20]，聲之宏者，類有能[21]。向不出其技，虎雖猛，疑畏卒不敢取[22]；今若是焉。悲

夫[28]！（柳宗元）

【譯　文】

There was no ass in Kweichow, and somebody brought in one by boat. But when it arrived, he found he could make no use of it, so he left it at the foot of a mountain. Seeing it, a tiger thought such a tremendous thing must be none other than a god. At first he peeped at it from behind the woods, and then moved timidly towards it; but still he dared not get in touch with it. One day the ass brayed, and the tiger was so frightened that he ran far away from it fearing it was going to eat him up. Later on he came back to look at it from all quarters, and found it possessing no particular ability. Though he, being more accustomed to its braying, was no longer afraid to come near it, yet he dared not attack it. He ventured to tease it more and more with a view to testing its abilities. Being greatly irritated, the ass gave him a kick. At this time the tiger was very glad as he found it was at its wit's end and had no other ability than this. Therefore he pounced upon it, first breaking its neck and then eating up all its flesh, and went away. Alas! those with a huge form appear to be powerful, and those with a loud voice appear to be capable. No matter how fierce the tiger was, he would not be bold enough to grapple the ass, so long as it did not show off its ability. What a pity that it should have done thus!

【注　釋】

(1)黔即今貴州省。(2)好事者：喜歡興造事端之人，如孟子說的「好事者爲之也」。英譯爲 busy body，但在此譯爲 somebody 較好。(3)尨，通龐，巨大的意思，huge, tremendous. (4) 蔽，藏匿的意思，hide，譯文中以 behind 表達出來。(5)慭慭然，謹敬的樣子，timidly, cautiously 慭音債。(6) 莫相知：不敢親近，dared not get in touch with. (7)驢鳴，bray. (8)噬，吃掉的意思，eat up. (9)往來：應譯 to and fro，譯文中意譯爲 from all quarters（從各個角度）。(10) 異能：特殊本領。(11) 益習其聲：更加習慣了驢的叫聲 being more

accustomed to its braying. (12)搏：攻擊，attack. (13)狎：玩弄輕慢，to be intimate with. (14)蕩倚衝冒：蕩是動蕩，倚爲身體貼近，衝是衝過去，冒是追上前去。全句意爲接近驢子而觸怒它，來試試它的本領。(15)蹄之：用蹄去踢虎。(16)計之曰：估計着說，said in estimation. (17)技止此耳：只有這樣一個本領，this is all it can do. 文中以 at its wit's end 表示。(18)跳踉大㘞：跳踉是脚亂動的樣子。㘞同嚼或啖，dancing and eating to his heart's content. (19)噫：歎息聲，alas. (20)形之尨者，類有德：形體尨大，看去像是有德的。「德」字在此的用法，與禮記大學上說的「富潤屋，德潤身，心廣體胖」中用的「德」字意義相同，卽顯見於外者，實於內，那驢子外表看來，身體旣那樣尨大，則它的實力一定雄厚。「德」可譯爲 powerful. (21)聲之宏者類有能：聲音宏亮，好像有技能的樣子。「能」可譯爲 capable. (22)疑畏卒不敢取：懷疑畏怯，終不敢去捕食，not be bold enough to grapple the ass. (23)悲夫：多麼可悲，how sad.

(18) 少年孔融的機智

【原　文】

孔文舉[1]年十歲，隨父到洛。時李元禮[2]有盛名，爲司隸校尉[3]。詣門者皆儁才淸稱[4]，及中表親戚乃通[5]。文舉至門，謂吏曰：「我是李府君[6]親。」旣通，前坐，元禮問曰：「君與僕有何親？」對曰：「昔先君[7]仲尼[8]，與君先人伯陽[9]，有師資之尊[10]，是僕[11]與君奕世[12]爲通好也。」元禮及賓客莫不奇之。太中大夫[13]陳韙後至，人以其語[14]語之[15]。韙曰：「小時了了[16]，大未必佳。」文舉曰：「想君小時，必當了了。」韙大踧踖[17]。(世說新語)

【譯　文】

When Kung Yung went to Loyang, the then capital, with his father, he was only ten years old. At that time, Li Ying, the supreme official inspector, was a man of great reputation in the country. Nobody except his relatives and those who possessed distinct attainments and high commendation would be admitted to his presence.

"I'm a relative of your master," said the boy to the gate officer, who at once led him in. Sitting before the host, Kung Yung was questioned by Li Ying, "What relationship is there between you and me?"

"In old times, my forefather Confucius had a teacher-pupil relationship with your ancestor Lao-tze," the boy guest replied, "and, therefore, our two families have been closely related for many generations." Li Ying and all his other guests present were greatly surprised at the answer.

Chen Wei, the counsellor, came later and was told what Kung Yung had said. "Being bright in early childhood does not necessarily mean that he will be clever when grown up," he observed. In response to this, Kung Yung said, "I guess you must have been very bright in your childhood," which made Chen Wei feel very much embarrassed.

【注　　釋】

(1)孔文舉：孔融字文舉，孔子後裔。(2)李元禮：李膺字元禮，有高名，被他接見的人即可身價百倍，稱爲登龍門。(3)司隸校尉：官名，掌糾察百官以下及近郡犯法者，東漢時並領有一州，權威極重。(4)儁才清稱：超羣的才學，清高的稱譽。(5)通：通報，傳達。(6)府君：郡守的稱呼。(7)先君：今人稱自己死去的父親爲先君，但古人對祖先亦稱先君。(8)仲尼：孔子名丘字仲尼。(9)伯陽：老子姓李名耳字伯陽。今又有人考證老子姓老。(10)師資之尊：孔子適周，嘗問禮於老子，故尊爲師。(11)僕：孔融自稱。(12)奕世：累世，累代。(13)太中大夫：官名，掌諫議，備諮詢。(14)其語：孔融說的話。(15)語之：講給他聽。(16)了了：聰慧，曉解事理。(17)踧踖：不安的樣子，音促籍。

(19) 絕妙好辭

【原　　文】

魏武帝(1)嘗過曹娥碑(2)下，楊修(3)從。碑背上見題作黃絹幼婦外孫齏臼八字，魏武語修曰：『解不(4)？』答曰：『解。』魏武曰：『卿未可言，待我思之。』行三十里，魏武曰：『吾已得。』令修別記所知。修曰：『黃絹色絲也，於字爲絕。幼婦少女也，於字爲妙。外孫女子也，於字爲好。齏臼受辛也，於字爲辤。所記絕妙好辭也。』魏武亦記之與修同。乃歎曰：『我才不及卿(5)，乃覺(6)三十里。』（世說新語）

【譯　　文】

Emperor Wu Ti of Wei (in the Three Kingdoms) once went for

an outing with Yang Hsiu, one of his officials. While riding by the foot of the stone tablet of Tsao Ê, they saw on its back an inscription consisting of eight characters: "Yellow lustring, young woman, external grandson, crushing mortar."

"Do you know," Wu Ti asked Yang Hsiu, "what they mean?"

Yes, Sire," the other replied.

"Don't tell me now," Wu Ti said. "I'll think it over myself."

When they had gone for thirty *li*, Wu Ti exclaimed, "I've got it!" He told Yang Hsiu to write his explanation on a piece of paper, which read: "Yellow lustring" is coloured silk, which makes up the character "chüeh" meaning "extremely". "Young woman" is a little girl, which makes up the character "miao" meaning "admirable". "External grandson" is the son of a daughter, which makes up the character "hao" meaning "fine". "Crushing mortar" is the vessel in which pungent things are pounded, which makes up the character "tzu" meaning "expression". The whole inscription means "an extremely admirable fine expression".

On discovering what Yang Hsiu had written was just the same as his, Wu Ti heaved a deep sigh, saying: "I am far behind you in talent. There is, I find, a difference of thirty *li* between us".

【注　　釋】

(1)魏武帝：曹丕纂漢後追諡其父曹操爲武帝。(2)曹娥碑：東漢時上虞女子曹娥，因父溺死，亦投江而死。經五日，抱父屍出。度尙使弟子邯鄲淳爲作誄辭，立石。蔡邕夜摸其文讀之，題黃絹幼婦外孫齏臼八字，即絕妙好辭四字的隱語。(3)楊修：東漢人，字德祖，聰慧過人，爲曹操主簿。後爲曹操所殺。(4)解不？：懂得嗎？(5)卿：秦漢以來君呼臣曰卿。後世夫妻間稱卿。原來只有丈夫稱妻子爲卿，故世說惑溺篇中載：王安豐婦常稱安豐爲卿，安豐便對她說：『婦人卿壻，於禮爲不敬，後勿復爾。』他的妻子反駁他說：『親卿愛卿，是以卿卿，我不卿卿，誰當卿卿？』上述的「卿壻」及後面的「卿卿」的第一個卿字，都是作動詞用的。(6)覺：相差的意思。

(20) 韓信忍受袴下辱

【原　文】

信[1]釣於城下[2]，諸母[3]漂[4]，有一母見信飢，飯信[5]，竟漂數十日[6]。信喜，謂漂母曰：『吾必有以重報母[7]。』母怒曰：『大丈夫不能自食[8]，吾哀王孫[9]而進食，豈望報乎？』

淮陰屠中少年[10]，有侮信者，曰：『若[11]雖長大，好帶刀劍，中情怯[12]耳。』衆辱之曰[13]：『信，能死，刺我[14]；不能死，出我袴下[15]。』於是信孰視之[16]，俛[17]出袴下，蒲伏[18]。一市人皆笑信，以爲怯。（司馬遷：淮陰侯列傳）

【譯　文】

Once Han Hsin was fishing on the outskirts of the city, where many a woman was bleaching silk. One of the women seeing him hunger-stricken offered him food out of her own lunch box, and continued to do so for scores of days till she had done all her bleaching. Han Hsin, quite gratified, said to the old woman: "I will pay you back much more for your kindness some day." Exasperated at this, she retorted, "Being a man, you cannot feed yourself. It is just out of pity that I share with you what I have, and not that I wish to have something in return!"

A youth among the butchers at Huai Yin once spat at Han Hsin, saying: "Though you grow so big and like to wear a sword, you are at heart a coward!" In presence of a large group of spectators, he went on with scorn: "Look here, Hsin, if you are not afraid of death, stab me; otherwise, go through under my legs." Thereupon, Han Hsin after staring at the youth for a while, crawled under his legs, face downwards on the ground. The whole town laughed at Hsin, thinking him a coward.

【注　釋】

(1)信：韓信，漢興三傑之一，滅項羽，使劉邦成帝業，封淮陰侯，後爲劉邦所殺，夷三族。(2)釣於城下：在淮陰城下淮河邊上釣魚。(3)諸母：好些老大娘。(4)

漂：洗絲綿。(5)飯信：把她自己的飯分給韓信吃。(6)竟漂數十日：一連幾十天都分飯給韓信吃，直到漂完爲止。(7)吾必有以重報母：我將來一定要厚厚地報答您老人家。(8)不能自食：不能够自己找到飯吃。(9)王孫：好像說公子一樣，古代對青年人的敬稱。(10)屠中少年：市上賣肉的少年們。(11)若：你。(12)中情怯：內心怯懦，即膽子小。整句意爲「你雖然個子長得很高，又喜歡佩刀掛劍，其實是一個膽小鬼。」(13)衆辱之曰：當衆侮辱他說。(14)能死：你要不怕死的話。(15)出我袴下：從我的褲襠底下鑽過去。(16)孰視之：仔細地打量他一番。「孰」即古寫的熟字。(17)俛：同俯。(18)蒲伏：同匍匐，意爲在地上爬行。

習 題

試將下列中文譯成英文：

(1) 『各人自掃門前雪，休管他人瓦上霜』，是使世界達到和平幸福的最佳途徑。一家如此，則一家和樂。一國如此，則一國安定。全世界如此，則天下太平。

(2) 學問是自己的事，不能依靠別人的。環境好，圖書設備充足，有良師益友指導啓發，當然有很大的幫助，但是這些條件具備，也不一定能保證一個人在學問上就有成就。世間也有不少在學問上有成就的人，並不具備這些條件。最重要的因素，還是個人自己的努力。求學是一件艱苦的事，許多人不能忍受那必經的艱苦，所以不能得到成功。

(3) 『我想認識倫敦，應該先到哪裏去？巴力門，還是唐寧街？』我向寓所的女主人打聽。那位老太太搖搖頭說：『這種地方你去幹什麽？你得先上海德公園。在那公園裏，你纔能了解我們英國怎麽會有巴力門和唐寧街的。』她的意思是說，造成英國政治的，是英國人民的精神，並不是有了議會和內閣，英國纔得到民主的政治，而是人民有了民主的精神，纔有英國的議會和內閣。海德公園正是民主精神表演的地方。

(4) 善即是美。我們感到物事像理想一般的實現，我們就覺得是美。所謂理想一般的實現，就是說，那物事能把它的天性完全發揮出來。所以，如花在天性全露時最美一樣，人在充分發揮他的天性時，也就達到美的極致了。

(5) 道德非言語所能施教。凡未親受仁愛待遇者畢生將不知仁愛爲何物。故以仁愛待人，始能教人以仁愛。語云：『以言教者訟，以身教者從。』

(6) 文學的工具是語言文字。我們第一須認識語言文字，其次須有運用語言文字的技巧。這事看來似很容易，因爲一般人日常都在運用語言文字；但是實在極難，

因爲文學要用平常的語言文字產生不平常的效果。文學家對於語言文字的了解，必須比一般人都較精確，然後可以運用自如。他必須懂得字的形聲義，字的組織以及音義與組織對於讀者所生的影響。這要包涵語文學，邏輯學，文法，美學和心理各種知識。…… 一個人想做出第一流文學作品，別的條件不用說，單說語文研究一項，他必須有深厚的修養，他必須達到有話都可說出而且說得好的程度。

(7) 莊子與惠子遊於濠梁之上，莊子曰：『儵魚出遊從容，是魚之樂也。』惠子曰：『子非魚，安知魚之樂？』莊子曰：『子非我，安知我不知魚之樂？』惠子曰：『我非子，固不知子矣。子固非魚也，子之不知魚之樂全矣。』

(8) 大家都知道下午四五點鐘，在英國是喝茶的時間。首相也好，時裝模特女郎也好，警察也好，甚至強盜也好，都是一定要喝下午茶的。

一杯茶，加上一點烤麵包或餅乾，再和朋友閒談幾句。這種光景在英國下午四五點鐘的時候，是到處可以見到的，不問是在英王居處的白金漢宮，或是在尋常老百姓的家裏，都是一樣。對於在機關上做打字員一類工作的女性們，忙了一天而得到半小時的休息，去喝一杯茶，實在是一種最受歡迎的調劑了。甚至在前線的士兵們，如果情勢允許的話，也要抽空去喝一杯茶。這原是英國牢不可破的傳統。

(9) 人人都知道聖華倫泰節是景慕情人的一個愛情的節日。其起源可追溯到遠古的羅馬時代。當時的青年人以抽籤的方式，取得住在附近女孩子的名字，而還以決定他們的情人。在中世紀時，就把聖華倫泰節定在二月十四日，隨後歐美的人們，又找出許多新花樣來慶祝那一天。

一個青年男子不妨去吻他當日所遇到的第一個女人。這在東方人看來，也許是要覺得奇怪的。

到了十九世紀，人們開始寄贈美麗的辭句和專爲當日設計的卡片，並進行交換禮物。

今天人們不但對情人寄贈卡片，而且對父母師長，也照樣寄，成爲很通行的習俗了。

(10) 在伊庸河附近我父母的產業，對我毫無吸引力。我常走下到河邊去，偶然望望浮在河上的黃色的水藻，時而又拾起扁平的石塊去打水漂，看它像燕子一般迅速地在水上掠過。

我父母的家屋是長形而灰色的。牧場一直伸展到像乳酪似的伊庸河邊爲止，燕子在空中飛翔着，河岸上的白楊樹，長得枝葉互相連起來了。有一棵白楊樹，我特別喜歡，常要趟在那樹下。我發覺我自己在草中微笑着，我想要不笑，可是不成。

I 英 譯 中

(1) Too Clever Not to See

【原 文】

Elliott was too clever not to see[1] that many of the persons who accepted his invitations did so[2] only to get a free meal and that[4] of these some[5] were stupid and some worthless[6]. (W.S. Msugham: The Razor's Edge)

【譯 文】

艾略特是一個聰明的人，必然看得出來，大多數接受他邀請的人，只是爲着要來吃一頓不花錢的飯，他知道他們當中有些是愚笨的，另外有些却是不足輕重的。

【注 釋】

(1) too clever not to see＝clever that he cannot but see，以他的聰明豈有不知此事之理。他例如：He is too angry not to say that. 他那般忿怒而忍不住要說出那樣的話來。 (2) did so 即 acccepted his invitations. (3) to get＝in order to get. (4) that 接前面 to see 說的。句子的構造是：to see that...and that.... (5) of these some＝some of these. (6) some worthless＝some of these were worthless.

(2) The Busy Broker

【原 文】

The broker's hour is not only crowded, but minutes and seconds are hanging to all the straps[3] and packing[4] both front and rear platforms[5]. (O. Henry)

【譯 文】

經紀人的時間不但是忙迫得像街車一樣的擁擠，而且每分每秒車上所有的吊帶都吊滿了站立的乘客，在前後的站臺上，也擠得水洩不通。

【注　　釋】

(1) crowded: 對個人的時間,只能說 fully occupied, 意爲很忙碌,完全被事情佔有了,不能說 crowded, 這是擁擠的意思。只有乘車等才可說擁擠,可知這是一種比喻的說法。作者把經紀人忙碌的時間,比做擁擠不堪的街車 (street car, 即英國人說的 tram car, 或現通行的 bus), 所以才有擁擠及以下的種種說法。(2) straps: 每部車子都有規定, 可容坐客多少,站客多少,站立的乘客,車上懸有許多吊帶,以便站着的人抓住,不至因車開動而跌倒, 這種乘客就叫作 strap-hanger (掛在吊帶上的人)。(3) packing: 裝載,塞滿,擠緊,擁擠,例如 A hundred men were packed into a small room. (一百個人擠在一間小房子內。) (4) platforms: 車子前後不設座位的空地,以便乘客上下的出入處所。這段文章的表現方法,是比的修辭學的一種,實爲作家所不可少的技巧。比喻分明喻 (simile) 和隱喻 (metaphor) 兩種,如聖經上說的 (a) In the morning they are *like grass* which groweth up. (Psal. xc. 5) (早晨他們如生長的草。) (b) All flesh is *grass*. (Isa. xl. 6) (凡有血氣的,盡都如草。) (a) 句爲明喻,而 (b) 句則爲隱喻。上文沒有說明像電車一樣,所以是屬於隱喻一類。

(3) Speculation on Important Subjects

【原　　文】

There[1] are few[2] circumstances among those[3] which make up the present condition of human knowledge, more significant[4] of the backward state[5] in which speculation[6] on the most important subjects[7] still lingers, than the little[8] progress which has been made in the decision of the controversy[9] respecting[10] the criterion[11] of right and wrong. (John Stuart Mill)

【譯　　文】

就構成人的知識現狀各種情形來說, 沒有什麼比解決是非準繩的爭論之罕有進展,更要表示吾人對最重要的問題的思索,是依然停滯在落後的狀態中。

【注　　釋】

(1) There 以下 52 字構成的一個句子,在動手翻譯之前,必須提綱挈領,找出

全文的骨幹，才能把文法結構了然於心，譯時便可把握正確的意義。全句的綱領如下：There are few circumstances...more significant of the state...than the progress. (2) few：幾無。(3) those：卽指 circumstances. (4) significant：意指，表示。例如 Smiles are usually significant of pleasure.（微笑通常是表示愉快。）原句可用動詞 signify 來代此形容詞的 significant，而改寫爲 few circumstances ...which signify the backward state...more than the progress. (5) backward state：落後的情形；進步慢或發達遲的情形。(6) speculation：思索 (thought)，默想 (meditation)。例如 He began to speculate on the origin of the universe.（他開始思索宇宙的起源。）She often speculates as to what sort of man she will marry.（關於她將來要嫁怎樣的人她時常在想。）(7) subjects：問題，課題。(8) little：與前面的 few 同樣是作幾無解，little 指量，few 指數。(9) controversy：爭論 (discussion)。(10) respecting：關於。(11) criterion：準繩 (a standard of judgment)，例如 Money is only one criterion of success.（金錢只是成功的一種標幟。）

(4) A Feeling of Eternity

【原 文】

No young man believes he shall[1] ever die. There is a feeling of Eternity in youth, which makes us amends for every thing. To be young is to be one of the Immortal Gods[2]. One half of time indeed is flown[3]—the other half remains in store for us with all its countless treasures; for there is no line drawn, and we see no limit to our hopes and wishes. We make the coming age our own[4]. "The vast, the unbounded prospect lies before us." We look round in a new world, full of life, and motion[5], and ceaseless progress; and feel in ourselves all the vigour and spirit to keep pace with[6] it, and do not foresee from any present symptoms how we shall be left behind[7] in the natural course of things[8], decline into old age, and drop into the grave.

【譯 文】

沒有一個年輕人相信他是要死的。在青春時有一種永恆的感覺，使人獲得了一

切的補償。年輕人快樂似神仙。雖則半生一幌就過去了，還有下半生帶着無限的寶藏，仍然給他儲備着，因爲前程遠大，希望無窮。這個新的時代是屬於年輕人的。一個廣大無邊的前景展開在他前面。他環顧周遭這個新的世界，充滿着生命，活躍和不斷的進步，他自身也感到元氣旺盛，精神煥發，要來和它並駕齊驅。沒有任何徵候會使他預感到有朝一日，自己行將落伍，淪入老境，而終於要掉進墓穴中去的。

【注　釋】

(1) he shall: 第三人稱不用 will 而用 shall，是表預言的，例如 East is East and West is West, and never the twain shall meet. (R. Kipling)(東是東，西是西，兩者永遠碰不到頭。(2) the Immortal Gods: 神仙。單說 the Immortals 也是一樣的意思。(3) flown: 爲 fly (飛) 的過去分詞。(4) our own: 年輕人的。在本文中開端雖用的第三人稱的 young man，但隨即用 us 取代，通篇說的 we 或 us 都是指的年輕人。(5) motion: 活躍。(6) keep pace with: 與之並駕齊驅。(7) be left behind: 落伍。(8) in the natural course of things: 在萬物的自然趨勢中。

(5) The Spirit of Fair-Play

【原　文】

This spirit of fair-play, which in the public schools[1], at any rate, is absorbed[2] as the most inviolable[3] of traditions, has stood our race in good stead[4] in the professions, and especially in the administration of dependencies, where the obvious desire of the officials to deal justly and see fair-play in disputes between natives and Europeans has partly compensated for a want[5] of sympathetic understanding, which[6] has kept the English strangers in[7] lands of alien culture. (William Ralph Inge)

【譯　文】

這種公正的精神，至少在私立公校中是當作最爲神聖不可侵犯的傳統而加以全神貫注的。這種精神在人們的供職上，尤其是在屬地統治上，對於英國民族是很有用的。當統治屬地時，英國的官員抱着一種顯然的願望，想要公正地處理土人與

歐人間的爭執，而冀得到公平的解決，使英國人處在海外的異族文化中，因缺乏同情的諒解而格格不入的情形，多少獲得了一點補償。

【注　釋】

(1) public schools：英國為私立公校，為教育上層階級子女的寄宿學校，如伊頓 (Eton) 等校。但在美國則為公立學校。(2) is absorbed：全神貫注，專心，神往。(3) inviolable：不可侵犯的，神聖的。(4) stand (或 serve) one in stead：於人有用，有好用處。(5) want：缺乏。(6) which：為 want 的關係代名詞。(7) keep the English strangers in：使英國人在……始終陌生，不能融洽。

(6) On D.H. Lawrence

【原　文】

One of the great charms of Lawrence as a companion was that he could never be bored and so could never be boring. He was able to absorb himself completely in which he was doing at the moment; and he regarded no task as too humble for him to undertake, nor so trivial that it was not worth his while to do it well. He could cook, he could sew, he could darn a stocking and milk a cow, he was an efficient woodcutter and a good hand at embroidery, fires always burned when he had laid them and a floor, after Lawrence had scrubbed it, was thoroughly clean. Moreover, he possessed what is, for a highly strung and highly intelligent man, an even more remarkable accomplishment: he knew how to do nothing. He could just sit and be perfectly content. And his contentment, while one remained in his company, was infectious. (Aldous Huxley)

【譯　文】

跟羅倫斯做朋友所感到的他的一種很可愛的地方，就是他從不討人厭，因之，他也從不討厭人。他在做着一件事的時候，總是專心致志的，沒有什麼事他會覺得太卑屈而不屑於去做的，也沒有一件小事他認為不值得他好好去做的。他能烹調，

他能縫級他能編織襪子，還能擠榨牛奶。他是一個能幹的樵夫，又是一個刺繡的好手。他生的火總是燃燒得很旺的。他洗擦過的地板，乾淨得一塵不染。此外，以他那樣一個高度緊張和高度理智的人，更具有一種傑出的才能：那就是他知道無所爲而爲，他可以單只坐着什麼事也不做而能心滿意足。他這種滿足，我們跟他一塊兒坐着的話，也可以傳染到的。

(7) On Books

【原　　文】

Some books, like some persons, convey to us all that they will ever[1] have to give at a single sitting[2]. Others hold our attention profitably through two or three encounters[2]......and the books to frequent, the books to be shipwrecked with[3], the great books into which rich and substantial lives have been distilled[4] and packed—the Dialogues of Plato, Montaigne's Essays, Boswell's Johnson, the Essays and Journals of Emerson—these are to be lived with and returned to[5] and made the companions of hours and days and moods as various as those in which they were written. (Stuart P. Sherman)

【譯　　文】

有些書也和有些人一樣，大概都是把它們打算要傳達給我們的東西一下子就完全傾吐出來。有些書則使我們要專心而獲益地讀上兩三遍才能釋手。……還有些是要再三反復去讀的書，有些是在遭遇船隻失事時也仍然要帶着走的書，有些是從豐富而充實的人生中摘出而嵌入行間字裏的偉大的書——柏拉圖的語錄，蒙田的隨筆，鮑斯威爾的約翰生傳，艾默遜的散文和日記——這些書是可以與之共同生活的，可以百讀不厭的，也可以在不同的時日與心情中作爲伴侶的，那種不同的時日與心情，也正和那些作品在寫作時的情形一樣。

【注　　釋】

(1) ever：在以 that 引導的關係子句中，前有最上級形容詞或 all 或 the only 等字樣時，則有 on any supposition, by any chance, at all（究竟，到底，的確）之意。(2) at a sitting：一口氣（做完一件事，如讀完一本書，寫完一

篇文章之類)。(3) be shipwrecked with: 在船失事沉沒時也要帶着逃命的。(4) distill: 精煉,摘出,精選。(5) returned to: 重說。

(8) Arguments against Smoking

【原 文】

It is always inspiring to see a brave man fighting for a lost(1) cause, and I never cease to admire the Jacobitish(2) zeal with which year after year Mr. John Ervine(3) carries on a guerrilla warfare(4) against the ever-increasing power of tobacco. I admire it all the more because(5) I have fired a few shots in the war against tobacco myself, and have invariably retired defeated(6), with sign of defeat(7), a cigarette in my mouth. I can go on fighting for a week or a month, but there always comes a time when I strike my colours(8)—and a match. (Robert Lynd)

【譯 文】

看到勇敢的人爲着一種毫無成功希望的運動而奮鬪的情形,是始終令人鼓舞的。年復一年地以斯圖亞特王室擁護者的熱誠,來對抗不斷增長的煙草的勢力,進行游擊戰的厄爾文,我一直都是衷心佩服的。我本人在對抗煙草的戰爭中,也曾開過幾槍,而每次都敗下陣來,口裏啣着一支香煙,便是敗北的標幟,因此我對於他的熱誠更加佩服。我能繼續戰鬪一星期,或一個月,但最後總有一個時候要到來,那就是我掛降旗——刮火柴。

【注 釋】

(1) lost: 不作「失去的」解,應爲「失敗的」,「輸了的」之意,如 a lost battle (敗仗),故在上文中意爲「一種完全沒有成功希望的運動」。(2) Jacobitish: 爲 Jacobite 的形容詞。Jacobite 爲1688年被迫遜位的英王 James II 的擁護者,卽支持 House of Stuart (斯圖亞特王室)者。(3) St. John Ervine 爲英國愛爾蘭出生的劇作家兼小說家。在第一次世界大戰後渡美,成爲百老滙的批評家。(4) guerrilla warfare: 游擊戰。(5) all the more because: 因此更加。(6) retired defeated: 敗下陣來。(7) the sign of defeat: 與下面說的 a ciga-

rette in my mouth 同格。(8) strike one's colours: 投降。作者利用 strike a match 一語中的同一動詞 (strike) 而作出此俏皮話語。

(9) The Definition of a Gentleman

【原　文】

It is almost a definition of a gentleman to say he is one who never inflicts pain. This description is both refined and, as far as it goes, accurate. He is mainly occupied in merely removing the obstacles which hinder the free and unembarrassed action of those about him; and he concurs with their movements rather than takes the initiative himself. His benefits may be considered as parallel to what are called comforts or conveniences in arrangements of a personal nature—like an easy chair or a good fire, which do their part in dispelling cold and fatigue, though Nature provides both means of rest and animal heat without them.

【譯　文】

這差不多可以算是紳士的定義了：說一個人從來不使別人受苦。這個界說，就其本身而論，是既精到而又正確的。他主要是只忙着爲他周圍的人來消除那些阻止他們自由自在的行動上的障礙，他總是迎合別人的趨向，而自己是不肯發端的。他給人的恩惠，可認爲就是那種爲某一個人而安排的舒服與方便—— 好像一把安樂椅子或一盆爐火一樣，在驅除寒冷和疲勞上盡其職責，雖則大自然也就準備好休息和體溫兩種辦法，不要它們也行的。

(10) The Law of the Jungle

【原　文】

People in our culture[1] who like to think of themselves as tough-minded[2] and realistic, including influential political leaders and businessmen as well as go-getters[3] and hustlers[4] of smaller caliber[5], tend to take it for granted[6] that human nature is "selfish" and that

life is a struggle in which only the fittest may survive. According to the philosophy[7], the basic law by which man must live[8], in spite of[9] his surface veneer[10] of civilization, is the law of the jungle[11]. The "fittest" are those who can bring to the struggle superior force, superior cunning, and superior ruthlessness.

The wide currency[13] of this philosophy of the "survival of the fittest" enables people who act ruthlessly and selfishly, whether in personal rivalries, business competition, or international relations, to allay[14] their consciences by telling themselves that they are only obeying a "law of nature". But a disinterested[15] observer is entitled to[16] ask whether the ruthlessness of the tiger, the cunning of the ape, and obedience to the "law of the jungle" are actually evidences of *human* fitness to survive. (S. I. Hayakawa)

【譯　　文】

在現代文化中，喜歡把自己看作是意志堅強而現實的人們，包括那些有勢力的政治領袖和商界魁睦，以及才幹較差的野心家和活動家在內，都想要把人性的自私，與夫人生是一場只有適者才能生存的奮鬪，視爲當然。由於這種人生觀，人類爲要生存而必須倚重的基本原則，就是弱肉強食，縱令他具有文明的外表。所謂適者就是那些能够以過人的力量，過人的狡猾和過人的殘忍來奮鬪的人。

由於這種「適者生存」的人生觀廣泛地流行着的緣故，不問是個人方面的敵對，事業上的競爭，或是國際間的關係，都要殘忍而自私地來加以處理的人們，只消對自己說這樣做只是服從大自然的法則而已，便可獲得良心上的安慰。但是一個公正無私的觀察者，有資格來問：老虎的殘忍，猿猴的狡猾，以及服從弱肉強食的法則，是不是人類適者生存的實際證據呢？

【注　　釋】

(1) culture：文化 (state of intellectual development among a people)。但常與 civilization (文明) 混用。文明爲人類社會開發的狀態 (與野蠻對稱)，而文化則爲人類社會由野蠻進化爲文明，其努力所得的成績，表現於各方面的爲科學、藝術、宗教、道德、法律、風俗、習慣等，其綜合體則謂之文化。(2) tough-minded：意志強堅的。(3) go-getter：充滿活力而有進取心的人 (aggresive

person who is full of vitality)。(4) hustler: 非常活躍而機敏的人 (very active, prompt, quick-moving person). (5) caliber: 才幹，能力。(6) take it for granted: 句中的 it 爲下面 that 子句的代詞。這成語的意思爲「把它視爲當然」。(7) philosophy: 人生觀。(8) live by: 賴以爲生。例如 He lives by teaching. (他以教書爲生。) (9) in spite of: 不顧。(10) veneer: 虛飾，外表上的裝飾。(11) the law of the jungle: 弱肉強食。(12) ruthlessness: 殘忍。(13) currency: 流通，流佈。例如 The rumor gained currency. (謠言流佈。) (14) enables people to allay: 使人能够解憂。(15) disinterested: 公正無私的。(16) is entitled to: 有資格去做。

(11) Some well-informed People

【原　　文】

We sometimes fall in with[1] persons who have seen much of the world[2], and of the man[3] who, in their day[4], have played a conspicuous part in it[5], but who generalize[6] nothing, and have no observation[7], in the true sense of the word[8]. They abound in[9] information in detail[10], curious and entertaining, about men and things; and, having lived[11] under the influence of no very clear or settled principles[12], religious or political, they speak of every one and everything, only as so many[13] phenomena, which are complete in themselves, and lead to nothing, not discussing any truth, or instructing the hearer, but simply talking[14]. No one would say that these persons, well informed as they are, had attained to any great culture or intellect or to philosophy. (Cardinal Newman)

【譯　　文】

我們有時邂逅一些熟悉世故的人，和一些曾經見過許多在其全盛時代，叱咤風雲，世界安危所繫的有名人物的人，但是他們卻不能歸納出一點什麼來，也並無真正的觀察力。我所遇見的那些人，對於人物和掌故，富有離奇有趣而又極爲詳盡的見聞。他們因爲在宗教上和政治上，都無很明確的信念，而渾渾噩噩地度日，所以他們談到一切的人物和一切的事情時，只是當作行雲流水，映入他們眼簾的一些現

象，把它說完即了，並未留有什麼後果，也未討論到任何眞理，對聽他說的人自然無所啓發，只不過是一種閑談而已。這樣的人雖富有見聞，誰也不會認爲他們在任何偉大的文化，知識，或哲理上有什麼造詣的。

【注　　釋】

(1) fall in with: 邂逅，偶然遇到。(2) see (or know) the world: 閱歷深的，世故深的 (acquire or have experience)。see much of，看得多，世面見得多。(3) of the men: 接前面的 have seen much 來解。(4) in one's day: 在其全盛時代 (in one's time of prosperity)。(5) played a part in it (i.e. the world): 與……有關。例如 Mencius's mother played a great part in his life and in his ultimate success. (孟母對孟子的一生和他的成就有很大的關係。) (6) generalize: 歸納，做出結論 (infer)。(7) observation: 觀察力。(8) in the true sense of the word. (那字的)眞義。(9) abound in: 豐富。(10) in detail: 詳細地。修飾前面的 information (見聞知識) 的，與後面的 curious 和 entertaining 同爲 information 的修飾語。(11) having lived: =as they have lived. (12) under the influence of no very clear or settled principles: =not influenced by very clear or settled principles. Cf. He uttered no word.=He didn't utter a word. (13) so many: 同數的。例如 He looks upon his children as so many encumbrances. (他把他的孩子們看做許多累贅。) (14) not discussing any truth, ...but simply talking. 注意句中 not...but 在文法上的相連關係。

(12) The English Humour

【原　　文】

Humour has been well[1] defined as "thinking in fun[2] while feeling[3] in earnest[4]". The English do not approach[5] life intellectually; they do not demand that it shall conform to[6] some rigid mental plan; they are not convinced[7] that the universe can be penetrated[8] by thought; they are willing to go to work, either in politics or art, without a theory to sustain them[9]; and when they are more practical than other races, it is not[10]—as those races frequently conclude—be-

cause they are coldly clear-sighted and unimaginative, but because they do not busy themselves[11] asking reason[12] to find a key when instinct has already shown them that the door is wide open. (J. B. Priestley)

【譯　　文】

幽默被人很巧妙地詮釋說：「一面認眞地感覺一面滑稽地思考」。英國人是不肯聰明地去接觸人生的。他們並不要求人生應與某種堅苦卓絕的，出自智力的計畫一致。他們並不相信這個宇宙是可以用思想去突破的。即令沒有支持他們自己的一種理論，他們也願望去着手於政治上的或藝術上的工作。當他們比別的民族更要實際的時候（例如別的民族慣愛輕易下結論，所以不實際），那並不是因爲他們只有冷靜的明察力，却缺乏想像力，而是因爲當直覺已經明示給他們看那門是打開着的時候，他們仍不肯忙着去讓理性找出一把鑰匙來。

【注　　釋】

(1) well: 巧妙地 (skillfully)。(2) in fun: 開玩笑的。(3) while feeling: =while one feels. (4) in earnest: 認眞的。(5) approach: 接近(come or go near or nearer to)。(6) it shall conform to: 句中的 it=life, 而 shall 是表主句中主語 (they) 的意志。例如 I am determined she shall have no cause to complain. (Sheridan) (我決心不要讓她有何抱怨。) conform to: 使順應，使一致，使相似。(7) they are not convinced: 句中的 are convinced 在意義上幾乎和 believe 相同。我們如將 are convinced 與一個他動詞等量齊觀的話，那末，其後的 that 子句，就可看做動詞的賓語了。(8) penetrate: 洞察，了解 (fathom, comprehend)。I could not penetrate the mystery. (我無法了解這種神秘。) (9) sustain them: 支持他們自已。(10) it is not: 句中的 it 是指其前面的 they are more practical than other races. (11) busy oneself (in) doing: 使自已忙於去做。(12) reason: 在此不是「理由」，而是「理知」，「理性」(intellectual faculty)。

(13) The Trouble with Translation

【原　　文】

No one these days would, I suppose, maintain[1] that it is a bad thing to have so many translations of great books cheaply available[2].

But like most blessings, plentiful translations can be curses in disguise[3]

My feeling is that students, and readers generally[4], should as soon forgo the airplane and television as neglect the translations of Oriental and European literature[5] which are becoming so abundantly and cheaply available. But I also think that they should be constantly aware (and that publishers, editors, and teachers should constantly remind them) that what they are reading is someone's English version of a work[6] which, in its original language, had unique and untranslatable qualities[7]. Further, they should remember that the more the original work depended for its effect upon those qualities which make literature a fine art[8], the less is a translation able to provide equivalent effects[9] Baudelaire's[10] translations of Poe may be "better" poems than those Poe[11] wrote; but those who read them have read Baudelaire's version of Poe; not Poe. (John A. Kouwenhover)

【譯　文】

我想現今沒有一個人要堅持說，許多偉大的書的譯本，數量繁多，售價低廉，是一件壞事。但是豐富的譯本，也和大多數的幸福一樣，到頭來會變成不幸的。

我的感想是學生們和一般的讀書人，都趨之若鶩，誰也不肯放棄數量如此繁多，價錢如此便宜的東洋文學和歐陸文學的譯本，正如他們不肯放棄現代文明之賜的飛機與電視一樣。但是我又覺得他們應經常留意（出版家，編輯者，及教師們也應經常提醒他們），他們所讀着的譯本，只是什麽人英譯出來的一部作品，在它原來的語文中，實具有不能翻譯的獨自的特質。此外還有一點，他們應該記住：要使原作成爲文學上優美的藝術而產生效果，就得依靠那些特質，依靠的程度愈深，譯本所能給與的同等的效果愈少。波德萊爾所譯的亞倫坡的詩，也許比亞倫坡自己所寫的更好；但讀那些詩的人只是讀了波德萊爾所譯的亞倫坡；而不是真正的亞倫坡。

【注　釋】

(1) maintain：主張，堅持。(2) cheaply available：廉價買到。(3) curses in disguise：化裝的禍根。前面說的 blessings 爲 curse 的 antonym（反義字）。(4) readers generally：一般的讀書人。(5) should as soon forgo the

airplane...literature：如果把東洋文學和歐洲大陸文學的翻譯本棄置不顧，就好像放棄飛機不坐，電視不看似的。(6) someone's English version of a work：什麼人英譯出來的一部作品。(7) which, in its original language, had unique and untranslatable qualities：在它原來的語文中，具有不能翻譯的獨自的特質。(8) the more the original work...a fine art：愈是原作由於使文學成爲一種優美的藝術，要靠那些特質才能產生效果。這句話的結構略異尋常，一般是說 depend upon A for B (由A而獲得B)，現因A的修飾語句太長，故變更順序而說成 depend for B upon A 了。(9) a translation able to provide equivalent effects：能產生同等效果的翻譯。(10) Charles Baudelaire：法國詩人，代表作有「惡之花」詩集，以譯介 Poe 的作品馳名於世，公認譯得比原作更好。(11) Edgar Allen Poe：美國詩人兼短篇小說家。

(14) Too Distinguished to be a Personality

【原　　文】

When the porter's wife (she used to answer the house-bell) announced "A gentleman—with a lady, sir," I had as I often had in those days, for the wish was father to the thought(1), an immediate vision of sitters(2). Sitters my visitors in this case proved to be; but not in the sense I should have preferred. However, there was nothing at first to indicate that they might not have come(4) for a portrait...... It(5) was a truth of which I had for some time been conscious that a figure with a good deal of frontage(6) was, as one might say, almost never a public institution(7). A glance at the lady helped to remind me of this paradoxical law(8): She also looked too distinguished to be a "personality"(9). Moreover one would scarcely come across two variations(10) together. (Henry James)

【譯　　文】

當守門人的妻子(她一向是在應門的)來通報說：『先生，有一位紳士帶了一位女客來了。』因爲願望是思想的根源，正如我在當時所常有的情形一樣，現在一聽說有客人來，心裏馬上就想到是找我畫像的人來了。這次來找我的人，果眞是爲畫像而來的，不過却不是我所指望的對象。雖然如此，起初並沒有一點什麼跡象顯示他

們可能不是為畫像而來的。……從不久以前起，我就留意到了一個事實，那就是一個風度翩翩的人物，我們不妨說，他差不多從來不會是一個社會上的名人。那個女客，一眼看去，就使我想起這種逆說的定則：她看去也是太傑出而不成其為一個名人呢。而且我們極少會同時遇到兩個例外的。

【注　釋】

(1) for the wish was father to the thought：此為根據諺語 The wish is father to the thought. 說的。意為願望是思想的根源。心有所欲，便有所思。在本文的場合，是正在期待要畫像的人來，所以一聽說有客，心裏就想到是那樣的人來了。(2) sitters：被畫像的人要坐着不動，故云。這字前說的 vision，不是指眼前所見到的，而是指當時心中所想像的。(3) not in the sense I should have preferred：句中的 not in the sense，意為「不是那種意味的」，後半限定語中的 should，不可解釋為「應該」，而是表示一種可能發生而實際並未發生的情形。如 I should have gone if you had asked me.（如果你要我去，我就去了。）(4) might not have come：句中 might 的用法，是表示「推測」的，這句意思是「恐怕不是為……而來」。此句因前有 nothing 一字，致構成雙重否定，若加以抵消的話，則意為「一開頭就知道他們是為着求畫像而來的呀。(5) It：這個代名詞是代表 that a figure 等一個子句的。(6) a figure with a good deal of frontage：風度翩翩的人物。一表人才。儀表漂亮的人。(7) public institution：原意為「公共機關」，在此為「世間知名之士」，「名士」。institution 一字在口語中有 familiar object（有名的事物；熟悉的人物）的意思，例如 He was one of the institutions of the place.（他是當地聞人之一。）(8) this paradoxical law：這個逆說的定則，意指風度翩翩的人反而不成其為名士的那種現象。(9) too distinguished to be a "personality"：太傑出而不能成為名士。personality = personage 人物，名人。distinguished personage 有名望的人物，名人。(10) two variations：指對上述法則的例外的人物。來客有兩人，那女客即令是例外的存在，那紳士不可能也是，不至兩個例外同時出現。

(15) Schadenfreude

【原　文】

If we contrast the resources of the United States and the resources of the Viet Cong[1], whatever we may think of the political morality

of the activities of the Viet Cong, it does not seem to the outsider that the Viet Cong are inferior to the Americans in courage, resolution[2], or belief in their cause[3]. For this reason, the news that the Americans had dropped napalm[4] on their own troops was received with very mixed feelings[5] in Europe. There were, of course, professional and permanent anti-Americans[6] who had all the joys of Schadenfreude[7] at the news. For them, there is no folly and no crime of which the Americans are not intrinsically capable, and there is no folly and no crime which the enemies of the Americans are not justified in committing[8]. But many people who do not share these views[9] in the least[10] could not help reflecting that a fate[11] had befallen unfortunate young American soldiers that has frequently befallen even[12] more unfortunate Vietnamese children. (Sir Denis Brogan)

【譯　　文】

加果把美國的資源和越共的資源比較一下，無論我們對越共的所作所爲在政治上的道德怎樣想法，由局外人來看是不會認爲越共在勇敢，決心，和忠於大義的信念上，有遜於美軍的。由於這個原因，在歐洲聽到美軍把燒夷彈誤投到他們自己的軍隊上的消息時，不免感到悲喜交集。當然，有些職業的，堅決永恆的反美主義者，聽到這消息便要幸災樂禍，感到高興。他們認爲美軍在本質上是任何愚行，任何罪惡，都可以幹得出來的，所以美軍的敵人要幹些愚行和罪惡，也是應該的。但即令許多決不同意這種見解的人，聽到這消息時，也不得不有下面這樣的想法：不幸的年輕美國兵曾經遭遇的悲慘的死，在更加不幸的越南兒童身上，到現在爲止所遭遇到的同樣的慘死，也不知有多少次了。

【注　　釋】

(1) Viet Cong: 越共。(2) resolution: 決心 (firmness of purpose)。(3) belief in their cause: 對於(民族解放的)大義的信念。普通說 one's cause 爲人們所拚命支持的主義、主張、信仰、運動等。(4) napalm: 燃燒彈。火焰噴射器等所用的膠狀汽油。(5) mixed feelings: 複雜的感情。(6) professional and permanent anti-Americans: 職業的持久的反美主義者。(7) Schadenfreude (G.): 幸災樂禍 (enjoyment obtained from the mishaps of others)。這是

說對別人的不幸感到痛快。這是一個德文的字，英文無相當的字可以用的，故借用。(Schade＝damage＋freude＝joy.) (8) there is no folly and no crime which the enemies of the Americans are not justified in committing: 句中兩重否定變成肯定，故可改寫為肯定句 The enemies of the Americens are justified in committing any folly and any crime. 即所謂「以牙還牙」的理論。(9) share these views: 同意。(10) not...in the least: ＝not... at all 注意這個 in the least 與 at least 不同，不可混淆。(11) a fate: 悲慘的運命，即死。(12) even: ＝still

(16) Aloneness is Worse than Failure

【原 文】

What is feared as failure in American society is, above all, aloneness. And aloneness is terrifying because it means that there is no one, no group, no approved cause to submit to. Even success often becomes impossible to bear when it is not socially approved or even known. This is perhaps why successful criminals often feel the need to confess, that is, to submit to the community's(1) judgment, represented in the person to whom the confession is made. They will confess even under circumstances where this will probably, if not certainly, endanger their previous success: proof, I think, that aloneness is more intolerable than mere failure. For mere failure, provided(2) it is found in company(3), can rather easily be borne; many ideologies have the function of making it possible for people to digest(4) the worst miseries and even death. Under the sway(5) of the ideology, they do not feel the impact(6) of their failure; they are in the grip of an authority, even if it lets them down(7). On the other hand(8), one who is alone lacks this solace which can make even failure comfortable. (David Riesman)

【譯 文】

在美國社會中作為失敗而為人們所恐怖的，莫過於孤獨了。而孤獨之所以可

怕，就因爲那意味着沒有一個可服從的人，沒有一個可服從的團體，也沒有一個可服從的公認的大義。即令獲得成功，若不爲社會所認可，或甚至不爲世人所知道時，就是成功也常要變得使人不能忍受的。這也許就是成功的罪犯，時常覺得有必要去自首的原因，那就是，去服從那個聽取自首的人所代表的公衆的裁判。即令在如果不是一定的話，至少是可能危害他們前此的成功那種情形之下，他們仍然要去自首的。變成孤獨比單純的失敗，更要難於忍受，我想這就足以證明了。因爲單純的失敗，即令是與人共同遭受的，毋寧是能够容易忍受的。許多意識形態的作用，可使人能够忍受極大的不幸，甚至是死亡。人們在意識形態掩護之下，便不會感到自己失敗的衝擊。意識形態以一種權威的力量，掌握住他們，雖則在緊要關頭也不會要把他們拋棄。在另一方面，孤獨的人便缺乏那種甚至可以使失敗也感到舒服的安慰。

【注　　釋】

(1) the community: 公衆 (the public)。(2) provided: 如果 (if)，即令 (even if)。(3) in company: 與人共同地。(4) digest: 忍受 (bear with patience; endure)。(5) sway: 控制。(6) impact: 衝擊。(7) let them down: 把他們拋棄 (fail them at need)。(8) on the other hand: 在另一方面。

(17) Being One's True Self

【原　　文】

In literature, as in life, one of the fundamentals is to find, and be, one's true self. One's true self may indeed[1] be unpleasant; but a false self, sooner or later, becomes disgusting—just as a nice plain woman[2], painted to the eyebrows, can become horrid[3]. In writing, in the long run[4], pretense does not work. As the police put it[5], anything you say may be used as evidence against you. If handwriting reveals character, writing reveals it still more. You cannot fool your judges all the time[6].

Most style is not honest enough. Easy to say, but hard to practice. A writer may take to[7] long words, as young men to beards—to[8] impress. But long words like long beards, are often the badge of

charlatans(9). Or a writer may cultivate the obscure(10), to seem profound. But even carefully muddied puddles(11) are soon fathomed. Or he may cultivate eccentricity, to seem original. But really original people do not have to think(12) about being original—they can no more help it than(13) they can help(14) breathing. (Frank Laurence Lucas)

【譯　　文】

在文學中，也和在人生中一樣，基本原理之一就是發現自我，乃至成爲眞正的自我。眞正的自我誠然是令人不愉快的，但一個虛僞的自己遲早是會變得令人討厭的——正好像一個醜陋的女人，塗脂抹粉，一直塗到眉毛以上去，也會變得可怕的一樣。在寫作中假裝畢竟也是行不通的。正如警察所說的，你說的任何一句話，都可能要成爲對你不利的證據。如果筆跡顯示性格，寫作顯示的更多。你不能始終愚弄所有的評判人呀。

大多數的文體是不夠誠實的。說時容易做時難。一個作家也許好用長字，正如年輕人好蓄鬍鬚一樣，目的無非是想使人留下深刻的印象。但是長字，有如長鬚，常成爲騙子的標幟。凡是一個作家想要顯得高深，可能採用晦澀難解的文字。但是無論怎樣細心弄得混濁的水，也很快就可測出其深度的。或是有人想要顯得獨創，可能寫出奇奇怪怪的文章。但是眞正有獨創力的人們無用乎去想怎樣來獨創，他們就像不得不呼吸一樣，也不得不發揮出那種獨創力來。

【注　　釋】

(1) indeed：與後面的 but 呼應。(2) a nice plain woman：不說 ugly woman，而說 plain woman 或 homely woman，比較含蓄，是一種委婉的說法 (Euphemism)，其實這個 plain＝ugly. 在男人方面說 plain man，意義就不同了，那是指率直的人，而所謂 plain people 便是指一般的人。形容詞對男女意義有別，須加注意。他例如 an honest man 誠實的人；an honest woman 貞潔的女人 (a chaste woman)，成語有 make an honest woman of her，先姦後娶，使成正式妻子。nice 用在形容詞前爲副詞，意爲「十分地」，「怎樣也是」，如 It was nice cold weather. (天氣很冷。) (3) painted to the eyebrows, can become horrid：塗到眉毛以上，意即濃粧艷抹。句中的 can 非指「能力」，而指「可能性」。(4) in the long run：終久，畢竟。(5) put it：這個 put 有「表明」和「述說」的意思，如 To put it briefly，(簡單地說。) Let me put it

in another way: (換一個方式來說吧。) (6) all the time: 一直,始終。(7) take to: 喜歡,耽於。(8) to: 卽 in order to. (9) badge of charlatans: 騙子的標幟。charlatan 原爲法文,有「走江湖者」,「騙子」,「冒充內行者」的意思。(10) the obscure: 形容詞前加定冠詞卽指名詞,如 the beautiful=beauty; the poor=poor people. (11) muddied puddles: 泥水潦。(12) do not have to think: 意爲 need not think. (13) no more...than: 與……同樣不。(14) help: 避免 (avoid)。

(18) Happiness Consists in Love

【原 文】

Who can say[1] in what remoteness of time, in what difference of earthly shape, love first come to us as a stranger in the jungle? We, in our human family[2], know him[3] through dependence[4] in childhood, through possession[5] in youth, through sorrow and loss in their season[6]. In childhood we are happy to receive; it is the first opening of love. In youth we take and give, dedicate and possess—rapture and anguish are mingled, until parenthood brings a dedication[7] that, to be happy, must ask for no return[8]. All these are new horizons of content[9], which the lust of holding, the enemy of love[10], slowly contaminates. Loss, sorrow and separation come, sickness and death; possession, that tormented us, is nothing in our hands; it vanishes. Love's elusive[11] enchantment, his ubiquitous[12] presence, again become apparent; and in age we may reach a haven[13] that asking for nothing knows how to enjoy.[14] (Freya Stark)

【譯 文】

愛這東西,不管是在多麼遠古的時代,不管是採取怎樣現世的形態出現,總好像在森林中遇到的陌生人一樣,是一個誰也不能了解的啞謎。屬於人類的我們,在孩童時代,由於依賴愛自己的人而認識愛;在靑年時代,由於佔有所愛的人而認識愛,於是時候一到,由於失去了所愛的人感到悲傷而認識愛。在孩童時代我們很高興來接受;這是愛的最早的端倪。在靑年時代我們有取有予,有獻身有佔有——悲

喜交集，直到做了父母時，對兒女那種獻身的愛，心甘情願，不望報答。這一切都是令人滿足的愛的新境界，可惜不免要爲與愛爲敵的所有慾，慢慢地加以污損。失去了愛的痛苦，離別的悲哀，隨即到來，還有疾病和死亡。以前那種使我們受苦的佔有，已不在我們掌握之中，而早煙消雲散了。愛的難於捉摸的魅力，它那不即不離的靈性，再度變得明顯起來，及來到老年，我們就可能達到一個由於不求報答，故能體味到那種平靜無波的愛的佳境。

【注 釋】

(1) say：（尤其是在否定和疑問句中）推測；評定；提出意見。(2) We, in our human family：等於說 We human beings，人類。(3) know him：等於前面說的 love first comes to us 一樣，將 he 作爲 love 的代名詞。這個 know，不是指狀態，而是指「相知」。(4) dependence：依賴（父母）。(5) possession：佔有(愛人)。(6) through sorrow and loss in their season：在人生的各個時期由於失去愛而感到悲傷。in their season 表示包括所有的時期，their 指 sorrow 與 loss 的，故譯爲「時候一到」。(7) until parenthood brings a dedication：直到做了父母，就獻身地去愛兒女，天下父母心，莫不皆然。(8) must ask for no return：決不望報。(9) new horizons of content：令人滿足的愛的新境界。(10) the lust of holding, the enemy of love：所有慾，也就是愛的大敵。(11) elusive：不可捉摸的，以爲捉到了的東西又跑掉了，意指倏忽無常。(12) ubiquitous：原意爲無所不在的，現譯爲不即不離的。以上兩句並非同格的說法，由動詞的複數便知。(13) haven：平靜安樂的境界。(14) that asking for nothing krows hor to enjoy：由於我們不求報答故能體味到那種……。

(19) The Cosy Fire of Affection

【原 文】

You've been in love, of course![1] If not you've got it to come. Love is like the measles; we all have to go through it Also like the measles, we take it only once. One never need be afraid of catching it a second time. The man who has had it can go into the

most dangerous places[2], and play the most fool-hardy tricks[3] with perfect safety. He can, to see the last of a friend[4], venture into the very jaws of the marriage ceremony itself[5]. He can keep his head through the whirl of a ravishing waltz[6], and rest afterwards in a dark conservatory[7], catching nothing more lasting than a cold.

No, we never sicken with love twice. Cupid[9] spends no second arrow on the same heart. Love's handmaids[10] are our life-long friends. Respect, and Admiration, and Affection, our doors may always be left open for, but their great celestial master[11], in his royal progress, pays but one visit[12], and departs. Meteor-like, it blazes for a moment[13], and lights with its glory the whole world beneath. Happy those who[14], hastening down again e'er it dies out[15], can kindle their earthly altars at its flame. Love is too pure a light to burn[16] long among the noisome gases that we breathe, but before it is choked out we may use it as a torch to ignite the cosy fire[18] of affection. (Jerome K. Jerome)

【譯　　文】

當然，你們都有過戀愛的經驗！如果還沒有的話，也就必然會要來的。戀愛好像痳疹一樣，是每個人都要經歷的。也好像痳疹一樣，我們一生中只能罹上一次。誰也不用擔心會再度罹上它的。凡是已經有過那種經歷的人，可以深入最危險的地帶，玩弄最魯莽的勾當，逢場作戲，保證安全。他可以向獨身生活告別，而大膽地走進結婚典禮的虎口。他可以滿不在乎地從結婚晚會的狂歡圓舞的漩渦中安頓下來，然後進入幽暗的溫室裏去，從此相安無事，即令有平地波瀾，也不過是像料纏的傷風一樣的小小毛病而已。

所以我們是不會再度罹上戀愛病的。愛神不會在同一顆心上射出第二支箭。愛的侍女們成爲我們畢生的伴侶。尊敬，讚美，鍾情，我們的心扉經常爲她們開着，可是她們那偉大的天上的主子，在他的行幸中，只降臨一次就離去了。像流星一般，它只燃燒一會兒，用它的榮光，照明下界整個的世界。趁着那光還未消失，再急忙地下降，能用它的火焰把他們地上的祭壇點燃的人們就有福了。愛是一種太純潔的光，不能在我們呼吸的具有惡臭的氣體中燃燒得太久，但是在它窒息之前，我們也許可用它作爲火把，以點燃舒適的爐火，鍾情的所在。

【注 釋】

(1) You've been in love, of course!: 作者認爲男女之間總不免有相戀的事,但只有初戀才是眞誠的,所以他把它比做每個人都要經歷一次痲疹。確認了這種嚴肅的事實之後,他便達到了一個結論:正是王戎說的「情之所鍾正在吾輩」。鍾情才是最要緊的,維繫男女的關係,家庭的存在,乃至快樂的婚後生活,或是避免離婚的悲劇,一切都有賴於此。(2) the most dangerous places: 指男女間最容易出問題的情形。(3) play the most fool-hardy tricks: 所謂 play a trick, 意爲開玩笑或詐騙, trick 是詭計或欺詐手段。fool-hardy 爲有勇無謀的,魯莽的。故全句譯成玩弄魯莽的勾當。(4) see the last of a friend: 這裏說的 a friend, 是把 single-blessedness (獨身生活) 人格化了。所謂和那朋友見最後一面就是和牠告別的意思。(5) can venture into the very jaws of the marriage ceremony itself: 句中動詞的 venture, 形容詞的 very, 乃至反身代名詞的 itself、都是爲加強語氣而用的, 全部總括在助動詞的 can 之下。複數形的 jaws 有「狹谷」的意思, 在此乃比喻的用法。(6) can keep his head through the whirl of a ravishing waltz: 句中 keep his head 有 keep calm (沉着, 滿不在乎) 之意。the whirl of a ravishing waltz, 指結婚晚會的熱狂歡舞的場面。(7) conservatory: 温室, 暖房(不可譯作音樂學校), 在此指家庭。因爲人們說結婚是愛情的坟墓, 現由結婚典禮來表示愛情的結束, 晚會的狂歡敲響了葬送愛情的喪鐘 (funeral bell), 而當事人在那個熱鬧的場面過後, 能够安靜下來(rest)的地方, 便是可避風雨侵凌而由人工做出來的温室 (家庭) 了。(8) catching nothing more lasting than a cold: 注意這兒說的 catching, 與前面第五句說的 One never need be afraid of catching it a second time. 中的 catching 遙相呼應, 而有對照的作用。全句意爲延續的東西除傷風外就不會得到別的什麼了。說結婚生活中即使有點平地波瀾也不會大過傷風那樣的小毛病。注意在 conservatory 前用了 dark 一個形容詞, 旣係幽暗, 自然難免傷風, 而且這個 cold 還有對 love 已經冷却了的含義。(9) Cupid: 羅馬神話中的愛神, 用箭射在男女的心上, 他們就相愛起來。(10) Love's handmaids: 指下面說的 Respect, Admiration, Affection. (11) their great celestial master: 指 Love. (12) pays but one visit: 只降臨一次, 與上段說的 Also like the measles, we take it only once. 遙相呼應。(13) it blazes for a moment: 句中的 it 指 Love. 上句因有 master 的字樣, 故臨時改用 his 爲代名詞。(14) Happy those who:

即 Happy are those who 的省略說法。這使人不免要聯想到新約聖經的 St. Matthew V 中的 "The Sermon on the Mount" 如 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven 等句法。(15) hastening down again e'er it dies out: 句中的 again 不是指 hastening down 的反復，而是指往返運動中返的意思，但不必譯出，這原是說 Love 離開人間回到天上去，有時再來到人間。e'er 應寫作 ere=before，這當然是作者的筆誤(erroneous use)。全句意爲趁着人們熱戀的純情還沒有完全消失，再匆匆忙忙地從天上降下，用它的火焰點燃他們地上的祭壇上的火，能做到這點的人們便有福了。(16) too pure...to burn: 太純潔而不能燃燒。(17) it is choked out: 窒息死去（指 love)。(18) the cosy fire: 指家庭中的 hearth (火爐)而言。hearth 在英國因一年到頭生火故爲家庭的象徵。最後說的 of affection 意指家庭有賴愛情的支持，故 the cosy fire 即爲運情的所在。

(20) Irrational Man

【原　文】

An observer from another planet might well be struck by[1] the disparity[2] between the enormous power which our age has concentrated in its external life and the inner poverty which our art seeks to expose to view. This is, after all, the age that has discovered and harnessed[3] atomic energy, and that will, in a few years (perhaps in a few months), have atomic-powered planes which can fly through outer space and not need to return to mother earth for weeks. What cannot man do[4]? But if an observer from Mars were to turn his attention from these external appurtenances[5] of power to the shape of man as revealed in our novels, plays, painting, and sculpture, he would find there a creature full of holes and gaps, faceless, riddled with doubts and negations[6].

This violent contrast between power and impoverishment[7] is frightening, for it represents a dangerous lagging of man behind his own works[8]; and in this lag lies the terror[9] of the atomic bomb which hangs over us like impending night. Here surely the ordinary

man begins to catch a fleeting glimpse of that Nothingness[10] which both artist and philosopher have begun in our time to take seriously. (William Barrett)

【譯 文】

現代的人在其外面的生活上集中巨大的力量，而現代藝術却企圖把那內面的貧窮暴露出來讓人們看，一個從別的星球來的觀察者，看到這種懸殊的不同，要大吃一驚也是當然的。畢竟，現代是發現了原子能又加以利用的時代，在幾年內，甚至幾個月內，就會有原子動力的飛機，能够飛往外太空，好幾個禮拜都無須回返地球。人類還有什麼做不到的事呢？但是如果一個從火星來的觀察者，把他的目光從這些人力發揮盡致的外表的工具，轉移到現代小說，戲劇，繪畫，雕刻，所顯示的人的形狀，他就會發覺那是爲疑問和否定，弄得滿目瘡痍，面目全非的一個生物。

這種外表的威力和內在的脆弱，二者對照的激烈令人可怕，因爲它表示人類落在他自己造出的強大工具的後面，已達到危險的程度。像迫近的黑夜一般懸在我們頭上的原子彈的恐怖，就因爲這種落後而將來臨。那是一定的，原子戰爭的結果，一切歸於毀滅。藝術家和哲學家早已在我們這個時代開始時，就認眞地在考慮這「無」的世界，而一般的人也觸目驚心，開始注意到這個問題了。

【注 釋】

(1) might well be struck by: 要爲……而感到大爲吃驚也是應該的。(2) disparity: 不同，懸殊。(3) harnessed: 利用。(4) What cannot man do?: 人類還有什麼不能做的？意即人類什麼都能做(修辭疑問)，是以否定加強肯定的。(5) appurtenances: Random House Dictionary 上解釋說，something subordinate to another, more important thing, 更加重要的附屬物，在此指原子彈及太空船一類的人力所造成的外表的工具。(6) a creature full of holes and gaps, faceless, riddled with doubts and negations: 由於懷疑和否定使之傷痕纍纍，面目全非的生物。所謂 faceless 不是沒有面孔，而是面目不分明(unidentifiable)，不能分辨是誰。這兒所描寫的生物(人類)是指現代精神分裂的人，懷疑的人，虛無的人等形象化的東西。(7) power and impoverishment: 外表的威力和內在的脆弱。(8) it represents a dangerous lagging of man behind his own works: 這表示人類落在他自己的製作品的後面，達到危險的程度。lagging behind 的反意語爲 catching up with. (9) in this lag lies the

terror：恐怖就在這落後之中。這是一種倒裝句法，意為因為這種落後而發生那種恐怖。(10) catch a fleeting glimpse of that Nothingness：一切皆空原是東方的思想，在西洋到了本世紀才有人提倡存在主義，於是也有了虛無思想，代表的有法國的卡繆著的「西奇斐的神話」(Albert Camus: Le Mythe de Sisyphe, 1942)，德國卡甫卡著的「奇妙之身」(Franz Kafka: Die Verwandlung, 1916) 等。Nothingness 指一切毀滅，是原子彈炸後的狀態。catch a fleeting glimpse of，一瞬瞥見。指普通人也要驟然想到一切歸於毀滅後的虛無狀態。

習　　題

試將下列英文譯成中文：

(1) You are a very strange creature by way of a friend!—always wanting me to play and sing before anybody and everybody! If my vanity had taken a musical turn, you would have been invaluable; but as it is, I would really rather not sit down before those who must be in the habit of hearing the very best performers.

(2) Twenty years had passed since then. He kept up a busy correspondence with various great ladies and his letters were amusing and chatty. He never lost his love for titled persons and paid no attention to the announcement in the Times of their comings and goings. He perused the column which records births, deaths, and marriages, and he was always ready with his letter of congratulation or condolence. (Maugham)

(3) The best of the communications an author has to make is to his own generation, and he is wise to let the generation that succeeds his choose its own exponents. They will do it whether he lets them or not. His language will be Greek to them. (Maugham)

(4) Often enough—and often justifiably—your ordinary lover of Nature has been accused of sentimentality. He prattles, so his condemners say, of the sweet twitter of birds and of the flowers that bloom in the

spring. He disregards the seamy side of things and sees the world in greeting-card terms. (Joseph Wood Krutch)

(5) If to feel a false emotion based upon a deliberately incomplete view of the facts is to be guilty of sentimentalism, then the view that Nature is consistently violent and cruel is as sentimental as its opposite. She is no more characteristically red in tooth and claw than she is characteristically a kind mother. (Joseph Wood Krutch)

(6) Probably in nothing have man's inventive powers been so active as in his endeavour to triumph over the terrors of darkness. Light is among the first needs man has supplied for himself in his struggle against it. Yet darkness has its gracious gifts. As it descends upon the world nature prepares itself for rest and sleep, and in the silence men recover strength of mind and body for the duties and burdens of the new day.

(7) Maybe the gradual actualization of this solidarity was the result of scientific and hence technological progress which caused distances to shrink and required ever expanding markets. But it is a preconceived and entirely unwarranted idea to believe this technological unification to have been a primary cause.

(8) A stout old lady was walking with her basket down the middle of a street in Petrograd to the great confusion of the traffic and with no small peril to herself. It was pointed out to her that the pavement was the place for foot-passengers, but she replied: "I'm going to walk where I like. We've got liberty now." It did not occur to the dear old lady that if liberty entitled the foot-passenger to walk down the middle of the road it also entitled the cab-driver to drive on the the pavement, and that the end of such liberty would be universal chaos.

(9) Foolishly arrogant as I was, I used to judge the worth of a person by his intellectual power and attainment. I could see no good where there was no logic, no charm where there was no learning. Now

I think that one has to distinguish between two forms of intelligence, that of the brain, and that of the heart, and I have come to regard the second as by far the more important.

(10) The educated man is presumed to know what is wrong in the world, and what should be done to rectify it. If his education has amounted to anything, it should have increased his ability to think clearly and scientifically, and thus to know how to get at the cause and effect of political, social, economic, industrial evils. No man has right to consider education as merely a personal benefit enabling him to be more prosperous and happy in the world. He must look upon it as imposing upon him a responsibility to increase the welfare of others. Too many regard it as their own possession, and do not realize that it is something to be shared with others, and to be used for good of society at large.

附　　錄

當代英美名作摘譯

小　　引

一般讀書人都是陶淵明的信徒，讀書不求甚解，明白了一點大意就滿足了。因此一動手來翻譯，立刻就露出馬脚來，連大名鼎鼎的胡適博士亦在所不免。他所譯的「短篇小說」和原文常有出入。日本人讀書比較認眞，所以他們的譯文是不會有太離譜的。這並不太難，只要我們放棄不求甚解的習慣，仔細精讀原文，自不難澈底理解。果能把原文逐字逐句理解無遺，再運用中文的表現能力，自然就能很忠實而流利地翻譯出來了。

(1)

Suppose you ignore the telephone when it rings, and suppose that, for once, somebody has an important message for you. I can assure you that if a message is really important it will reach you sooner or later. Think of the proverb: "Ill news travels apace." I must say good news seems to travel just as fast. And think of the saying: "The truth will out." It will. But suppose you answer the telephone when it rings. If, when you take off the receiver, you say "Hullo!" just think how absurd that is. Why, you might be saying "Hullo!" to a total stranger, a thing you would certainly think twice about before doing in public, if you were English.

But perhaps, when you take off the receiver, you give your number or your name. But you don't even know whom you are giving it

to! Perhaps you have been indiscreet enough to have your name and number printed in the telephone directory, a book with a large circulation, a successful book so often reprinted as to make any author envious, a book more in evidence than Shakespeare or the Bible, and found in all sorts of private and public places. By your self-advertisement you have enabled any stranger, bore, intruder, or criminal to engage you in conversation at a moment's notice in what ought to be the privacy of your own home.

【解　說】

本文選自英國現代作家 William Plomer (1903–) 寫的 *On Not Answering the Telephone* 一篇隨筆中的一節。文筆中諷刺與幽默並用，再加上日常說的諺語，寫來極爲生動有趣。作者生於非洲，雖曾回國入 Rugby 私立公校，因水土不合又回返他的出生地去了。他在非洲從商，又從事農業，後與詩人 Roy Campbell 合辦一個文學雜誌。第二次世界大戰中從軍，在海軍部服務。作品涉及長篇小說，短篇小說，詩歌，傳記各方面，以短篇小說最爲有名。

【注　釋】

(1) ignore 不理睬。(2) important message for you, 有重要的消息告訴你。(3) sooner or later 遲早。(4) think of 想到，憶及。例如 I can't think of his name at the moment, 我一時想不起他的名字。(5) "Ill news travels apace" 惡事傳千里。travels 一字，又常用 runs 或 flies 等字。apace 有 fast 的意思，如 The hours and days speed apace 時日飛逝。(6) The truth will out. 眞相終將水落石出。will 表示習性。out 爲 come out 的簡略說法，單此一副詞即可作自動詞用。同樣的俗語有 Murder will out. 謀殺案隱藏不住，終將洩露出來。(7) receiver 電話的聽筒。(8) total stranger 完全不認識的陌生人。(9) a thing 用作和上文同格的名詞，這一件事即指對一個陌生人招呼。(10) think twice about 再思(而後行)的意思的陳句。(11) doing in public 公開的去做，在人前做。(12) if you were English 如果你是英國國民的話。the English 指英國全體的國民，單獨的個體則說 an Englishman，複數爲 three Englishmen，但普通說國籍時常把冠詞略去，如 I am Chinese. (我是中國的國民)。比較：I am a Chinese. (我是中國人)。They are Italian. (他們都是

意大利的國民)。比較: They are Italians. (他們是意大利人)。if you were English的 English 是如上 Italian 同樣的用法。(13) indiscreet 輕率的。(14) telephone directory 電話簿。(14) a book with a large circulation 一本銷數很廣大的書。(15) make any author envious 使任何作家妬羨。(16) in evidence 是一個有 conspicuous (顯著的) 之意的成語, 例如 She likes to be much in evidence 她很愛出風頭。 Smith was nowhere in evidence. 史密斯顯然不見了。(17) self advertisement 自作廣告, 自我宣傳。指把自己的姓名住址登在電話簿上。一種諷刺的說法。(18) bore 令人討厭的人。(19) intruder 闖入者。(20) criminal 罪犯。(21) engage you in conversation 來和你交談。(22) at a moment's notice = immediately 在此場合的 notice 可作「預告」解。(23) in the privacy of your own home. 在你自己家裏的私生活中。in privacy 秘密地, 隱秘地。例如 He likes to live in privacy. 他喜歡與人無所接觸的生活。他喜歡離羣索居。I tell you this in strict privacy. 此事絕對秘密。in the privacy of one's thoughts 在心靈深處。

【譯　　例】

假定電話鈴響你置之不理, 又假定剛好這次那人有重要的消息要告訴你。我可以向你保證, 如果那消息是眞正重要的話, 它遲早總會傳達給你聽的。想到那句諺語:「惡事傳千里」, 我一定要說好的消息好像也同樣地傳達得很快的呀。再想想那句常言:「眞相總會水落石出的」, 確是如此。但是假定你聽到電話鈴響, 你就去接。當你拿起聽筒, 如果你說「哈囉!」的話, 試想這是多麼荒謬呀。哼, 你也許正在對一個完全不相識的陌生人在說着「哈囉!」 如果你是英國國民的話, 這確實是一件在人前你要三思而後行的事。

但是當你拿起電話聽筒的時候, 也許你會把你的號碼或是姓名告訴對方的。你甚至還不知道你在告訴的人是誰呢! 也許你太輕率把你的姓名號碼, 隨便就印在電話簿上去了, 那是一本銷數極多的書, 任何作家都要羨慕的一本再三重版的成功的書, 一本比莎士比亞或是聖經更要引人注目的書, 在各種各樣的公衆場所都可見到的。由於你的自我宣傳, 你使得任何陌生人, 令人討厭的傢伙, 闖入者, 或是罪犯之流, 都能夠侵入你在自己家裏的私生活, 隨時來和你交談。

(2)

What is perhaps strangest today is the keen widespread interest

displayed toward people who are, on the one hand, not real celebrities and, on the other, not personally known to one. Most gossip that doesn't concern one's friends and acquaintances has, classically, a certain snob appeal—has to do with people of great wealth or fame or beauty. But much that one reads today in the gossip columns has to do, it might almost be said, with people whose reputations are being made at the same time they're being unmade—people who only exist, as it were, in terms of the gossip. The who's-dating-whom, the rumors of divorce, the shifts of affection, the speculations as marriage, the pregnancies and births, are for the most part—in New York, at any rate—about people only marginally in the limelight and often actually on the side lines. That Sonny Tink, the underwear heir, is dating a starlet, or even a showgirl; that a TV scriptwriter is horning in on the happy home of a candy-bar maker; that it's a boy at the Gumbridges (his pajama company sponsors a minor radio program); that a dog-biscuit tycoon has taken to investing in Broadway shows—this is the run of such stuff; and in a city of 8,000,000 people—a city that teems with real celebrities—this would seem to me of a piece with the trailer items in an old-fashioned small-town society column.

【解 說】

本文採自美國作家 Louis Kronenberger (1904–) 的一篇文章 *A Note on Privacy* 中的一節。描寫私生活日益遭受侵害，物議紛紜，人言可畏。行文故意規避平易的表現，而採用奇特的語法，點綴一些有趣的警句和新鮮的比喻，口語俗語自由使用，有時未免艱深難解，總之，不失爲奔放不羈的文體。作者爲德國系統猶太人的後裔，在出生地 Ohio 的 Cincinnati 大學畢業後，1924 年前往紐約，先在 Boni & Liveright 公司編輯部工作，後又改任 Knopf 出版公司編輯。發表了許多小說和評論，現爲紐約泰晤士報寫劇評，相當活躍。

【注 釋】

(1) the keen widespread interest 熱烈的普遍的興趣。(2) displayed toward people who are 對那些人們展示的。(3) on the one hand...on the

other (hand) 在一方面……在另一方面。(4) celebrities 名人，聞人。(5) personally known to 親身認識。(6) gossip 街談巷議；在人背後說人長短或是非閒談。(7) that doesn't concern one's friends and acquaintances 無關他的朋友或相識的。(8) classically 原義爲「正統地」，在此用着「傳統地」(traditionally)相近的意味。(9) snob appeal 意爲 appeal to snobbery，以名詞修飾名詞，簡潔有力，爲現代英語中常見的用法。has a certain snob appeal 引起某種裝模作樣的興趣。據 Random House Dictionary of the English Language 的解釋說 snob=a person who pretends to have social importance, intellectual superiority, etc. 意爲一個假裝社會上重要的人物，或智力超人表示他什麼事都知道的樣子。snob 在此指 snobbish character 或 conduct，即上述俗物的性格或行爲。(10) has to do with 與……有關。(11) people of great wealth or fame or beauty 極爲富有，極爲有名，極爲美貌的人。(12) much that one reads today in the gossip columns 今日我們在閒話欄中所讀到的大部分的社會新聞。(13) reputations are being made at the same time they're being unmade. 由於聲名狼藉而使聲譽鵲起。意爲以醜行而出名的。這種表現法很是有趣。(14) as it were 可謂。(15) in terms of 由於 (by means of)；從什麼的觀點 (from the standpoint of). (16) The who's-dating-whom 誰在跟誰鬧戀愛。這種隨意加短劃而把若干單字構成一語，也是新的表現法。(17) the shifts of affection 移情別戀。(18) speculations 臆測。(19) pregnancies 懷孕。(20) only marginally in the limelight 僅是略爲靠近灰光燈所照射的部分。意指稍爲世人所知的。(21) on the side lines 在界線外的地方。借用運動術語，以作比喻的表現。The spectators watched the game from the side lines. 觀衆站在線外看比賽。(22) Sonny Tink 捏造的名字，非實際的公司名。(23) underwear heir 內衣公司老闆的繼承人。是一種極爲緊縮的表現法。(24) is dating a starlet 和一個小明星約會。(25) showgirl 在歌舞場獻技的女郎。(26) a TV scriptwriter 電視脚本作者。(27) is horning in on the happy home 正在破壞一個幸福的家庭。horn in=intrude 闖入。爲美國俗語。(28) candy-bar maker 糖菓製造商。(29) it's a boy at the Gumbridges 在簡家生了一個男孩。(30) his pajama company 簡家經營的睡衣公司。(31) sponsor a minor radio program 贊助一個小型的廣播節目。(32) a dog-biscuit tycoon 飼犬用的餅乾業鉅子。(33) take to 喜歡；耽於。(34) Broadway shows 百老滙上演的戲。(35) the run=the average kind 普通的種類。cf.

the common run of men (普通人)。(36) teem with 充滿着。(37) of a piece with of the same kind 與……同一類。(38) the trailer items 附加的記事。trailer 原意爲電影樣片。

【譯　例】

目下最奇怪的事，也許就是對於既非名人，又非熟識的人們所提示的一般熱烈的興趣。和自己的朋友或相識無關的大部分的閒談，在傳統上有一種訴諸俗物氣質的魅力，而老是和富豪，名士或美人有關的。但是我們今日在閒話欄中所讀到的多數的社會新聞，差不多可以說，都是有關以醜行而出名的人物的，以及有關那些可謂只存在於閒談的世界中的人物的。誰又在跟誰鬧戀愛，離婚的謠該，移情別戀，關於結婚，懷孕及出生的臆測，大部分——至少是在紐約——都是關於一些不大出名的，而實際常是一些角落裏的人的。說那個爽利丁克內衣公司的小開，正在愛上了一個小明星，甚至是一個歌女哪；又說一個寫電視脚本的人，正在勾引着一個糖菓製造商的妻子，而進行破壞他們的幸福家庭哪；又說贊助一個小型廣播節目的，開睡衣公司的富家生了一個男孩哪；又說飼狗餅乾業的大亨正有意投資於百老滙的戲劇哪，諸如此類，都是一般閒談的材料；而在一個有八百萬人口的，像紐約這樣的大城市，其中充滿着眞正的名士，我覺得這些張家長李家短的玩意，就和舊式小鎭上社交欄中所出現的附加的記事，沒有什麽兩樣呢。

(3)

Scobie is a sort of protozoic profile in fog and rain, for he carries with him a sort of English weather, and he is never happier than when he can sit over a microscopic wood-fire in winter and talk. One by one his memories leak through the faulty machinery of his mind until he no longer knows them for his own. Behind him I see the long grey rollers of the Atlantic at work, curling up over his memories, smothering them in spray, blinding him. When he speaks of the past it is in a series of short dim telegrams—as if already communications were poor, the weather inimical to transmission. In Dawson City the ten who went up the river were frozen to death. Winter came down like a hammer, beating them senseless: whisky, gold, murder—it was like a new crusade northward into the timberlands. At this time his

brother fell over the falls in Uganda; in his dream he saw the tiny figure, like a fly, fall and at once get smoothed out by the yellow claw of water. No, that was later when he was already staring along the sights of a carbine into the very brainbox of a Boer. He tries to remember exactly *when* it must have been, dropping his polished head into his hands; but the grey rollers intervene, the long effortless tides patrol the barrier between himself and his memory.

【解 說】

本文作者 Lawrence George Durrel (1912-) 是英國的詩人兼小說家，出生於印度，回國受教育。曾任海外各地的通訊員，甚至還做過夜總會的琴師。他有文學天賦，才氣蓬勃，他的文章被譽為綿維綴錦(tapestry)具有豐富的字彙和華麗的色彩。他以1930年代的埃及亞律山大為背景，寫成 The *Alexandria Quartet* 四部作，其第一部 *Justine*，成於 1957 年，第二部 *Balthuzar* 及第三部 *Mount Olive*，均成於 1958 年，第四部 *Clea* 則成於 1960 年。各部的觀點和寫作手法都有不同，具有立體的及其他多方面的效果。作者長於人物描寫，即令是同一個人物，在各書中出現時，都是從不同的角度看去，而加以描寫的。所以新的面影摧毀了舊的輪廓，但並未使之完全消失，仍在讀者的心目中，留下一個殘像，重重相疊，新像再印在舊像之上，就好像一張感光的底片，一次又一次把人相照上去，結果沒有一個具有個性的特定的人物存在，只剩下一堆具有莫名其妙的側面的人影，或是說得正確一點，像人一樣的面影，浮現在讀者的眼前。本文採自他的四部作的第一部 Justine 中的一段。我們且來欣賞一下作者的人物描寫吧。Scobie 原服務海軍中，經過長年的海上生活之後，現加入埃及警察部隊，已經是一個快七十歲的老人了。這種喜劇的描寫，隱喻疊出，有如用散文寫出的一首詩。

【注 釋】

(1) protozoic profile 原生動物的輪廓。Protozoa 原生動物，即單細胞的動物類，通常要用顯微鏡才可以看見的。(2) in fog and rain 在霧裏和雨中。這表示更加模糊。(3) English weather 英國的天氣，是以多雨多霧著稱的。(4) microscopic woodfire 微微的爐火。microscopic=very small; tiny 極小的，微小的。wood-fire 英國家庭的火爐，講究燒柴火，如云 Put some more wood on the fire. (在火爐上加點柴去)。(5) talk 接上面說的 can sit，即 can talk

之路。(6) his memories leak 他的記憶洩露出來。(7) through the faulty machinery of his mind 經由他心靈的破機器。意即從他那有毛病的頭腦中。因人類的頭腦構造複雜，故用機器的總稱 machinery 一字，而不說單獨一部機器的 machine. (8) Behind him I see the long grey rollers of the Atlantic at work 在他的背後我看見波濤起伏。roller 原意爲滾動的東西；在此指「巨浪」，如 Huge rollers broke on the beach. (巨浪衝上沙灘)。這是說 Scobie 的過去，令人聯想到驚濤駭浪的海洋。現在人已經老了，過去的記憶，好像全埋沒到海洋中去了似的。但並沒有喪失。用波濤起伏的隱喻，至爲生動。(9) curling up over his memories 蜷伏在他的記憶上。(10) smothering them in spray 用浪花把他的記憶全般掩蔽着。(11) blinding him 使他爲之目盲。(12) a series of short dim telegrams 一連串短的意識不清楚的電報。(13) as if already communications were poor, the weather inimical to transmission 儼然是由於原來的通信聯絡已經不好，再加上氣象條件不利，而傳送大有困難似的。描寫他說話如打電報，故云。inimical 不利的。(14) 從 In Dawson City 直到 into the very brain-box of a Boer 爲止全用的過去動詞，似乎是指 Scobie 斷續的記憶，電報似的話語。(15) Dawson City 加拿大西北部森林地帶的城市。the Yukon 河及 Klondike 河在此匯合。在1890年以後數年間在此曾發生淘金熱。(16) like a new crusade 像一個新的十字軍，指 whisky, gold, murder 連在一起而形成的。(17) timberlands 森林地帶。(18) Uganda 烏干達，原爲東非英國的保護國，位於剛果及肯雅之間。(19) get smoothed out 消失不見。(20) the yellow claw of water 黃色的水的魔爪，指人爲水所吞沒。(21) along the sights of a carbine 沿着一枝卡賓槍的照準。意即瞄準射擊。(22) into the very brain box of a Boer. 正射進一個波爾人的腦袋中去。Boer 波爾人爲荷蘭血統的南非人。the Boer War 發生於 1899-1902. (23) polished head, 光滑的頭；油頭。(24) the grey rollers intervene 波濤起伏遮斷（他的記憶）。(25) the long effortless tides patrol the barrier 那長大的不須費力的浪潮巡邏守住界線（不讓他的記憶突破）。

【譯　例】

史可庇帶有一種在霧裏和雨中的原生動物的輪廓，因爲他携帶得有英國的天氣，只要他在冬天能够坐在一個微微的爐火旁邊，天南地北來閑聊的話，他就再快樂也沒有了。一件一件的往事，從他那有毛病的頭腦中洩漏出來，直到最後連他自

己都不知道那些記憶的東西,是不是他自己的。在他的背後我看見大西洋上的灰色巨浪,洶湧起伏,蟠伏在他的記憶上,又用浪花把他的記憶掩蔽,使他再也看不見了。當他說到過去的時候,是用一連串短的意識不清的電報來說的——宛然是因為原來的通信聯絡已經不好,再加上氣象條件不利,而使得傳送大有困難似的。在道生市,那時有十個人走到河的上流去,全都凍死了。冬天像一把鐵鎚似的降下,把他們打得失去知覺了。威士忌酒,黃金,殺人——這些結合在一起,形成了一支向着北方森林地帶而去的新十字軍。正在這時,他的弟弟在烏干達墜下到瀑布裏去了;他在夢中看見那像蒼蠅一般的小小的人影落下去,而馬上就被黃色的水的魔爪吞沒得不見了。不對:那還在以後,那是他已經把一支卡賓槍正瞄準好,要射中一個波爾人的腦袋那個當兒呀。他很想正確地記憶出那到底是在什麼時候,於是把他那油滑的頭伏下在他的兩手之中,可是那灰色的大波又出現了,那毫不費力的巨大的浪潮,守住了界限,不讓他回復記憶。

(4)

He entered the penumbra of the storm slowly, marvelling at the light, at the horizon drawn back like a bow. Odd gleams of sunshine scattered rubies upon the battleships in the basin (squatting under their guns like horned toads). It was the ancient city again; he felt its pervading melancholy under the rain as he crossed it on his way to the Summer Residence. The brilliant unfamiliar lighting of the thunderstorm re-created it, giving it a spectral, story-book air—broken pavements made of tinfoil, snail-shells, cracked horn, mica; earth-brick buildings turned to the colour of ox-blood; the lovers wandering in Mohammed Ali Square, disoriented by the unfamiliar rain, disconsolate as untuned instruments; the clicking of violet trams along the sea-front among the tatting of palm-fronds. The desuetude of an ancient city whose streets were plastered with the wet blown dust of the surrounding desert. He felt it all anew, letting it extend panoramically in his consciousness—the moan of a liner edging out towards the sunset bar, or the trains which flowed like a torrent of diamonds towards the interior, their wheels chattering among the shingle ravines and the powder of temples long since abandoned and silted up......

【解　　說】

本文採自 Durrell 作的四部作的第三部 *Mount-Olive* 中的一段。上一篇我們所精讀的是 Durrell 的人物描寫，現在我們再來看看他的景物描寫。*Mount-Olive* 是英國駐埃大使，爲着要去會晤他以前當秘書時代所愛的女子。遂從開羅出發。横渡沙漠，到亞律山大去。本文便是描寫這旅途的情形。那是冬日的薄暮。作者對描寫風景的特點，就是大用色彩的字眼和比喩，且都能訴諸感覺，鮮明如繪。不但是現實的外表，就連那些難於捉摸的內在的理性，都被作者描繪出來，使讀者感覺得到，有如親身的經歷似的。所以在作者筆下所描繪出來的風景，對現實的輪廓很薄，而色彩濃厚，給人的印象極深。在本文中，那輪廓已經很薄了的風景，重重叠叠，印在讀者的心上，使得海洋，城市，乃至沙漠混合起來，構成一幅鑲嵌細工的圖樣，令人爲之目迷。作者筆下的景物描寫，與傳統小說上的判然不同，反映出他特有的詩一般的美麗的文筆來，他的名文家的聲譽是當之無愧的。

【注　　釋】

(1) penumbra (繪畫)濃淡相交之處。原爲天文上指日蝕，月蝕時部分入影的區域，即半陰影部分。複數爲 penumbrae. (2) marvelling at 對於什麼感到驚異。(3) drawn back like a bow 像被拉緊的弓一樣。(4) Odd gleams of sunshine 夕陽的殘照。(5) scattered rubies upon the battleships 把如紅寶石一般的點點金光洒在戰艦上。(6) basin 爲陸地所包圍的小海灣。(7) squatting under their guns like horned toads 像有角的蟾蜍一般蹲踞在突出的大砲之下。(8) its pervading melancholy 那城中瀰漫的憂鬱感。(9) Summer Residence 消夏的邸宅。駐在埃及的外交官入夏便從開羅遷居亞律山大。(10) The brilliant unfamiliar lighting of the thunder-storm re-created it, giving it a spectral, story-book air 那雷雨的不習見的閃電的光亮，把那城市重新造過，給了它一種非現實的童話一般的面貌。spectral 妖怪的；幽靈的。(11) tinfoil 錫箔。(12) snail-shells 貝殼。螺旋形的貝殼，蝸牛殼作螺旋形。(13) cracked horn 破碎的角。(14) mica 雲母。(15) ox-blood 帶黑的深紅色。(16) Mohammed Ali Square 穆罕默德·阿里方場。以十九世紀初葉埃及太守名爲紀念的地名。(17) disoriented=disorientated 對方向弄不清楚；迷失方向。(18) disconsolate as untuned instruments 像不合音調的樂器一樣令人不快。形容愛侶的情緒不好。disconsolate 哀傷的，使人難過的。(19) clicking 金屬物相碰的聲音。

(20) the tatting of palm-fronds 像梭織花邊似的棕櫚樹葉。(21) desuetude 廢止狀態。作廢，爲 consuetude (慣例)之對。例如 Many words once commonly used have fallen into desuetude. (許多以往通用的字今已廢而不用了)。(22) were plastered with the wet blown dust of the surrounding desert 塗滿了周圍沙漠中吹來的濕的塵土。(23) 從 The brilliant unfamiliar lighting 起直到 the surrounding desert 爲止都是描寫 Mount-Olive 如夢如幻地所感到的亞律山大的情景。所以下面總結一句說 He felt it all anew. 更進一步地，讓這個城市這種周圍的景象，還栩栩如生之際，接着說 letting it extend (讓它擴大下去。) (24) panoramically 全景在目地。(25) in his consciousness 在他的意識中。(26) the moan of a liner 一條定期船的呻吟。(27) edging out towards the sunset-bar 向着落日的港口徐徐移動出去。(28) the trains which flowed like a torrent of diamonds towards the interior 像鑽石的奔流一樣向着內陸流去的火車。(29) ravines 由激流而構成的峽谷。(30) the powder of temples long since abandoned 早就被人遺棄了的廟宇的廢墟。powder 腐朽而化成了灰。(31) silted up 爲淤泥充塞。

【譯 例】

蒙搭里夫慢慢地走進了那風暴的明暗相交的處所，驚奇地望着那拉緊像一把弓似的明亮的地平線。夕陽的殘照有如紅寶石的點點金光，洒向停泊在小海灣中的兵艦上（那些兵艦像有角的蟾蜍一般蹲踞在突出的大砲之下。）重又來到了這個古城。當他横過此城走向大使館的消夏別墅去時，在大雨淋漓之下，他感覺到這城中彌漫着憂鬱的感覺。大雷雨中那不習見的電光，使這城市面目一新，給了它一種非現實的童話一般的容貌。用錫箔、貝殼、碎角、雲母舖成的破爛的舖道。土磚的房子變成了帶黑的深紅色。情侶們在穆罕默德阿里方場散步，由於不習見的雨而使他們迷失方向，有如彈着走了調的樂器聽來很不舒服一樣，他們的情緒非常不好。沿着海岸線，在梭織花邊似的棕櫚葉的樹蔭下走着的紫色電車的軋軋聲。這個古城好像要被廢棄的樣子，它的街道上塗滿了從四周圍沙漠中吹來的濕的塵土。這一切的情景他又重新充分地感到了，讓那全景在目地在他心中擴展開去。——一條定期輪船向着落日的港口徐徐移動出去的聲音，或是像鑽石的奔流一般向着內陸流去的火車，它們的車輪在滿佈鵝卵石的峽谷上，和很久已絕人煙，早爲淤泥充塞的廟宇的廢墟上轆轆地奔馳着。

(5)

Spearing wore his hair long even in Egypt. He had the kind of complexion the sun fired to a demonic redness and, in contrast, the hair looked whiter and silkier than it does today. Everybody knew him, by sight if not by name. He never wore a hat. You can imagine how he stood out in a crowd of Egyptians because of this flouncing mop of hair. He was a marked man. Perhaps he felt that the extravagance of his appearance had to be matched in some way by an extravagance of conduct. In England, where he is naturally less conspicuous, Spearing has never made a lot of trouble.

Both of us were teaching at the University but I saw more of him than the rest of my colleagues did because we put up at the same pension. Accordingly, when I heard him shcuting abuse in Cairo Post Office one hot afternoon I went over to see what the trouble was this time.

We were in the Parcels Department, a long dark cavern equipped with an unusually wide counter, a number of scaler and a chute. Only one official seemed to be on duty that afternoon, a hard-faced little man with creased cheeks who closed his eyes when he spoke.

"If you don't put Alexandria," he said in English, "I won't take it."

Spearing was so angry that his hands visibly trembled when they gripped the edge of the counter. "Everybody knows where Sidi Gaber is, you coot! You know where Sidi Gaber is! I know where it is! He—"

【解　說】

作者爲英國小說家 P. H. Newby (1918-),本文採自他的短篇小說 A Parcel for Alexandria 開端的一段，描寫一個英國人在開羅郵局寄小包，因地址不全而被拒收的情形。文體如行雲流水，明白通達，且多用單句，淺顯易讀。作者在大學畢業後從軍，參加第二次世界大戰，在埃及軍中受命兼任大學講師，任教至戰後1946年止。1946年以後服務於 B. B. C. 常以近東及其他外國爲背景來寫小說，作

風頗近似 E. M. Forster, 自 1945 年 A Journey to the Interior 問世以來, 差不多每年都有一部作品發表。

【注 釋】

(1) complexion 面色。(2) the sun fired to a demonic redness 被太陽晒得變成魔鬼似的紅色。這當然是修飾面色的。(3) in contrast 對照起來。(4) silkier 更爲柔軟發亮。(5) by sight if not by name. 即不知道他的姓名, 也能認識他的面貌。這種表現法簡潔有力。(6) stood out in a crowd 鶴立鷄羣。(7) this flouncing mop of hair 他這一頭蓬鬆的頭髮。flounce 原意爲女裙的荷葉邊, 在此無非形容多皺的頭髮。mop 拖把似的頭髮。(8) a marked man 引人注目的人。marked 顯著的, 明顯的。(9) extravagance 過度; 放縱。extravagance of appearance 他樣子的放肆。extravagance of conduct 行爲的放肆。(10) had to be matched by 相等, 配合。(11) in some way 有些方面。(12) less conspicuous 不大引人注目。比較少人注意。(13) has never made a lot of trouble 從未惹起很多麻煩。(14) the University 用大寫指當地唯一的大學。(15) put up at 住宿。(16) pension＝boarding house 公寓, 宿舍。原爲法文, 如 live en pension 住在宿舍裏。(17) shouting abuse 大聲辱罵。(18) the Parcels Department, 郵局包裹部。(19) cavern 地下的大洞穴。在此指郵局下層包裹部黑暗得像地洞似的。(20) equipped with an unusually wide counter 裝備得有一個異常寬大的櫃枱。(21) scales 天秤(用複數)。(22) chute 使郵包自上滑下的裝置, 滑槽。(23) official 在此指郵局職員。(24) on duty 當值, 值班。(25) hard-faced＝hard-favoured 面貌嚴厲的; 面色難看的。(26) little man 小個子; 身材矮小的人。(27) creased cheeks 多皺的面頰。(28) I won't take it. 我不接受(這個郵包)。(29) when they gripped the edge of the counter 當他的兩手緊抓着櫃檯邊上的時候。(30) Sidi Gaber 爲 Alexandria 的郊外地區。(31) Coot (俗語)愚人; 笨東西。(32) He ——實際是說的 I, 如華語說的「人家」或「別人」, 有時也是指自己, 例如:「人家(或別人)一番好意, 你却這樣不領情」。

【譯 例】

史匹林的頭髮, 那怕是在埃及, 都算是蓄得很長的。他的面孔被太陽晒得像魔鬼似的血紅, 與之成對照的, 是他的頭髮却比現今更白, 更爲柔亮。人人都認得他,

即令不曉得他的名字，也認識他的面貌。他從來不帶帽子。你不難想像他那一頭鬅鬆的頭髮，站在一羣埃及人當中，簡直是鶴立鷄羣，非常突出。他成爲一個引人注目的人了。也許他覺得他的放肆的樣子，應該配上一些放肆的行爲才對。在英國，那兒是本鄉本土，他自然不會引人注目，史匹林也從未惹起過什麼麻煩。

我們兩人都是在大學教書，不過我比其餘的同事和他見面的機會更多，因爲我和他住在同一個宿舍的緣故。於是，在一個酷熱的下午，當我聽到他在開羅郵局大聲辱罵的時候，我趕忙走過去看這次是發生了什麼麻煩。

我們都在郵局的包裹部門，那是一間長形的黑暗洞穴似的屋子，設有一個非常寬大的櫃檯，裏面有天秤和滑槽。那天下午好像只有一個職員在值班似的，那是一個面色可怕，面頰多皺的小個子，他說話時總是把眼睛閉上。

「如果你不寫上亞律山大的字樣，」他用英語說，「我不接受。」

史匹林氣得兩手發抖，他的兩手正緊握着那櫃檯的邊緣。「人人都曉得西提加柏在什麼地方，你這笨猪！你也知道西提加柏在什麼地方！我也知道它在什麼地方！人家——」

(6)

The gong was about to sound quite soon. Anne kicked her cigarette-stub into a dark corner. Greggie called over her shoulder, "Anne, here comes your boy-friend." "On time, for once," said Anne, with the same pretence of scorn that she had adopted when referring to her brother Geoffrey: "Geoffrey would be the last person I would consult." She moved, with her casual hips, towards the door. A square-built high-coloured young man in the uniform of an English captain came smiling in. Anne stood regarding him as if he was the last person in the world she would consult. "Good evening," he said to Greggie as a well-brought-up man would naturally in the doorway. He made a vague nasal noise of recognition to Anne, which if properly pronounced would have been "Hallo". She said nothing at all by way of greeting. They were nearly engaged to be married. "Like to come in and see the drawing room wall-paper?" Anne said then. "No, let's get cracking." Anne went to get her coat off the banister where she had slung it. He was saying to Greggie, "Lovely evening, isn't it?" Anne returned

with her coat slung over her shoulder. "Bye, Greggie," she said. "Good-bye," said the soldier. Anne took his arm. "Have a nice time," Greggie said. The dinner-gone sounded and there was a scuffle of feet departing from the notice-board and a scamper of feet from the floors above.

【解　說】

本文採自英國女作家 Muriel Spark (1918–)所寫的 *The Girls Of Slender Means* 一篇小說，那是 1963 年的作品。作者生於 Edinburgh、旅居 Southern Rhodesia 達六年之久，於第二次世界大戰中返國。此後近十年間專從事於詩作，似有「坙拋心力作詩人」的打算。直到 1951 年觀察報懸賞徵求小說，她應徵寫了一個短篇 The Seraph and the Zambest 寄去，居然獲得首獎，而使她寫小說的文名鵲起，這一來她也就放下詩作而轉向於小說了。她以寫詩的技巧和辭華來寫小說，自然寫來特別絢爛奪目。她的文章中常有對照的表現，如幻想與現實，諷刺與感傷，忿怒與歡笑等等，皆能有機地結合起來。在她的散文中洋溢着詩的影像和旋律，構成了她特殊的作風。

【注　釋】

(1) gong (通知用餐時用的) 碟形的鈴，或稱呼鐘。此字又可作「銅鑼」解。(2) kicked her cigarette-stub into a dark corner 把她的煙屁股丢向暗的角落上。kick 意爲 send forcibly or angrily (ALD) 用力擲去。(3) over her shoulder 回過頭來。(4) on time 準時。(5) for once=as an exception 難得一次。(6) with a same pretence of scorn 帶着同樣假裝的輕蔑 (她內心對她的哥哥是很佩服的，但在人前却假裝着瞧他不起的樣子)。(7) Geoffrey would be the last person I would consult. 我絕對不會去和哥哥商量的。(8) She moved, with her casual hips, towards the door. 她移動了，無意識地扭着她的屁股，向門口走去了。這描寫何等的具有詩的洗鍊，影像雖不顯明，却能使人獲得深的印象。這種 erotic (色情的) 的描寫正是作者的一種手法。(9) square-built 堅實的；粗壯的。(10) high-coloured 有朝氣的，生龍活虎的。(11) in the uniform of an English captain 穿着英國陸軍上尉的制服。(12) a well-brought-up man 一個有教養的人。(13) in the doorway 進門時。(14) made a vague nasal noise of recognition 發出含糊的鼻音來招呼一下。(15) properly pronounced 正規地發出音來。(16) by way of greeting 作爲

應酬的話。(17) nearly engaged 差不多算是訂了婚。(18) the drawing room wall-paper 客廳裏的糊壁紙。(19) let's get cracking＝let's start. 俗語 get cracking ＝get busy (with work waiting to be done).(ALD)馬上就動身吧。(20) banister 欄干。(21) where she had slung it 她把上衣丟在那裏。他動詞 sling 意爲拋擲。(22) Bye 爲 bye-bye 的省略說法，原爲兒語，現大人也說，表示親密。(23) Have a nice time 希望你們玩的好。(24) The dinner-gong sounded and there was a scuffle of feet departing from the notice-board and a scamper of feet from the floors above. 晚餐的鈴聲一響，就聽見離開公告欄亂糟糟的脚步聲，和樓上地板上急走的足音。從 sound 到 scuffle 最後及於 scamper 都是用齒音〔s〕作頭韻。scuffle混亂，亂做一團。scamper 疾走，急馳。

【譯　例】

吃飯的鈴子很快就要響了。安把她吸剩的香煙頭，使勁地扔在那暗角上去。格雷琪回過頭來叫道，『安，你的男朋友來了。』『這次總算是準時來的，』安說，帶着假裝的輕蔑，正好像她提到她哥哥時所表示的一樣：『我是決不會去找喬勿萊商量的。』她移動了，照常無意識地扭着屁股，向門口走去。一個穿着英國陸軍上尉的制服，身體結實，活力充沛的青年，含笑走進來了。安站在那兒把他看做是這世界上她決不會去找他商量的人似的。『您晚上好』 他對格雷琪說，凡是一個有教養的人，一進門來，見到年長的人自然要這樣說的。他發出含糊的鼻音來對安招呼了一下，如果要用正規的發音來說時，那便是『哈囉』了。作爲應酬的話，她什麼也沒有說，他們快要訂婚了。『你高興進來看看客廳裏的糊壁紙麼？』安於是這樣說。『不必啦，我們還是馬上就走吧。』安走去欄干邊取她的上衣，她早些時候把它擲在那上面的。那軍人對格雷琪說，『眞是一個可愛的夜晚呀。』安轉來了，把她的上衣掛在肩上。『格雷琪，回頭見，』她說。『再會，』那軍人說，安挽着他的手走了。『希望你們玩得痛快，』格雷琪說。吃飯的鈴子終於響了，只聽見離開公告牌一陣混亂的脚步聲，和從上面樓板上發出的疾走的足音。

(7)

Lois Taggett was graduated from Miss Hascomb's School, standing twenty-sixth in a class of fifty-eight, and the following autumn her parents thought it was time for her to come out, charge out, into

what they called Society. So they gave her a five-figure, la-de-da Hotel Pierre affair, and save for a few horrible colds and Fred-hasn't-been-well-lately's, most of the preferred trade attended. Lois wore a white dress, an orchid corsage, and a rather lovely, awkward smile. The elderly gentlemen guests said, "She's a Taggett, all right"; the elderly ladies said, "She's a *very* sweet child"; the young ladies said, "Hey, Look at Lois. Not bad. What'd she do to her hair?"; and the young gentlemen said, "Where's the liquor"

That winter Lois did her best to swish around Manhattan with the most photogenic of the young men who drank scotch-and-sodas in the God-and-Walter Winchell section of the Stork Club. She didn't do badly. She had a good figure, dressed expensively and in good taste, and was considered Intelligent. That was the first season when Intelligent was the thing to be.

【解　說】

這是美國現代作家 J. D. Salinger (1919-)的短篇小說 The Long Debut of Lois Taggett 的頭上的一節。描寫一個年輕姑娘初次進入社交界的情形。Salinger 在 1951 年發表長篇小說 The Catcher in the Rye 一舉成名,在美國文壇獲得崇高的地位,無論內容形式,都是最新穎的。研究這位作家的書,都出了好幾本,如 Gwynn & Blotner 著的 The Fiction of J. D. Salinger (University of Pittsburgh Press, 1958); H. A. Grunwald 著的 Salinger: A Critical and Personal Portrait (Harper & Brothers, 1962); Warren French 著的 J.D. Salinger (Twayne Publishers, 1963). 此外還有 Laser & Fruman 編的 Studies in J. D. Salinger; Reviews, Essays and Critiques of the Catcher in the Rye and Other Fiction (Odyssey) 及 James E. Miller 的 J. D. Salinger (Minnesota University Press), 足見他的文學地位, 我們要知道什麼是美國最新的文體, 最好閱讀 Salinger 的作品。上面所選用的短文, 便可看出作者的風格, 不但文字洗練, 而字句也十分新穎, 讀來眞可一新耳目。

【注　釋】

(1) standing twenty-six in a class of fifty-eight 一班五十八名中她名

列第二十六。(2) come out = make a debut 開始進入社交界。(3) charge out 和 come out 同義，換一個說法重複一下，以加強語氣。(4) Society 社交界。(5) gave her an affair 爲她舉辦一個晚會。affair 在此作 party 解。(6) five-figure 五位數目的，不一定指萬數，而是指大量的金錢。(7) la-de-da 或拼爲 la-di-da，作形容詞用時有 foppish (紈袴子的，適合於紈袴子的。空虛的，愚笨的，矯飾的)，在此有 stylish (合乎時尚的，時髦的，漂亮的)的意思。(8) Hotel Pierre 是紐約 Manhattan 地區一流的旅館。(9) save for = except for 除開。(10) a few horrible colds and Fred-hasn't-been-well-lately's 少數幾個人因重傷風，以及胡來德近來健康欠佳。表示拒絕來參加晚會的理由，這種表現法頗爲新奇有趣。(11) preferred trade 優先選定的客人。trade 原爲 customers 的意思，作集合名詞用。他例如 preferred stock (優先股)，作者大概是想到這個而滑稽地使用的。(12) orchid corsage 胡姬花束。婦女胸前或肩上的飾物。(13) Not bad 很好，非常的好，這是一種 understate 的說法。(14) What'd = what did. (15) Where's = Where is. (16) did her best 盡力。(17) swish 瑟瑟聲，表在冬天寒風中走動的神氣。(18) photogenic 宜於藝術攝影的。the most photogenic of the young men 最會照藝術相的年輕人。(19) scotch-and-sodas 威士忌蘇打 soda water 在美國叫 sodas. (20) God-and-Walter Winchell section 有名的新聞記者 Walter Winchell 等人常佔用的席位。其中 God-and- 無特殊意義，只是強調的說法。(21) Stork Club 鸛雀俱樂部。此爲紐約 Manhattan 有名的夜總會。(22) figure 身材。(23) in good taste 有高尚的趣味。(24) Intelligent 有頭腦的、有才智的、聰明的。(25) the thing to do 重要的事。

【譯　　例】

蘿薏·塔格特從赫斯康女史的學校畢業時，全班五十八人中她得到第二十六名。就在她畢業的第二年秋天，她的父母認爲已經是她進入那個他們稱爲社交界的時候了。所以他們爲她在匹爾亞大飯店舉行了一個盛大的合乎時尚的晚會。除了幾個說是因患了重傷風和近來健康欠佳的人以外，優先選定的客人們大部份都到了。蘿薏穿了一襲白色的衣服，胸前掛着一束胡姬花，面上浮着一片相當可愛而又笨拙的微笑。年長的先生們說，「她不愧是塔格特家的姑娘」。年長的太太們說，「她眞是一位人見人愛的孩子呀」。年輕的婦女們說，「嚇，看蘿薏。好漂亮呀。她的頭髮不曉得是怎樣做的」。而年輕的男士們就說，「酒在哪兒」？

那年冬天蘿薏努力和那些在鸛雀俱樂部的瓦特溫徹的座席上，喝威士忌蘇打

的靑年人中最善於拍攝藝術照的人，一塊兒在曼哈頓一帶那瑟瑟 的寒風中走來走去。她表現得很不錯。她的身材旣長得好，又穿上高價和趣味優雅的服裝，被認爲是有頭腦的。在最初的時期，第一就是要有頭腦。

(8)

It was too late to call up for a cab or anything, so I walked the whole way to the station. It wasn't too far, but it was cold as hell, and the snow made it hard for walking, and my Gladstones kept banging hell out of my legs. I sort of enjoyed the air and all, though. The only trouble was, the cold made my nose hurt, and right under my upper lip, where old Stradlater'd laid one on me. He'd smacked my lip right on my teeth, and it was pretty sore. My ears were nice and warm, though. That hat I bought had earlaps in it, and I put them on—I didn't give a damn how I looked. Nobody was around anyway. Everybody was in the sack.

Usually I like riding on trains, especially at night, with the lights on and the windows so black, and one of those guys coming up the aisle selling coffee and sandwiches and magazines. I usually buy a ham sandwich and about four magazines. If I'm on a trian at night, I can usually even read one of those dumb stories in a magazine without puking. You know. One of those stories with a lot of phoney, lean-jawed guys named David in it, and a lot of phoney girls named Linda or Marcia that are always lighting all the goddam Davids' pipes for them.

【解 說】

如果要研讀以俚俗語寫的現代文學，最好還是讀 J. D. Salinger 的長篇小說 The Catcher in the Rye，這不但是他的代表作，也是現代俚俗語文學的代表。這部小說旣無故事，也無結構，却能澈底地表現出作者的生活態度和眞摯感情。全書描寫一個阿飛學生在離校後回家前的三日 間在外流浪的過程，全用極其正直的內心的獨白表出，足見作者對個性的描寫何等深入。這確是現代英文一種獨特的文體，値得一讀。

【注　釋】

(1) too late to call up for a cab 太遲不能打電話去叫車。too...to do 意爲「太……不能做」。cab=taxicab=taxi 出租汽車。(2) or anything 爲 or something 的否定形，因前有 too......to 的否定。意爲「還是什麼」，在此意爲既不能去叫出租汽車，也不能去叫別的什麼。此爲口語中特有的表現法。(3) It wasn't too far. 並不太遠。not too=not very 也是口語的說法。(4) cold as hell 冷得要死；非常的冷。(<as......as hell). 這種 swearwords (咒罵語)，是俚俗的 (slangy) 文體的特色。(5) the snow made it hard 中的 it 指 the way 而言。(6) Gladstones 英國十九世紀的政治家 William Ewart Gladstone (1809-1898)，爲自由黨的黨魁，曾四次任首相。由此而發生出兩種東西，一爲兩人坐的四輪遊覽馬車，一爲由當中開口分爲上下的旅行皮箱，二者都是用他的名字，叫作 Gladstone 這裏是指後者，卽又可稱爲 Gladstone bag 的。(7) banging hell out of my legs 重擊在我的兩條腿上。hell一字 爲俚語表現法，在此除加強語氣外別無他意。(8) I sort of enjoyed=I rather enjoyed. 我相當的喜歡。"sort of+動詞" 的形式，也是美國口語的表現法。(9) and all 及其他。等等。(=and everything). 也是口語特別的說法。(10) though 意爲「可是」.「雖然」，在口語中放在句尾是作副詞用的。(11) old Stradlater'd=old Stradlater had. 這個 old 不作「老」解，而是指熟悉的朋友，一種親密的稱呼，如我們同學間叫的老張，老李一樣。(12) laid one on me 給我一拳。one=a blow. (13) He'd=He had. (14) smacked 摑；重擊。(15) pretty sore 很痛。這個 pretty 爲 understatement (說得較輕)。(16) nice and=quite satisfactorily. 口語的表現法。(17) ear-laps=ear-flaps 耳罩。(18) in it 帽子上。(19) not give a damn 後可看作略去了一個 to字，是 swearwords 的一種。意爲「我一點也不在乎」，「管它個屁。」(20) around 附近。(21) anyway=anyhow 意爲「左右」，「在任何情形下」(at any rate, in any case)，「總之」。(22) sack=bed 作牀解爲美國俗語，hit the sack 就寢。(23) one of those guys 接前面的 with 說。美國語的 guy=fellow 並沒有什麼壞的意思，在此指小販。(24) aisle 原爲教堂中座位間的通道，美國用來指教室，戲院，火車上的通道(gangway)，(25) dumb stories=damn stories 低級的，或粗製濫造的小說。因避免用冒語的 damn故以音近的字 dumb 來代替。(26) puking=vomiting 作嘔的。(27) You know 是一句沒有意思的口頭禪。在對方多不知道時說的。(28) phoney=phony 美國

俗語，意爲 fraudulent（詐欺的，騙取的）。（29）lean-jawed guys 瘦尖下巴的人。（30）goddam = cursed, damned 一種咒語，並無特別的意思，只是爲加強語氣而說的。

【譯 例】

那時已經太晚不能打電話去叫出租汽車什麼的了，所以我便一直走路走到火車站去。那並不太遠，不過却冷得要命，飛雪使步行增加困難，我手上所提的旅行皮箱老是在我腿上碰來碰去。可是我對於那空氣等等到是相當喜歡的。唯一的困難就是 我的鼻子冷得發痛，還有正在我上嘴唇下面的部分也痛，因爲老史重重的在那裏打了我一下。他摑了我牙齒外面的嘴唇，那裏痛的很。我的耳朵却很溫暖，因爲我買的那頂帽子是有耳罩的，我把那兩個耳罩戴上了，——至於我變成一個什麼怪相我一點也不管。好在附近也沒有一個人。所有的人都睡到床上去了。

通常我是喜歡坐火車的，尤其是在夜裏，電燈照着，窗外一片漆黑，還有那小販來到通路上賣着咖啡，三明治，還有雜誌。我總是要買一個火腿三明治，和差不多四種雜誌。如果我是在夜間坐車，我通常都能讀完一篇這種雜誌上的低級故事而不作嘔的。你知道的，這樣的故事，有一篇其中出現不少名叫大衛的尖下巴的騙子，還有一些名叫苓達或瑪琪的女騙子，她們老是要去替那些混帳東西 的大衛們點燃他們的烟斗。

(9)

Then Dora noticed that there was a Red Admiral butterfly walking on the dusty floor underneath the seat opposite. Every other thought left her head. Anxiously she watched the butterfly. It fluttered a little, and began to move towards the window, dangerously close to the passengers' feet. Dora held her breath. She ought to do something. But what? She flushed with indecision and embarrassment. She could not lean forward in front of all those people and pick the butterfly up in her hand. They would think her silly. It was out of the question. The sunburnt man, evidently struck with the concentration of Dora's gaze, bent down and fumbled with his boot laces. Both seemed securely tied. He shifted his feet, narrowly missing the butterfly which was now walking into the open on the carriage floor.

"Excuse me," said Dora. She knelt down and gently scooped the creature into the palm of her hand, and covered it over with her other hand. She could feel it fluttering inside. Everyone stared. Dora blushed violently. Toby and his friend were looking at her in a friendly surprised way. Whatever should she do now? If she put the butterfly out of the window it would be sucked into the whirlwind of the train and killed. Yet she could not just go on holding it, it would look too idiotic. She bowed her head, pretending to examine her captive.

【解　說】

這是從英國現代女作家 Iris Murdoch (1919–) 的小說 The Bell 中選出的頭上的一段。作者生於愛爾蘭的 Dublin, 牛津大學畢業。1948 年以後在牛津教哲學。1956 年和同事 John O. Bayley 結婚。她和 John Wain 及 Kingsley Amis 諸人, 代表第二次世界大戰後英國的新文學。作者有象徵主義的作家之稱。她作品的標題多是象徵的, 以暗示作品的象徵性。當然, 稱她的作品爲象徵主義, 決不是由於使用直接的象徵, 而實另有其內容上的眞正的魅力在, 以及深入她文體中詩人的素質, 一言以蔽之, 是風格上的象徵性。她自己說,「我們要用既非形而上學的, 也非全體的, 更非宗教的感覺, 來描寫現實的超絕性 (transcendence of reality), 實有必要。」以哲學的主題使之在小說中結晶, 這便是這位閨秀作家對她寫作的主張了。Tradition and Dream 一書的著者 Walter Allen 論英國現代小說到 Murdoch 時, 說她的文體是「把詩完全融化在散文中了」。

【注　釋】

(1) Red Admiral butterfly 紅花蝴蝶。admiral 爲各種彩色蝴蝶的俗稱。(2) dusty floor 火車上骯髒的地板。(3) Every other thought left her. 把別的事全都忘了。所有的別種想法都從她的頭腦中離開了。意即一心一意地想着那紅花蝴蝶的事。(4) dangerously close to the passengers' feet 很危險地接近火車上來往旅客的脚, 意即幾乎要被人踏死。(5) held her breath 屏息;嚇得不敢出氣。(6) She ought to do something. 她應該有所作爲。(7) But what? 但要做點什麼呢? (8) flushed with 因……而臉發紅。(9) indecision and embarrassment 猶豫不決和侷促不安。(10) lean forward 彎下身去; 傾身向

前。(11) in front of 在……的眼前。(12) They would think her silly. 別人會以爲她太孩子氣了。(13) out of the question = impossible 不可能。(14) The sunburnt man 面孔被太陽晒黑了的人。(15) evidently struck with 顯然是由……而想起。(16) fumbled with his boot laces 去摸索他的皮鞋帶子。(17) securely tied 繫得很緊。(18) shifted 移動了。(19) narrowly missing the butterfly 幾乎踏到了那蝴蝶。miss 相差。逃過。(20) walking into the open 走到空敞的地方來。(21) gently scooped the creature into the palm of her hand 溫柔地把那蝴蝶引到她的手板心裏來了。scoop 汲取；舀取。(22) could feel it fluttering inside 可以感覺得到蝴蝶在她手中拍翅。(23) in a friendly surprised way 以友善的驚異態度。(24) whatever should she do now? 她現在到底要怎樣辦才好呢？(25) be sucked into the whirlwind of the train and killed 被火車開動時的旋風吸轉進去而被壓死。(26) it would look too idiotic 那看來太傻氣了。(27) pretending to examine her captive 假裝着來細看她手中的蝴蝶。captive 俘虜；捕獲物。

【譯　例】

正在那時，朵娜注意到了，一隻紅花蝴蝶，在對面座位底下積滿灰塵的地板上走動着。她一意地想着那隻蝴蝶，把別的事情全都忘了。她很擔心地守望着它。它稍稍拍了一下翅膀，開始向着對面的窗口移動，很危險地靠近來往旅客們的脚下了。朵娜緊張得屏息望着。她眞該想個辦法去救救它才好。但要她想什麼辦法呢？她爲了自己的猶豫不決和侷促不安，而感到臉紅了。她不能够在所有的乘客面前，彎下身去，拾起那隻蝴蝶，放到她手上來的呀。她要那樣做的話，別人就會認爲她太孩子氣了。這絕對辦不到。那個面孔被太陽晒黑了的人，顯然是由朵娜的集中凝視而想起，遂彎下腰去摸摸他的皮鞋帶子。兩脚好像都繫得緊緊的。他移動了他的脚，險些兒把那隻蝴蝶給踏死了，因爲它正走向車廂地板上的空敞的地方來。

「對不起，」朵娜說。她隨卽跪了下去，輕輕地把那隻蝴蝶舀入她的手板心來，然後又用另外一隻手把它蓋上了。她可以感覺得到蝴蝶在裏面鼓翼。人人都在望着她。朵娜羞得滿臉緋紅。托比和他的朋友，用一種友好的驚奇態度，也在望着她。現在她到底要怎樣辦呢？如果她把它丢出車窗外面去，它便要被火車的旋風轉入而壓死的。可是她却不能老是用兩手來捧着它呀。那看來未免太傻氣了。她低下頭去，假裝着來細看她的捕獲物似的。

(10)

Annette felt always that she was travelling at a speed which was not her own. Going to or from her parents on one of her innumerable journeys, her train would stop sometimes between stations, revealing suddenly the silence of the mountains. Then Annette would look at the grass beside the railway and see its green detail as it swayed in the breeze. In the silence the grass would seem very close to her;and she would stun herself with the thought that the grass was really there, a few feet away, and that it was possible for her to step out, and to lie down in it, and let the train go on without her. Or else, travelling towards evening, as the lights were coming on in the houses, she would see the cyclist at the level-crossing, his face preoccupied and remote, and think that when the train had passed and the gates opened he would go on his way and by the time he reached his house she would be passing another frontier. But she never got off the train to lie down in the grass, nor did she ever leave it, high up in the mountains, at the small staton that was not mentioned in the time-table, where the train unexpectedly halted and where the little hotel, whose name she could read so plainly, waited with its doors open. She could not break the spell and cross the barrier into what seemed to her at such moments to be her own world. She stayed on the train until it reached the terminus, and the chauffeur came to take her luggage to the car and Nicholas came bounding into the carriage, filling her with both sadness and relief at the ending of the journey. But the world of the chambermaid and the cyclist and the little strange hotel continued to exist, haunting and puzzling her with a dream of something slow and quiet from which she w　forever shut away.

【解　說】

這還是選的 Murdoch 的作品 The Flight from the Enchanter 中的一段，也和前一篇一樣地是描寫火車旅行的。不過是回想過去火車旅行的體驗，富於

哲學意味，且具象徵的風格。

【注 釋】

(1) always 通常放在 felt 的前面，在本句中放在後面是修飾往後的子句的。又 always 和進行式動詞連用時，表示動作的反復。(2) at a speed 用一種速度。at a speed of 40 miles an hour 用每小時四十哩的速度。(3) which was not her own 不是她自己的；非她自己控制的。(4) Going to or from her parents 到父母家裏去或從父母家裏出來。(5) on one of her innumerable journeys 在她數不清的旅途上，每次。(6) her train would stop sometimes between stations 她坐的火車有時總不免要在車站與車站的中間停下來。這個 would 是回想的，表過去的習慣。下同。(7) the silence of the mountains 有深山中那般寂靜。(8) would look at the grass beside the railway 總要去看看鐵路旁邊的青草。(9) its green detail 綠的草尖(細小的部分)。(10) swayed 搖擺。(11) very close to=very near to 很靠近。(12) stun herself 使她自己昏暈；使目瞪口呆，如 We were stunned by the sudden news. 我們聽到這突然其來的消息而爲之目瞪口呆。stun=make senseless by a blow; confuse the mind of. (13) in it=in the grass. (14) let the train go on without her 她沒有上車去，讓火車開走。(15) towards evening 天將暮的時候。(16) the lights were coming on in the houses 萬家燈火。(17) cyclist 坐脚踏車的人。(18) level-crossing 平面交叉，在此指鐵路上的平交道。美國說 grade crossing. (19) preoccupied and remote 心不在焉的狀態。(20) the gates 平交道因火車經過而關閉的柵欄。(21) he would go on his way 句中的 would 爲普通的假定語氣。下面的 she would be passing 的 would 用法同。(22) by the time 到那時。(23) another frontier 另外一個國境(因 Annette 現正在歐洲大陸旅行)。(24) got off 下(車)或下(馬)。(25) nor did she ever leave it=and she never left it. (26) not mentioned in the time-table 火車時間表上沒有載名的(小車站)。(27) halted 停下來。(28) whose name she could read so plainly 那小旅館的名字很明顯地她可以辨認得出來。(29) waited with its doors open 打開門在等待着她。(30) break the spell 破除符咒；突破魔力。spell 是作者喜歡用的字眼，尤其是在這部小說中，可說是表現主題的 key-word 呢。(31) cross the barrier 越過障礙。(32) at such moments 在這種時候。(33) to be her own world 完全屬於自己的世界。(34) terminus

終站。在美國說 terminal. (35) the chauffeur 汽車夫。指私人僱用的司機。(36) luggage 行李。在美國說 baggage. (37) Nicholas 是 Annette 的哥哥。(38) came bounding into the carriage 跳進車廂裏來。(39) filling her with 使她充滿着……的感觸。(40) both sadness and relief 既憂愁又安慰。(41) the chambermaid 在本節前所回想的人物。指兒時的女用人。(42) haunting 時常浮現於腦海中。(43) puzzling her with 用……使她迷惑。(44) dream of something slow and quiet 悠然靜止的夢。(45) from which she was forever shut away 她永遠被關在夢的外面。

【譯　　例】

安吶特覺得她老是以非自己控制的速率在旅行着。從父母跟前出來，或回到父母跟前去，在數不清的旅程上，每次她坐的火車，有時總不免要在車站與車站的中途停下來，突然顯示出有深山中一般的寂靜。那時，安吶特總要去看看鐵路旁邊的青草，看那些綠的草尖在微風中搖擺的樣子。在這種寂靜中，那青草會變得好像很靠近她似的；她會使自己昏眩地以爲那青草果眞在那兒，離開她不過兩三呎遠吧了。她又以爲她是可以走出去的，走去躺下在青草中，讓火車沒有她坐在上面自個兒開走。要不然的話，當萬家燈火近黃昏的時候坐在火車上，她就會看到在平交道上那騎脚踏車的人，面孔上顯得心不在焉的樣子，她想到當火車一經過，平交道的柵門打開時，那人就會繼續上路，等到他回到家裏的時候，她乘的火車恐怕又在經過歐洲的另外一個國境了。但是她實際並沒有下車去躺下在青草中，那怕是當火車走向高高的山路，在火車時間表上都沒有名字的小站上意外地停下來，那兒的小旅館，它的名字都看得淸淸楚楚，正敞開大門在等待着她，而她也從來沒有離開過火車一步。她不能破除符咒，越過障礙進入在那種時候好像是她自己的世界裏去。她只能留在火車上，直到它開到終站爲止。於是汽車夫來替她把行李搬上汽車去，而她的哥哥尼可拉一下就跳進車廂裏來了。到了旅程的終點，她滿懷憂愁而又安慰，心緒頗爲不寧。但是包含那個兒時的女僕，那個騎脚踏車的人，以及那個奇怪的小旅舍等等的世界，老是歷歷在目，不能忘懷，時常浮現於腦海中，變成一個悠然靜止的夢境，使她永遠被關在它的外面，深感迷惑。

(11)

I am always drawn back to places where I have lived, the houses and their neighbourhoods. For instance, there is a brownstone in the

East Seventies where, during the early years of the war, I had my first New York apartment. It was one room crowded with attic furniture, a sofa and fat chairs upholstered in that itchy, particular red velvet that one associates with hot days on a train. The walls were stucco, and a colour rather like tobacco-spit. Everywhere, in the bathroom too, there were prints of Roman ruins freckled brown with age. The single window looked out on a fire escape. Even so, my spirits heightened whenever I felt in my pocket the key to this apartment; with all its gloom, it still was a place of my own, the first, and my books were there, and jars of pencils to sharpen, everything I needed, so I felt, to become the writer I wanted to be.

It never occurred to me in those days to write about Holly Golightly, and probably it would not now except for a conversation I had with Joe Bell that set the whole memory of her in motion again.

Holly Golightly had been a tenant in the old brownstone; she'd occupied the apartment below mine. As for Joe Bell, he ran a bar around the corner on Lexington Avenue; he still does. Both Holly and I used to go there six, seven times a day, not for a drink, not always, but to make telephone calls: during the war a private telephone was hard to come by. Moreover, Joe Bell was good about taking messages, which in Holly's case was no small favour, for she had a tremendous many.

【解　說】

美國現代小說家 Truman Capote (1924–) 生於 New Orleans, 因父母離婚的關係, 少年時代在孤獨中度過。受了中學程度的教育, 十九歲時寫的一個短篇, 獲得了 *O Henry* 文學獎金。二十三歲時發表 *Other Voices, Other Rooms* (1948), 一舉成名, 而登上了美國的文壇。現在不過四十多歲的人, 已成爲美國文學界的大作家了。他所描寫的感傷性和幻想界的異常的心理, 正是第二次世界大戰後這一代的特徵。作品多以南部農村爲背景, 人物則爲這時代的少年少女。本文採自他在 1958 年發表的短篇集 Breakfast at Tiffany's 主要是寫 Manhattan 的妓女。

【注　　釋】

(1) drawn back 懷想;回想。(2) places where I have lived 我曾住過的地方。(3) the houses and their neighbourhoods 那些房屋和鄰近的地區。上說住過的地方是一般的說法,現在具體地說出房屋來,下面還要更明確地說紐約的公寓。(4) a brownstone 一幢用紅褐色沙岩造的房子。brownstone 爲用於建築的紅褐色沙岩。(5) the East Seventies 東七十街一帶地區。紐約以第五街爲中心,分東西地區。(6) the war 指第二次世界大戰。(7) my first New York apartment 我第一次住的紐約的公寓。(8) attic furniture 簡單的傢具。attic =simple. 據 *Random House Dictionary* 說 Attic (adj. often lower case) 意爲 displaying simple elegance. 這裏只概說傢具,下面便具體地細說 sofa, chair 的件名。(9) fat chair 臃腫;寬大的椅子。(10) upholster 爲椅子裝上椅套。(11) itchy 令人發癢的 (12) associate with 聯想到。(13) stucco (粉飾牆壁的) 灰泥。a stucco house 粉刷灰泥或水泥的房子。The walls were stucco 牆上塗的灰泥。(14) tobacco-spit 煙草的汁。(15) Everywhere in the bathroom too 先說「所有的地方」是概括的,隨即又細別說「浴室」,成爲作者一慣的作風。(16) prints of Roman ruins 羅馬廢墟的版畫。(17) freckled brown with age 因年深月久而生出褐色的斑點來了。(18) looked out on 朝向。(19) fire escape 太平梯;避火梯。爲發生火警時便於逃出屋子去的設備。(20) my spirits heightened 精神煥發。(21) gloom 陰鬱;幽暗。(22) jars of pencils 插在鉛筆筒中的鉛筆。(23) It never occurred to me...to write about 我決沒有想到要來寫些關於……的事。(24) and probably it would not now 大概現在也不會想到要寫的。(25) except for a conversation with 如果不是和……談話。(26) that set the whole memory of her in motion again 那談話使得我對她的記憶又重新活動起來。(27) tenant 房客。(28) ran a bar 經營一個酒吧。(29) Lexington Avenue 紐約第三街和 Park 街之間的一條大路。(30) still does 現在還經營着。(31) not for a drink 不是去喝酒。(32) not always (for a drink) 並不一定(是去喝酒)。(33) make telephone calls 去打電話。(34) a private telephone was hard to come by 私人電話難於獲得。come by 獲得。例如 He seemed to have come by a large fund of knowledge. 他所獲得的知識似乎很豐富。(35) taking messages 聽取消息。(36) no small favour 大可感謝。(37) for she had a tremendous many 因爲她的電話多得可怕。

【譯 例】

我老是要回想到我曾住過的地方，那些屋子和鄰近一帶。例如，在東七十街地區內的一幢用紅褐色沙岩造的房子，在戰爭的初期，我第一次在紐約租下那公寓來住。那是一間房，裏面塞滿了簡單的傢具，一張沙發和一些臃腫的椅子，椅套是用令人發癢的特別紅的天鵝絨做的，使人聯想到暑天坐火車的味道。牆壁上是塗的灰泥，那顏色就像煙草的汁。屋子內到處，連浴室都不例外，掛着羅馬廢墟的版畫，因年深月久都生出褐色的斑點來了。唯一的窗口是向一個太平梯子開着的。甚至如此，每次當我把手伸進口袋去摸出我這公寓的開門鑰匙時，我都感到非常高興。那怕是幽暗陰森，這總是我自己的家，第一，我的書都在這裏，還有一筒子待削的鉛筆，所以我覺得如我所指望的做一個作家，我所需要的一切，這兒都有了。

在那些日子裏，我從來沒有想到要寫點關於哈利·歌萊特里的事，大概我現在也不會想到要寫的，如果不是和喬·白爾一席話，使我重又鈎起了對她的記憶的話。

哈利·歌萊特里也是那幢紅褐色沙岩建造的公寓中的房客。她就住在我底下一層樓。至於談到喬·白爾，他是在雷新頓大道的轉角上開一家酒吧的，那店子現在還在。哈利和我兩個人一天要到他那兒去上六七次，不是去喝酒，並不一定是去喝酒，而是去打電話。在戰時私人是很難獲得電話的呀。加之，喬·白爾很好，他不憚煩地替我們接電話，在哈利的場合十分可感，因爲她的電話多得可怕呢。

(12)

That Monday in October 1943. A beautiful day with the buoyancy of a bird. To start, we had Manhattans at Joe Bell's. Later, we wandered towards Fifth Avenue, where there was a parade. We ate lunch at the cafeteria in the park. Afterwards, avoiding the zoo (Holly said she couldn't bear to see anything in a cage), we giggled, ran, sang along the paths towards the old wooden boathouse, now gone. Leaves floated on the lake; on the shore, a parkman was fanning a bonfire of them......

Passing a Woolworth's, she gripped my arm: "Let's steal something," she said, pulling me into the store, where at once there seemed a pressure of eyes, as though we were already under suspicion. "Come on. Don't be chicken." She scouted a counter piled with paper pum-

pkins and Hallowe'en masks. The saleslady was occupied with a group of nuns who were trying on masks. Holly picked up a mask and slipped it over her face; she chose another and put it on mine; then she took my hand and we walked away. It was as simple as that. Outside, we ran a few blocks, I think to make it more dramatic; but also because, as I'd discovered, successful theft exhilarates. I wondered if she'd often stolen. "I used to," she said. "I mean I had to. If I wanted anything. But I still do it every now and then, sort of to keep my hand in."

【解　說】

這篇還是從美國現代作家 Capote 的 Breakfast at Tiffany's 中選的。前面的文章是描寫小說中的主人公，在紐約住公寓的情形。尾上點出小說中的女主人公，但沒有對她加以描寫。本文專寫這位想當作家的主人公，和女主人公同遊的一幕，並繪出下流社會女子的行爲，被迫非盜竊不可，而且爲要養成熟練的手法，對此勾當表示不敢荒廢。

【注　釋】

(1) with the buoyancy of a bird 具有小鳥的快樂（似的美麗的一日）。(2) To start 開始。(3) Manhattans 曼哈坦雞尾酒。（爲威士忌和艾酒混合而成的）。(4) Fifth Avenne 紐約鬧市中向南北伸展的大路。(5) parade 整隊遊行。(6) cafeteria 自助餐館。(7) park 指紐約最大的 Central Park. (8) the zoo 中央公園中的小動物園。(9) couldn't bear to see 看了受不了；不忍看。(10) giggled 傻笑，格格地笑。(11) boathouse 船庫；艇屋(原爲貯藏小舟之屋，現多具有供人小憩的設備)。(12) now gone 現在早已不存在了。(13) bonfire of them 焚燒落葉。(14) Woolworth's 英美各地都開有廉價商店。(15) pulling me into the store 把我拉到伍爾渥斯店裏去。(16) pressure of eyes 人眼的壓力，意即受人監視。(17) under suspicion 遭受嫌疑。(18) Don't be chicken 不要怕。chicken=(Slang) cowardly. (19) scout 偵察。(20) paper pum-pkins 紙做的南瓜。爲萬聖節前夕的裝飾用。(21) Hallowe'en masks 萬聖節(All Saints' Day) 前夕(十月三十一日)假裝用的面具。(22) saleslady 女店員。(23) who were trying on masks 她們正在把面具試戴着看。(24) It was as

simple as that. 就是那樣簡單的。(25) outside, we ran a few blocks. 從店子走出街上來，我們一氣地跑了幾條街。block 四圍有街圍住的一連房屋。(26) to make it more dramatic 使之更有戲劇性。(27) because successful theft exhilarates 因爲盜竊成功，特別使人興奮。exhilarates 使高興；使快活；使興奮。在此用的現在時態，表示一般的眞象。(28) wonder if 急想知道是不是。(29) used to 表過去的習慣。(30) had to 表過去的必要。(31) now and then 時常。(32) sort of 稍稍地；有幾分 (=somewhat). (33) to keep my hand in 在幹着；保持熟練。如 He plays his violin every day to keep his hand in. 他每天拉小提琴以保持熟練。

【譯　例】

一九四三年十月的那個禮拜一，是小鳥飛舞，風光明媚的一天。一開頭我們就在番·白爾的酒吧裏，喝了曼哈坦鷄尾酒。隨後，我們在第五街一帶閒蕩着，那兒正有人在列隊遊行。我們走到中央公園裏的自助餐廳去吃了一頓午餐。後來，爲避免動物園（哈利說她不能忍受看到任何東西被關在籠子裏），我們格格地笑，又跑又唱，沿着小路，走向那現已不存在的古老的木造船庫去。落葉漂滿一湖；在湖畔有一個園丁正在焚燒落葉……

走過一家伍爾渥斯的百貨商店，她緊抓住我的手臂：『我們去偷點什麼吧，』她說着，就把我拉進那商店去了。一走進去我馬上就感覺到衆目睽睽好像都在監視着我們，儼然我們已經受到嫌疑了。『來呀。不要這樣膽怯。』她偵察了一個堆滿了紙做的南瓜和萬聖節前夕用的假面具的櫃枱。那女店員正在忙於招待一羣在試戴着假面具的尼姑顧主。哈利選了一個面具自己戴在面上；她又另外選了一個給我戴上；於是她牽了我的手，我們便走出那商店來了。那就是這樣簡單的呀。出了店門一走上街，我們一氣跑了幾條街，我認爲這樣可以使之更帶戲劇性呢。可是，如我後來所發現的，也是爲着盜竊的成功而特別高興吧。我問她是不是常偷東西。她回答說。『我以前是常偷的，是迫不得已，非偷不可呀。當我想要點什麼的時候。但是，現在我還是時常要這樣來一下，爲保持熟練起見。』

(13)

It must be remembered that the oppressed and the oppressor are bound together within the same society; they accept the same criteria, they share the same beliefs, they both alike depend on the same

reality. Within this cage it is romantic, more meaningless, to speak of a "new" society as the desire of the oppressed, for that shivering dependence on the props of reality which he shares with the *Herrenvolk* makes a truly "new" society impossible to conceive. What is meant by a new society is one in which inequalities will disappear, in which vengeance will be exacted; either there will be no oppressed at all, or the oppressed and the oppressor will change places. But, finally, as it seems to me, what the rejected desire is, is an elevation of status, acceptance within the present community. Thus, the African, exile, pagan, hurried off the auction block and into the fields, fell on his knees before that God in Whom he must now believe; who had made him, but not in his image. This tableau, this impossibility, is the heritage of the Negro in America: *Wash me*, cried the slave to his Maker, *and I shall be whiter, whiter than snow*! For black is the color of evil; only the robes of the saved are white......

【解　　說】

作者 James Baldwin (1924-　) 是美國現代黑人作家。本文採自他的散文集 *Notes of a Native Son.* 他的代表作爲 *Go Tell It on the Mountain* 一部長篇小說。他生於紐約，曾往歐洲旅行，在法國住了一個時期，現住紐約有名的 Greenwich Village. 他寫作的主題，無論是在小說或戲劇或評論或散文中都是一貫的爲黑人請命。簡單地說，就是「美國的黑人有何身分？」或「做美國的黑人有何意義？」他一直在探索美國黑人的眞相，美國黑人的 specialness (特色)。他說美國的民主是只存在於白人社會的。這個社會和過去奴隸制社會並沒有兩樣。要到眞正的出現新的社會，奴隸才能翻身。現在美國黑人的祖先，爲人奴役，不但失去自由，也忘記了故國的話語，失去了本來的姓名，肉體受到蹂躪，終至於喪失了自己，這便是美國黑人的歷史。但有些自甘墮落的美國黑人，早喪失了他的人格，只希望他的皮膚能變白，頭髮能變直，這種人終將成爲「看不見的人」，旣不能加入白人的緣伍，又自動脫離了黑人的行列，早已無處可以存在了。

【注　　釋】

(1) the oppressed and the oppressor 受別人壓迫的人和壓迫別人的人。

(2) criteria 判斷的準繩。字尾的〔a〕表複數，單數爲〔on〕(criterion)，此爲希臘字的變化，他例如 phenomenon, phenomena (現象)。(3) cage 牢籠，指現實的社會。(4) romantic 空想的。(5) more meaningless 沒有比這更無意義的了。(6) that shivering dependence 戰戰兢兢來依附的。(7) the props of reality 叫做現實的那個支柱。(8) Herrenvolk (德文) 支配民族(納粹主義的德國民族自誇之辭)。Herren 爲 Herr (=lord, master) 的複數形。volk=people. (9) inequalities 不平等。(10) vengeance 復仇；報仇。如向某人報仇則說 take vengeance upon a person, (11) exact 動詞，意爲堅持地要求；必要。(12) change places 調換地位。(13) the rejected desire 不被接受的要求；被拒絕的請求。(14) elevation of status, acceptance within the present community 身分地位的提高，被白人社會所接受。指現代美國黑人的公民權運動而言。(15) exile 被放逐的人；流亡者。(16) pagan 異教徒。非基督徒。(17) auction block 奴隸拍賣台。(18) fields 自由的原野。(19) that God 指基督教的上帝。(20) in Whom he must now believe 現在他必須信奉的，說黑人在他的故國非洲時，原是信的土族宗教，自從被賣爲美國人的奴隸以後就被迫改信基督教。(21) who had made him but not in His image 上帝造人，但沒有照着神的形像來造他。舊約全書創世紀第一章第二十七節上說，「上帝就照着自己的形像造人，乃是照着他的形像造男造女」。(22) this tableau 這種光景。參考驚歎詞的 Tableau! 試想那種光景！(23) this impossibility 這種不可能的事。人世間辦不到的事。(24) heritage 祖先遺留下來的事物。(25) his Maker 他的造物主，卽上帝。(26) black is the color of evil 黑是罪惡的顏色。(27) the robes of the saved 被救者的外衣。

【譯　　例】

我們必須記住受壓迫者和壓迫者是在同一個社會中被束縛在一起的。他們接受同樣的準繩；共有同樣的信仰；他們彼此相像地都依賴同樣的現實。在這種現實的樊籠中，作爲受壓迫者的要求，來說什麼「新的」社會，簡直是幻想，再沒有什麼比這更無意義的了。因爲受壓迫者和支配民族雙方都要戰戰兢兢地依附在他們共有的現實支柱上，這就使人不可能去想像一個眞正的「新的」社會了。新的社會的含義是其中不平等的現象完全消失，報仇的意義必須實現；要麼是受壓迫者已不存在，要麼是受壓迫者和壓迫者調換地位。但是結局，我覺得那不能接受的要求，就是黑人身分地位的提高，被白人社會所接納的那回事。這樣一來，從奴隸拍賣台急急

逃向自由的原野去的非洲人，流亡者，異教徒，就要跪下在他現在不得不信奉的上帝的前面去了。上帝造人，但沒有照着祂的形像來造他。試想這種光景，這種決辦不到的事，正是在美國的黑人的祖先所遺留下來的奴性：洗淨我吧，那奴隸對他的造物主叫出來，那樣我就可以更白，比雪還要白呀！因爲黑是罪惡的顏色；只有那些得救者的外衣才是白的……。

(14)

I was naked, clean if sweating, just as I had come. Something seemed to hurry me through space. I heard that thunder again, on the remotest horizon, guns perhaps, something; above Java or palms on the Laccadives, in the profoundest sunlit sea. Something hurried me through memory, too, but I can't pause to remember, for a guilt past memory or dreaming, much darker, impels me on. I pray but my prayer climbs up like a broken wisp of smoke: *oh my Lord, I am dying*, is all I know, and *oh my father, oh my darling*, longingly, lonesomely, I fly into your arms! *Peyton you must be proper nice girls don't. Peyton.* Me? Myself all shattered, this lovely shell? Perhaps I shall rise at another time, though I lie down in darkness and have my light in ashes. I turn in the room, see them coming across the tiles, dimly prancing, fluffing up their wings. I think: my poor flightless birds, have you suffered without soaring on this earth? Come then and fly. And they move on past me through the darkening sands, awkward and gentle, rustling their feathers: come then and fly. And so it happens treading past to touch my boiling skin—one whisper of feathers is all—and so I see them go—oh my Christ!—one by one ascending my flightless birds through the suffocating night, toward paradise. I am dying, Bunny, dying.

【解　說】

本文作者 William Styron (1925-　) 爲美國小說家，以巧於遣詞用字著稱，生於美國 Virginia 州的 Newport News，出身 Duke 大學，又在 New York's New School 學習文藝寫作，受教於 H. Hydn 敎授。1951年發表 Lie Down in

Darkness 一部小說，立刻引起文壇的注意。隨又在1953年發表 The Long March 1960年發表 Set This House on Fire, 1967年發表 The Confessions of Nat Turner，作品不多，但已足够表現作者的文才了。他的文筆，有時幽靜，有時熱情，有時素樸，頗多變化。總說起來，他不是一個惜墨如金的作家，他有豐富的想像力，筆下驅遣雲煙，詞彙多如潮湧。他把文字所有的象徵的及比喻的機能，發揮到最高度，且能將字與字，句與句，人物與人物，形成微妙的對比，以浮雕出人心上的種種皺紋。他使用的詞句雖很明朗，但決無地域的及時代的限制；他放眼乾坤，以整個的人生爲對象，寫出世間的混亂，不安，絕望，愛惰，僞善，復仇，背信，不平，犯罪，同情，憐憫種種現象。他的作風在表現上學 T. Wolfe, 在主題上學 W. Faulkner, 在手法上學 J. Joyce. 有人說藝術家是使得語言的絢爛幻影背後閃耀的眞實，浮現出來的魔術師。本文作者就够得上稱爲這樣的「語言的魔術師」了。他也算是當代一流的 storyteller, 他的成功的作品，匠心獨運，有如織錦，可算是高度的藝術品。本文採自 Lie Down in Darkness 第七部。他這部處女作「躺下在黑暗中」，在出版的第二年便獲得美國藝術院的獎金。故事描述美國南部一個富人家的罪惡與墮落，以及衰敗的悲劇。那個不能愛他妻子的丈夫米爾頓，不被丈夫所愛的孤獨而嚴格的妻子海倫，生來殘廢但受母親溺愛的白痴。長女莫蒂，戀父情結 (Electra Complex) 的次女蓓頓，及其他米爾頓的情婦朶利，清教的神父凱亞里，和黑人的一家，這許多人物之間的愛與恨，同情與背信，報仇與死亡等等，都以次女蓓頓爲中心而展開來。這部奇異的故事，展開的實際時間，不過五六小時的當中所發生的事情，作者用登場人物的回想方式，各人各樣的意識流，把這一富人家三十多年的過去，全都表現出來了。

現在選用的這一段是最後的部分，即蓓頓從家庭中逃出來，大學也退學了，經過了許多的愛人之後，終於和一個猶太裔的無名畫家哈利結了婚，得到了一個愛的家庭，可是她因 Electra Complex 的關係，仍然搞不好，她只要被愛，却不知什麼是愛。丈夫無能爲力，只好和她分居蓓頓再三再四去懇求他回家，最後的希望落空之後，她已經酒精中毒，精神分裂，在神經失常之中，她從紐約的一座摩天樓的頂上跳下自殺了。現在採用的這一段，便是她自殺前的心理狀態，實在描寫得很巧妙，值得我們玩味。

【注　釋】

(1) clean if sweating 即令滿身的汗，也是很乾淨的。(2) had come = had come into the world = had been born. 出世。(3) guns perhaps, 也許不是

雷聲，而是砲聲。(4) Java 爪哇。(5) the Laccadives 拉卡代夫羣島。此爲亞拉伯海中的羣島名，位於印度西南海岸。(6) the profoundest sunlit sea 陽光燦爛的海域。(7) I can't pause to remember 我不能停下來從容回想。(8) a guilt 犯罪的意識。指蓓頓過去生活中種種行爲而產生的心理狀態，例如因對姊姊未細心照顧以致發生事故而使她送命，及對丈夫背信等等。(9) past memory or dreaming 越過記憶或夢想。(10) much darker 修飾前面 a guilt 的。(11) impels me on 將我向前推進。(12) a wisp of smoke 一縷煙。(13) oh my Lord 啊，主啊。呀，我的天呀。(14) oh my father, oh my darling. 啊，我的父親，啊，我的愛人。因爲蓓頓在家時曾無意識地對她父親懷着異性的思慕。其說出自佛洛衣德的精神分析學。兒子對母親，便稱 Oedipus complex. (15) Peyton you must be proper nice girls don't. Peyton.「蓓頓，你一定要學得高尚些，上等女孩子不是這樣的，蓓頓。」蓓頓的母親看見她的次女行爲有欠檢點，常是這樣告誡她。蓓頓在酒精中毒以後，累累地和丈夫以外的男子亂來，現在心中不免發生犯罪的意識。(16) Me? Myself all shattered, this lovely shell? 是我嗎？是完全被打得粉碎的這個我，這個可愛的貝殼？前後兩句是同格的比喻。想到天眞的兒童時代在海濱拾貝殼，童心與貝殼形成雙重的影象，再拿來和現在的殘花敗柳，破碎之身對比。(17) Perhaps I shall rise at another time, though I lie down in darkness and have my light in ashes. 雖則我現在躺下在黑暗中，而到骨灰中去求我的光明，也許將來有一天我會甦醒過來的。作者在書前的題詞 (epigraph) 中曾用了這樣的詞句。Sir Thomas Browne (1605-1682) 曾著有「壺葬論」(Urne-buriall)，對生死問題有所闡述，立論警策，作者即從該書引用了上述的文句，又拿來用作小說的題名。壺葬論中說到生死輪迴的思想，darkness 和 light 即象徵死生。(18) them 指小鳥。(19) coming across the tiles 從瓦上過來。(20) prancing 跳躍着。(21) fluffing up their wings 使翼翅鬆散。(22) my poor flightless birds 我可憐的不能飛的小鳥啊。蓓頓自喻的話，表示她不能自由地飛翔，加上耽飲與濫交的關係，而有犯罪之感，以及憧憬自由而不可得的焦躁之感，那種精神錯亂的不安狀態，用小鳥拍翅膀來形容，頗爲巧妙傳神。(23) darkening sands 逐漸變得黑暗了的沙灘。(24) treading past 走過。(25) my boiling skin 我那沸騰燃熱的皮膚。(26) one whisper of feathers 羽毛一度作沙沙聲。(27) suffocating night 悶熱的夜晚。(28) Bunny 原來是對兔子或松鼠的愛稱，在此爲蓓頓叫她父親時的愛稱。

【譯　例】

我全身赤裸，雖淌着汗，但很清潔，就像我剛生下來的時候一樣。好像有什麼東西，把我向太空推去。我再度聽到遙遠的地平線上的雷聲，也許是炮聲，或是別的什麼聲音。那是在陽光燦爛的海域中的爪哇上空呢，還是在拉卡代夫羣島的棕櫚樹的上空，不得而知。又有什麼東西驅趕着我向記憶中去，但是我不能從容地來回想，因爲超過記憶或夢想，一種更黑暗的犯罪意識驅使着我向前邁進。我禱告，但我的禱詞，像一縷破碎的輕煙向天上昇去：「啊，主啊，我要死了」，這便是我所知道的一切。還有「啊，我的父親，啊；我的愛人」，滿懷渴望，孑然一身，我要飛去投入你的懷抱！「蓓頓，你一定要檢點些，好女孩子都不是這樣的。蓓頓」。是我嗎？是損毀不堪的這個我，這個可愛的貝殼？雖則我躺下在黑暗中，要到骨灰中去求取我的光明，也許有朝一日我會甦醒過來的。我在房間裏回頭一看，便看見一些小鳥鬆開着翅膀，胡裏胡塗地在跳躍着，跳過花磚來了。我想：我可憐的不能飛的小鳥啊，你們不能高飛入雲，在這地上很受了苦吧？那末，來起飛呀。於是小鳥們經過我的身邊，羽毛沙沙作響，笨拙而又溫柔地向前移動：來起飛呀。就是這樣，小鳥們偶而想要接觸到我的滾燙的皮膚，而貼近我走將過來——羽毛一度發出小聲，如是而已——隨即我看見它們飛走——啊，我的救主！——一隻一隻地我那些不能飛的小鳥，突破窒息的夜晚，向天國飛昇而去。我要死了，朋宜，就要死了。

(15)

I seemed to be walking alone at the edge of a swamp at nightfall, the light around me glimmering, crepuscular, touched with the greenish hue presaging the onslaught of a summer storm. The air was windless, still, but high in the heavens beyond the swamp thunder grumbled and heaved, and heat lightning at somber intervals blossomed against the sky. Filled with panic, I seemed to be searching for my Bible, which strangely, unaccountably I had left there, somewhere in the depths and murk of the swamp; in fear and despair I pressed my search into the oncoming night, pushing now deeper and deeper into the gloomy marshland, haunted by the ominous, stormy light and by a far-off pandemonium of thunder. Try desperately as I might, I could not find my Bible. Suddenly another sound came to my ears, this time the frightened out-

cry of voices. They were the voices of boys, hoarse and half grown and seized with terror, and now instantly I saw them: half a dozen black boys trapped neck-deep in a bog of quicksand, crying aloud for rescue as their arms waved frantically in the dim light and as they sank deeper and deeper into the mire. I seemed to stand helpless at the edge of the bog, unable to move or to speak, and while I stood there a voice echoed out of the sky, itself partaking of that remote sound of thunder.

【解　說】

本文採自美國作家 William Styron 在 1967 年發表的 The Confessions of Nat Turner 一書的 Judging Day 第一部。「挪特・頹累的懺悔」獲得 1968 年度的普立茲獎 (Pulitzer Prize)。故事說到 1831 年八月某日，在維其尼亞州的東南部地方，突然發生了美國黑奴歷史上唯一的，持續很久，頗有效果的黑人暴動爲首的挪特・頹累，是這反叛的計劃人兼指導者。他是爲黑人所尊敬的傳教師，通文墨的黑奴，受到神的指示，要把當地的白人全都殺死，可說是一個對宗教着了魔的人。於是他便帶着好幾十個黑人暴動起來，用斧頭和鎗把那地方的農場主人及其家族等近六十人完全殘殺了。幾天之後暴動被鎮壓下來，挪特被捕。作者以挪特在獄中向律師的自白爲題材，再加上豐富的想像力，而創造出一篇優美的小說來了。

現在這個斷片是指挪特被帶入法庭，在開庭的幾分鐘之間，敍述他所經歷的白日夢的一段。沼澤地的暮色，和黑人們的悲慘，以及挪特的心境等等，作者以巧妙而樸素的文筆，象徵地描繪出來，實不愧爲「語言的魔術師」。

【注　釋】

(1) swamp 沼澤。浸有水的低濕地帶，與後面出現的 marsh 同義，至於最後說的 bog 也是沼池，但無水。(2) glimmering 發微光的，例如 lights glimmering in the distance 遠處微弱的燈光。(3) crepuscular 晨光熹微的，黃昏的。crepuscular birds or insects 在晨暮之際活動的鳥或昆蟲。a crepuscular period 初期，蒙昧未開的時期。(4) touched with＝being touched with 染得有 (那種色彩)。(5) the greenish hue 略帶青色。(6) presage 預示，前兆。Some people think that a circle around the moon presages a storm. 有些人以爲月暈預示有暴風雨。(7) onslaught 猛攻。(8) heavens＝sky. 散文中

通例用複數，如 the starry heavens.（星空），大約是因爲古代的天文學認爲天有七重，上帝和天使們住在最上一重。(9) grumbled and heaved 隆隆作響，有起有伏。(10) at somber intervals 此爲作者所特有的修辭法。我們應把 at intervals（=now and then 時時）和 somber（陰沉的，幽暗的）分開來看。(11) blossomed 形容閃電有如開花。(12) Filled with panic=Being filled with panic 凡是過去分詞開頭的句子，都可以加上 being 來解釋。(13) I seemed to be......of the swamp. 描寫挪特在暴動失敗後一時找不到神的焦躁狀態，這也是象徵的表現法。(14) depths and murk 在黑暗的深處。(15) press=hasten, urge on 加速，趕快。(16) oncoming 即將來臨的。(17) haunted by 縈繞於懷；爲……所困擾。A wrongdoer is constantly haunted by the fear of discovery. 作惡者心中經常害怕被人發覺。I am haunted by regrets. 我悔恨無已。(18) pandemonium=perfect confusion 騷亂，喧鬧。大混亂的場所。原出 Milton 著 Paradise Lost，指羣鬼的宮殿。(19) Try desperately as I might. 普通"形容詞+as"=though（雖則），但此句爲"動詞+as"，用法完全不同，應譯作「儘管」，上句可譯爲「儘管我拚命去找，（我也找不到我的聖經）」。(20) outcry of voice 人聲的叫喊。(21) half grown 還沒有變成大人的聲音，還帶得有兒童的聲音。(22) seized with terror 爲恐怖所侵襲，大爲恐怖。(23) trapped neck-deep in a bog of quicksand 陷於沼地的流沙中，深入齊頸。(24) mire 泥淖，泥濘。(25) itself partaking of 和那聲音相伴。itself 是接前面的 a voice 說的。

【譯例】

我好像是在暮色中獨自一人在沼澤岸邊走着似的。那包圍着我的薄暮的微光，染得有帶青的顏色，預示着一個夏天的暴風雨就要襲來。微風不動，靜寂寂的，但在沼澤那邊高高的天上，却雷聲隆隆，由小而大，而閃電時時在陰沉的天上開出花來。我充滿着恐怖，好像是在尋找我的聖經似的，很奇怪而無法說明地，我把聖經放在沼澤的黑暗深淵中的什麼地方忘記了。在恐懼和絕望中，我加快在即將來臨的夜色中尋找，受着那惡兆的暴風雨的電光，和遼遠的吵鬧的雷聲所困擾，我現在向着陰鬱的沼澤地愈來愈深入地推進了。儘管我拚命地尋找，但怎也找不到我的聖經。突然間另外一個聲音來到我的耳中，這次却是人們恐慌的叫喊聲。那原是一羣男孩子的聲音，嘶啞而未成年的聲音，爲恐怖所襲時的聲音。現在一瞬間，我看明白他們了：那原是五六個黑孩子陷在沼地的流沙中，深及頸部，當初他們愈來愈深地沉下

到那泥淖中去時，他們在幽暗的夜色中，瘋狂地舞動手臂，高聲呼喊救命。我好像是站在那沼地的岸邊一點辦法也沒有的樣子，旣不能移動，也不能說話，而當我站在那裏的時候，突然從天上傳來一個聲音，聽去却和遠處的雷聲混在一起了。

(16)

Scurridge reached for the morning newspaper and turned to the sports page. "I fancy a bit o' bacon an' egg," he said, and sat down beside the fire and placed his pointed elbows in the centres of the two threadbare patches on the arms of his chair.

His wife threw a surly glance at the upraised newspaper. "There is no eggs," she said, and Scurridge's pale, watery blue eyes fixed on her for the first time as he lowered the paper.

"What y' mean 'there is no eggs'?"

"I mean what I say; I didn't get any." She added with sullen defiance. "I couldn't afford 'em this week. They're five-an'-six a dozen. Something's got to go—I can't buy all I should as it is."

Scurridge smacked his lips peevishly. "God! Oh! God. Are we at it again? It's one bloody thing after the other. I don't know what you do with your brass."

"I spend it on keeping you," she said. "God knows *I* get precious little out of it. Always a good table, you must have. Never anything short. Anybody 'ud think you'd never heard of the cost of living. I've told you time an' again 'at it isn't enough, but it makes no difference."

【解　說】

本文作者是英國勞動階級出身的作家 Stan Barstow (1928-　). 這是他的作品 Gamblers Never Win 當中的一節。描寫一個沉溺於賭博中的礦坑夫，在早餐時和老婆口角的情景。用活生生的現代英語表出，平易可讀。下層階級的口吻，連他們說話的聲音，都被刻劃出來。

【注　釋】

(1) reach for 伸手去取。(2) turn 翻動，轉向，如 The car turned to

the left. (汽車向左轉去了)。在自動詞 turn 後接介詞 to 時, 可作「查閱」解, 如 turn to a dictionary for guidance (參考類書)。又可作「開始工作」解, 如 He turned to stamp-collecting again. (他又開始集郵了)。此外還可以作「求助於」解, 如 I have no one but you to turn to. (我可以求助的人只有你呀)。如果把 to 作副詞用時, 即可說 It's time to turn to. (是開始工作的時候了)。(3) fancy=would like to have (想吃)。這個動詞的 fancy, 原有 take a fancy to (愛好) 的意思, 如對病人等說 Don't you fancy anything? (你想吃點什麼嗎?) (4) of, and 等字說得很輕的時候, 便成爲 o' 和 an' 了, 即是不把 f 和 d 的音說出來。(5) bacon and eggs 英國人一般做早餐吃的。(6) the fire 爐火 (無論貧富英國家庭終年都生火)。(7) his pointed elbows 他的尖肘 (形容工人的消瘦)。(8) the two threadbare patches 椅子扶手因用久破爛而加上的補綻 (形容主人的窮相)。(9) a surly glance 不高興的一瞥。(10) the upraised newspaper 雙手拿起在看的報紙。(丈夫的面孔被報紙遮住了, 她只好對那報紙投以不高興的一瞥)。(11) There is no eggs. 沒有鷄蛋了。(在口語中不管主語是單數或複數, 一概說 there is. (12) pale, watery blue eyes 無神的淺藍色的眼睛。pale=feeble 缺乏健康的氣色。watery 不是修飾 eyes 的 (watery eyes 淚汪汪的眼睛), 而是修飾 blue 的。watery blue 淺藍色。(13) for the first time 第一次 (說那賭徒的丈夫那天起身以後還是第一次來凝視他的老婆)。(14) What y' mean=What do you mean? 你是什麼意思? (15) I mean what I say. 就是我說的意思。不是和你開玩笑的, 我是認眞說的。mean 意謂, 如 What do you mean by saying that? 你那樣說是什麼意思? (16) get 買。(17) with sullen defiance 帶着憤怒的反抗。(18) They're five-an'-six a dozen. 鷄蛋賣到五先令六便士一打。five-and-six=five shillings and sixpence 口語都不說出先令和便士的字眼來。(19) Something's got to go.=something has to go. 有些事情一定得廢止才好。句中的 go 有 be abolished (廢止) 之意, 例如 Drink must go. (酒必須廢止)。口語常以 have got to 代 have to 用。(20) as it is 照現在這個樣子。(21) smack one's lips 咂嘴作響。(22) peevishly 氣惱地。(23) Are we at it again? 難道我們又要鬪嘴了嗎? at it 進行某事和進行口角等。(24) bloody 他媽的。在英國俚語中用的頗多, 只是表示強烈的感情無特殊意義。如強調否定時說的 not a bloody one (連一個都沒有)。(25) brass 口語中指 money 說的。(26) God knows I get precious little out of it. 天曉得我爲自己用的極少。句中 I 用斜體是加重語氣

說的。God knows 後接有子句時，表發誓的意思，即「皇天在上，我絕對沒有爲自己化掉多少錢」。如後面不接 that，而接 why, where, when, what 等時，God knows 意爲 Nobody knows. 又口語中將 precious 作副詞用，precious little =very little 極少。他例如 It is precious cold. (冷極了。) (27) a good table 餐食豐盛。(28) Never anything short. 從未缺少一點什麼。(不用主語和動詞，簡明有力。) (29) 'ud=would. (30) you'd=you had. (31) the cost of living 生活費。(32) time and again 再三再四。(33) 'at=that. (34) it makes no difference 沒有什麼不同，毫無效果。

【譯 例】

史卡力支伸手去拿了早報，翻開運動欄來看。「我想吃點臘肉雞蛋」，他說着在火爐旁邊坐下來，把他的兩隻尖肘擱在他坐椅扶手上那兩塊破補綻的中央。

他的老婆對那舉起的報紙投以不高興的一瞥。「沒有雞蛋了。」她說，而史卡力支放下報紙，把他那無神的淺藍眼睛第一次瞪着他老婆望了。

「你說沒有雞蛋了是什麼意思？」

「就是我說的意思，我一個蛋也沒有買呀。」她帶着惱怒的反抗補充着說了。「這個禮拜我買不起雞蛋。一打漲到五個大了。有些事情一定得停止才好。——照現在這個樣子，我想要買的東西都不能買呀。」

史卡力支氣惱地咂唇作響。「天啦！啊！天。難道我們又要鬧窮了嗎？一個問題剛解決，第二個又來了。我不曉得你的錢，是怎樣用的。」

「我用來維持你的生活呀！」，她說。「天老爺明白，我爲自己用的極少。你一定要吃得好，不能短缺一點什麼。人家以爲你從來不知道生活費要多少呀。我再三告訴過你說這點子錢是不夠的，但你老是把它當作耳邊風。」

習 題 解 答

第 一 編

漢譯英與英文句型

壹　由要素來分的造句

習 題 1

1. A sound thought dwells in a sound personality.
2. We do not live in order to eat, but we eat in order to live.
3. Stay if the work fits well, or you go away.
4. Don't falter when you speak.
5. The school year in China begins on the 1st of August and ends on the 31st of July.
6. My brother started from here the day before yesterday; and will arrive at London towards (or about) the middle of next month.
7. He may return very soon, but I cannot say for certain.
8. The cat can see in the dark.
9. The knife cuts well.
10. The work does not pay.
11. These hens have begun to lay.
12. My friend has stood by me.
13. The sun appears to move round the earth.
14. I could not see distinctly owing to the darkness.
15. Having walked about an hour, we arrived at the place.
16. When industry comes in at the window, poverty goes out of the window.
17. I do not sleep soundly, eat heartily, and my heart leaps all the time.
18. He descends from the lofty tree and goes into the dark valley.

19. The snow melts away in spring.
20. I could not have lived till today without my grandmother, and she would not survive in her later days without me. Both my grandmother and I rely on each other so as to exist in this world.

習題 2

1. We must be very careful in picking our company. One must be very careful in the choice of one's friends.
2. The Americans are fond of activity and rich in the spirit of independence. The American people are a nation that likes an active life and is full of the spirit of independence.
3. The examination questions of that university are very difficult, and it is doubtful whether I shall succeed in the entrance examination. As the examination questions of that university are very difficult, I doubt if (it is uncertain that) I shall pass the entrance examination (or not).
4. She felt a little awkward and was quite at a loss to know what to do.
5. Good medicine tastes bitter (to the mouth), but is good for a disease.
6. He stands firm in his purpose.
7. He has kept attentive through the lecture.
8. The rule does not always hold good.
9. True worth often goes unrecognized.
10. It remains to be proved.
11. He continued sullen, without speaking a word.
12. She sat thoughtful for a few minutes.
13. He appears to be aware of the fact.
14. After that they rested content.
15. The Chinese attitude is a reaction to the behaviour of the West.
16. The regions lying at the furthest extremes of the world remained entirely or virtually unknown to each other for centuries.

17. The account of his journey is an extraordinarily interesting document.
18. Few of the accounts of other travelers are as lively and informative as Marco Polo's.
19. A few words of explanation appear necessary.
20. No student who keeps abreast of the times can afford to ignore the publications of the day.

习 题 3

1. Did you attend the welcome meeting yesterday?
2. Mr. Su has successfully entered Oxford University.
3. Mr. Wang has passed the Civil Service Examination with honours.
4. If we must fight, we must fight it out.
5. They have stripped the Chinese of all their wealth in Indonesia.
6. He has provided me with everything I need.
7. He seized me by the hand and would not let me go.
8. She affected to talk to my friend, but she was really speaking at me.
9. Diligence makes up the deficiency in ability.
10. I insist that you shall come.
11. He did not work hard, and played away another year at school.
12. When I make a journey, I always take third class.
13. The audience shouted applause at the end of his speech.
14. He breathed his last at 11:10 p. m.
15. Can you swim it across the Yangtze River as that old man did?
16. I gave the poor little boy some money to buy food with.
17. She wrote me a long letter about her future.
18. We discussed the problem far into the night.
19. He admitted to her that she was right.
20. She suggested to us that we should do the whole thing over again.

习 题 4

1. Heaven has given man only the gift of speech.

2. He offered her his seat.
3. His father left him a large fortune.
4. I paid him the money.
5. I will read you the letter.
6. Will you sing me a Chinese song?
7. I envy you your good fortune.
8. I paid him a high compliment.
9. I wish you joy of your success.
10. I am sorry to give you so much trouble.
11. They grudged me even my pittance.
12. I hope you will not refuse me the favour.
13. Passengers are allowed 30 lbs of luggage.
14. An old Chinese proverb says that too much learning does not become a woman.
15. They have no sense of the duty which they owe their country.
16. She would be glad to die, but for the love she bears her child.
17. I do not envy the rich their wealth which causes them so much anxiety.
18. To do him justice, he has always been a good husband and a good father.
19. The rascal has at last been caught, after long giving the police the slip.
20. I beg you will do me the honour of accepting the trifling present.

習題 5

1. The people of the U. S. A. would never elect a colored man president.
2. They elected Mr. Wang a councilman.
3. Outdoor exercise makes us strong in mind and body.
4. People think him honest, but he is really an impostor.
5. I make it a rule to take an hour's walk after supper.
6. He left the room unobserved.

7. I had my license renewed for another three years.
8. We found him lying on the pavement.
9. I caught them stealing fruit from my garden.
10. We should keep our bodies and clothes clean not to be attacked by illness.
11. I call that answer impertinent.
12. I consider what he said irrelevant.
13. I found it difficult to solve that problem.
14. I deemed it prudent to keep the thing a secret.
15. Hsün Shuan esteemed it an honour to be the driver of Li Ying.
16. I look upon him as my benefactor.
17. He represents the state of the country as deplorable.
18. They describe her as a fairylike beautiful woman.
19. His knowledge of English leaves nothing to be desired.
20. Learning has always been held in high esteem in our country.

貳 由構造來分的造句

習 題 6

1. The sun having set, we went home.
2. In haste, there is error.
3. I got acquainted with him two years ago.
4. Return him my best thanks for the present.
5. To return to the subject, they got married the very day.
6. Judging from appearance you will lose the man of Tsu Yu.
7. The love of money is the root of all evil.
8. He came to see me for the purpose of borrowing some money from me.
9. The allied countries are suspicious of one another.
10. Fame has nothing to do with money.
11. To the joy of his mother, he won a lot of money.
12. Having written a letter, I went out for a walk.

13. He is content with very little.
14. To get up early for three mornings is equal to one day of time.
15. Diseases enter by the mouth.
16. An inch of gold will not buy an inch of time.
17. We know men's faces, not their minds.
18. There is many a good man to be found under a shabby hat.
19. Intelligence consists in recognizing opportunity.
20. Among men who is faultless?

習題 7

1. It is getting dark and we are still a long way off our destination.
2. Give me liberty or give me death.
3. An intelligent man studies for knowledge, but a foolish man just for a diploma.
4. It is going to rain, for the barometer is falling.
5. Some families are making merry while others are suffering from poverty.
6. He comes to help me when he has plenty to do at home.
7. How can I convince him when he will not listen?
8. He kept on talking when he knew it annoyed us.
9. He paid me only two thousand dollars when he owed me five thousand.
10. Please be quiet while I am talking to you.
11. He has nothing to spend his money on, while I have no money to spend.
12. He was the only candidate; therefore, he was elected.
13. He is a most popular candidate; consequently, he will be elected.
14. I hate, whereas you merely dislike, him.
15. A man does not live a hundred years, yet he worries enough for a thousand.
16. I must give him his share, for I have promised to go halves.
17. The train started before I had got to the station.

18. He talked about peace but he brought us war.
19. I accepted his well-meant advice, and now I do not feel futile in my new life.
20. Such work may do with others, but it won't do with me.

習題 8

1. We all know that time is money.
2. I do not know whether it is true or not.
3. This is the dog that barked at me wildly yesterday.
4. I wonder if he is at home at this time of day.
5. I have not seen him since he left here last year.
6. He speaks as if he understood everything.
7. The harder you work, the sooner you will improve.
8. Since you say so, I must believe it.
9. We study in order that we may gain knowledge.
10. I open the window that I may let the moon come in.
11. He is so cunning that nobody wants to make friends with him.
12. When the leopard dies, he leaves his skin; a man, his reputation.
13. I will undertake the work, if it pays.
14. None are so deaf as those who will not listen.
15. If u are a gentleman, you must show yourself as such.
16. Strange as it may sound, I am too rich to afford it.
17. I do not envy him his wealth, which causes him so much anxiety.
18. Grief has made him what he is.
19. Time passes quickly when we are engaged in the pursuit of pleasure.
20. There can be no friendship where mutual respect is wanting.

叁 由內容來分的造句

習題 9

1. There is no art that can make a fool wise.
2. She writes home once a week.

3. He spent all his money on books (=in buying books).
4. The rich have their troubles as well as the poor.
5. There has been a lot of rain this week.
6. Now was the time for thought.
7. Here stood her sewing machine.
8. Behind him came a long stream of horse and foot.
9. Immediately the button is pressed, the mine explodes.
10. Typical is the regiment at the pigeon loft of the Army Signal Corps at Fort Monmouth.
11. Fame and wealth people like best.
12. Nothing but a little water was in the cup.
13. Seldom has there been more fuss.
14. Should he meet me, he would know me at once.
15. Hardly had he began to speak when the audience interrupted him.
16. Here we differ about this matter.
17. They had to take care of their sick and wounded.
18. He will not succeed, try he (=though he try) never so hard.
19. Happy is the man who is contented with his lot.
20. Thus spoke the orator.

習 題 10

1. What does it matter?
2. Where did you buy that stick of yours?
3. Aren't you proud of your son?
4. What is he? (=What is his occupation?)
5. What (=How much) did this book cost you?
6. Which man are you going to employ?
7. Is there anything you want which I can get for you?
8. Who is there but commits (=that does not commit) errors? (=Who is infalliable?)
9. Can any ladies swim well?
10. Has anything happened?

11. Will you have some beer? (=Please have some beer.)
12. Have you not some English books? (=You have some English books, haven't you?)
13. Can I have some wine? (=Please give me some wine.)
14. Who do you say Sally is going to be married to? (Thomas Hardy)
15. Do you know what sort of thing a castle in the air is?
16. What sort of speech shall I make tomorrow?
17. Is there a bus close by?
18. What time do you expect her back?
19. He cannot understand English while living in England for ten years?
20. Shall I get there in time if I take the 3.30 p.m. train?

習 題 11

1. Let us not do what is dishonest.
2. Let me not hear of it any more.
3. Be diligent!
4. Don't be idle!
5. Don't go away so soon.
6. Bring a chair for your uncle to sit on.
7. You let that cat alone!
8. Now, Franz, you read.
9. Do come!
10. Take it easy.
11. Do not neglect your lessons.
12. Do not rely much on the help of others.
13. Tell him it's urgent.
14. Don't talk nonsense.
15. Please come to order.
16. Don't worry.
17. Give up drinking, and your health will improve.
18. Never speak ill of others.
19. Do not read for mere pleasure as many people do.

20. Wait a moment please. I'll come at once.

習 題 12

1. How spotless the snow is!
2. What a glorious sunset this is!
3. What a pretty flower this is!
4. How late you are!
5. What a noise the engine makes!
6. What a time we have had!
7. What an ass he is!
8. What a strange thing is our brain!
9. What an impudent rascal (he is)!
10. May he have good luck!
11. What a vast number of pilgrims go to Jerusalem every year!
12. If I could only go to the concert!
13. How he snores!
14. How eloquent (he is)!
15. How happy I am to meet you here!
16. May she be happy after getting married!
17. Good-bye, my friends!
18. Hurrah! she's come.
19. Alas! I am ruined!
20. May those who love each other get married!

第　二　編

英文慣用法及其翻譯

習　題　1

1. 由正義而獲得一個名位是光榮的，不過寧取正義而犧牲名位，則更加光榮。

2. 關於學習語言，我有我自己的想法。我認爲只要學到足够我們自由閱讀，自由談論日常生活的情形就行了，研求再多的語言知識，簡直是時間的浪費。

3. 紙牌在此可能很幫了他一點忙是很難說的。

習　題　2

1. 要一個病人不成爲兇惡的人是非常困難的。

2. 大家認爲要婦女的見解高到可以對任何要求行動的事，採取廣大自由的觀點，是很不容易的。

3. 他眞是愚笨讓自己去做那不可能的事。

4. 一個男子老是單身是不好的。

5. 不得他的允許就騎走他的脚踏車，原是你不對。

6. 不接受他們的提議，他是聰明的。

習　題　3

1. 空談我們的偉大是沒有用的，除非我們致力使它偉大。

2. 他們的成功得力於敎育的地方到底有多大是値得查究的。

3. 你獨自一人住在這裏，一定很無聊賴吧。

習　題　4

1. 確實的，中國人的態度大半是對西方行爲的一種反感，所以西方必須自我檢討，而經常接受批評。

2. 希望人是正直的，但這不是因爲正直是最好的政策，而是由於更高的動機。

3. 凡是印象深刻的東西，就應該趁那最初的印象記憶猶新的時候，加以描寫，這是必須記住的一條法則。

4. 我曾聽到一個有名望的政治家說過，大部分的偉人都是因爲吃得太多而送命的。

習 題 5

1. 人病醫生窘。
2. 引吭高歌，最愛詼諧笑謔的人，並不是心情最輕鬆的。
3. 使我們大部分的人活躍的，是因爲沒有錢和需要錢。
4. 讀書只能供給心靈以知識的材料，思想才能把我們所讀的變成自己的東西。
5. 多數大公司都訓練得有叫做人事經理的專家，他們的任務就是接見可能聘僱的人員，決定取捨。
6. 他是一個翻譯者，其任務就是做一架橋樑或一條通路，以溝通作者和讀者的心靈。

習 題 6

1. 很奇怪他總是犯同樣數目的錯誤。
2. 她的父母幾乎是同時死去，那是很可怕的。
3. 他亟想知道麥伯爾說的是眞是假。

習 題 7

1. 納爾遜說，「當我想到我們所成就的事，不禁驚歎不置。」
2. 華盛頓對於措辭非常謹愼，在辯論中他從來不欺騙他的對手，或是爭取暫時的勝利。
3. 當她非常神經過敏地在等待着鈴子響的時候，他突然一下站到她的眼前來了。

習 題 8

1. 竹是最美麗又最奇特的熱帶產物之一。
2. 他讓做法官的正義壓倒做父親的慈愛，宣佈了自己的兒子有罪。

習 題 9

1. 他因工作關係，只能隔週在週末回家一次。
2. 因爲機械的關係，工廠的出品比以前便宜多了。
3. 感到肚子的饑餓，和看到日影的傾斜，使我知道我睡着了以後，太陽走過很

遠的路程了。

習 題 10

1. 當瓦丁頓離去之後，琪娣把他剛才信口隨便說的話細細想了一下。那是聽來很不舒服的，她費了多少的氣力才忍住沒有把她內心的傷痛表現出來。

2. 這是那孩子生平第一次聽到的親切的話語；那溫柔的音調和態度，奇怪地感動了那狂暴而粗野的心，一滴眼淚似的東西像一點火花在那銳利圓圓的發亮的眼睛中照耀了。

3. 他沒有一點學生的樣子，但很有礦工的神氣。(全不像學生，倒像是礦工。)

4. 戈登，你知道的，我眞算不得是一個會侍候女性的人。

習 題 11

1. 他因受失母的慘痛而促短了他的天年。

2. 母愛與其他的愛情在本質上是大有分別的。

3. 後代的人會追慕他。

4. 沒有法律上的任何理由可以將他除名的。

5. 毫不顧到在儲蓄上付出多大犧牲的那種小錢的儲蓄是不科學的，也是不實際的節儉之道。

6. 他的偉大就在他致力實行他的計劃時那種毅力上可以看得出來。

7. 失去這些奢美的趣味，就等於失去幸福。

習 題 12

1. 無論你怎樣稱讚他，他仍不免是一個殘暴的人。

2. 打倒布爾朋皇族，和那個大肥豬路易十八！

3. 他們給莎莉一條扭動屁股的藍色短裙來穿。

習 題 13

1. 這隻錶的價錢決不便宜，對我這種一個沒有錢的人來說，確是太貴了；不過照它的定價看來，也算是便宜的，因爲在效能上它是無比的。

2. 據我看來，他努力想要比平常更甚地來炫耀他的口才，無非是打算侮慢我的沉默，和在張麗達那樣具有風趣而又聰悟的女人前面顯露頭角而已。

習 題 14

1. 在敵人的炸彈密如雨下的當中，這位軍官所表現的英勇是最高級的。

2. 那些塔的高度完全是一樣的。

3. 當我第一次見到他時，他一定是差不多跟我父親同樣的年紀。

4. 落選者約五倍於當選的人。

習　題　15

1. 他自己做飯。

2. 通常一個人所說的命運，原是一張他用自己紡的紗而自己織成的網。

3. 她違背父母的意思，嫁給自己選擇的男人。

習　題　16

1. 那孩子來回地扇着，以驅逐那些嗡嗡飛舞，隨時無禮地飛近嬰孩的面孔的蒼蠅。

2. 他有投保火險的先見。

習　題　17

1. 米爾頓有屬於最高天才的普遍性。

2. 在質上最優，在量上無限，能够引導我們走向快樂的惟有教育。

習　題　18

1. 在一個人的面前是一套，在他的背後又是一套，這種作法再危險也沒有了。

2. 別的人認爲藝術的本質與其形式是兩回事。

習　題　19

1. 他和他的表兄弟同年。

2. 他旣殘酷又貪婪。

3. 達賓看去面色蒼白，態度莊嚴，而他的同志就是面孔發紅，心情愉快。

習　題　20

1. 他的小說比一百年來文人所寫的小說，更有傳諸後世的可能性。

2. 那不但是眞的，而且在大小那一點說起來，是我至今所見到的一串最好的珍珠。

習　題　21

1. 「我的朋友，你錯了，」哈爾王說；「錯得不能再錯了。」

2. 父老們歡迎我，親切得無以復加。

3. 自從我進入監獄以來，他常來看我，有時他和我談話，親切得不得了。

習 題 22

1. 正如沒有兩個字是完全同義的一樣，也沒有兩種表現法能夠正確地表示同一件事。

2. 正如化學家從實驗的結果獲得論斷一樣，學習語文的人也必須從觀察語文的實況而獲得論斷。

習 題 23

1. 人的情形和土地一樣，有什麼潛在的能力自己也不知道，正像地主有時並不知道他那土地上蘊藏着有黃金的礦苗。

2. 言語猶如陽光，愈凝縮愈強烈。

習 題 24

1. 「不對，我早已和你這樣說過了，」布隆特說。

2. 那牆約有十五呎高，十五呎厚。

3. 我們所有的街道上，兩旁都種有樹木，當街燈照耀時，就好像那麼多的星星，從枝葉間發出光來。

4. 我召集了許多玩耍的伴侶，就像一羣那樣多的螞蟻一樣勤快地工作了。

習 題 25

1. 八個在戰鬪中倒下的人，只有三個還未斷氣，而其中兩個却像死了一樣。

2. 男人應該是既勇敢而又溫柔，女人則要既溫柔而又勇敢。

3. 我因爲肚子餓了非進食不可的原故，便回到洞穴中去做飯，同時也得去照顧一下我的馬，整個上午都沒有去理會它了。

4. 美國的名歌手朵莉戴的音樂背景，是淵源於她那教風琴、鋼琴和聲樂的父親維廉的。

習 題 26

1. 人類的痛苦是不會減輕的，除非我們具有正確的思想行爲，並以堅定的決心去面對現實的世界。

2. 假如我更爲結實的話，我就早已跟隨他從窗口跳出去了。實際上，我只是按鈴把全家的人叫醒來。

習題 27

1. 難得的是在這樣一個時期出版，他的書引起了很大的注意。

2. 因爲這運動是發生於窮人本身之間的，很可能比來自上流社會的更有力量。

3. 因爲這事發生在特殊沉悶的時候，所以它比應有的更吸引了人們的注意。

習題 28

1. 他雖則年輕，他雖則貧窮，但沒有一個國王或爵爺的兒子，在學問上及得他的。

2. 儘管我們奮鬪，我們是決不能完全滿足的。

3. 即令學生很笨，功課起初看去很難，如果他能堅忍不拔，努力做去的話，他就會感到那研究愈來愈容易，至少也不會那樣難了。

習題 29

1. 關於氣候，日本在本質上與英國無異，所以在這一點上，說日本是太平洋上的英國，確是很有理由的。

2. 這個善良的婦人喜不自勝。她要以自己的兒子爲榮也是應當的。

3. 在這期間中我遇見了一些人，憑他們的身分、名譽或地位，是很可以自命要注定成爲歷史上的有名人物的。

習題 30

1. 友情好像花瓶一樣，只要偶然發生裂痕，就很可能馬上破碎的。

2. 你想要我改變意見，就和想要太陽從西邊升起一樣。

3. 當這婦人看見雜誌沒有增加銷路，她對那編輯就有點討厭起來了，而決心要趁着還有什麼可加利用的時候，把凡是可以入手的東西最好全部撈過來。

習題 31

1. 科學的目的就在把一些事實集集攏來，以便從而引出一般的法則與結論來。

2. 學生們一見到鳥巢，就要極爲小心地不去驚動它，生怕母鳥受驚而棄之他去。

習題 32

1. 她對於每個弱小無助的東西都不禁對之發生同情；遇到受傷的小鳥或小

獸，她總要爲之痛心。

2. 想到他日後成就的偉業，我便記憶到在我叔叔家的食桌上，大家談論他的那種樣子，我不禁爲之莞爾不已。

習 題 33

1. 任何人想要理解這一對要靠法律來醫治他們的創傷的，不和夫婦的心情，就非得密切注視過他們結婚生活的數十萬個小時不可。

2. 有些人是生來就偉大的，有些人則獨力完成偉大的事業，而另外還有些人就是被人把偉大加諸其身的。

3. 爲要發覺自由是值得渴望的東西，我們首先有被剝奪自由的必要。

4. 我計劃了各種策略，以便獲得機會，使那曾經冤枉過我的人，了解他因從前所犯的罪過而受到了懲罰。

習 題 34

1. 他的天性是想要別人怎樣對他，他就怎樣對待別人。

2. 因爲我們住在路邊，所以常有旅人爲試飲我們的蘋果酒而過訪。

3. 與其有這樣的事發生，我寧願加倍地遺失金幣。

4. 一個很有教養的英國人問我，美國黑人是否不能和美國白人同在一條人行道上走路。

習 題 35

1. 下個月我們就請室內裝飾師來家裝飾。

2. 那個他受不了吧。他打算在星期二要把你趕出去，所以你還是作個準備的好。

習 題 36

1. 我看見樓下的那個女人居然搞了兩個水手坐在那裏。我不曉得她是怎樣認識他們的。

2. 什麼都不要你做，我很大方吧。

3. 我不想聽到你在孩子們前面說些下流話。

習 題 37

1. 有天早晨我一醒來，就發覺我已成名了。

2. 時間一刻一刻地流去了，而他注意一看，自己正凝視着那支小蠟燭。燭光與

晨光爭輝中愈來愈微弱了。

3. 不到一分鐘我發覺我跟那有同情心的秘書又進入了那間等待室，他要我簽定了更多的文件。

習 題 38

1. 許多的人發了財的時候，始知財富並不能從罪惡逃避，反而是一種新的更壞的形式的罪惡。

2. 格蘭斯頓才是一個高潔的人，也就是終生獻身於運用崇高的主義於國事的人。他是這樣一個完美的典型，是很容易知道的。

習 題 39

1. 我在什麼地方看見有人說過，我們要像蜜蜂利用鮮花一樣來利用書本，它盜取花的甜蜜，而並不傷害花朵。

2. 假如你想到一個什麼重要的觀念，如果你不能把它記錄下來，你的觀念就會要隨着你的死亡而消逝。即令你把它記錄下來了，也不免有蟲傷鼠患之災，常常很快就被它嚙光了。

習 題 40

1. 一個人必須養成一種習慣，在窮困的時候，依靠自己的能力，信賴自己的勇氣。

2. 沒有幾個人知道人生的幸福和性格的形成，大半是靠我們所讀的精選的書籍。

3. 我深為相信我們心靈的和平及有生的快樂，並不是看我們的地位，我們的財產，或是我們的身份而定，而是完全以我們的精神的態度為轉移的。外界的條件和它差不多沒有關係。

習 題 41

1. 逢迎者和眞朋友是很難辨別明白的，因為好像狼和狗的相似一樣，逢迎者和眞朋友也是很相似的。

2. 綿羊看去都是一樣的，不過它們之間仍然是有差別的，約翰就能夠辨別得出來。

習 題 42

1. 如果你交的朋友對你無益，你也不能對他有所幫助，你就得馬上離開他。

2. 青年朋友，我不是當面奉承，我實在寧肯對你們聊天，而不願對成年人講話。

習 題 43

1. 在某種範圍之內藝術家是可以隨心所欲地把他的生活做成一個什麼樣子的。在別的職業上，如醫生的或律師的，你要不要去就那種職業，是可以自由選擇的，不過，一度選定了，你便再沒有自由了。

2. 成就大事業的人，是要把他們的失敗作爲階梯的。(意卽以失敗爲基礎而達到成功的地步。)

習 題 44

1. 你要不是一個有用的人，忠實而誠篤的話，你就不能希望在這世間獲得成功。

2. 他努力奮鬪一步一步地做到總統的高位。

3. 在面臨反對聲中而獲得社會承認，無須要奮鬪的那種偉大的眞理是很少有的。

習 題 45

1. 他通知我那個消息，所以我能及時準備。(so that表結果)

2. 一種愚笨的想法，認爲坐馬車比騎馬要威嚴些，使得法國的貴族都停止去騎馬了。

3. 我很幸運作爲一個劇作家突然一下聲望鵲起，這樣一來我就用不着要每年寫一個長篇小說來維持我的生活了。

習 題 46

1. 不要抓住別人，要他聽完你想說的話。

2. 如果那個女人走進我的屋子，我就要打她的耳光。

3. 那醫生忿怒地抓住那少年的領子，問他爲什麼要這樣頑皮。

習 題 47

1. 世間有許多人不肯讓他們的主張在別人心中生根，而要像孩子們的揠苗助長一樣，時常把他們種的花拔出來看是不是長大了。

2. 如果一個船長眞個愛他的船的話，他就會對於船上極小的毛病都不忽視。他一定要報告這種毛病出來，並留意使它修理完好。

3. 當霍亂流行的時候，我仍然呆在這裏，滿不在乎。最要緊的就是不要吃沒有煮熟的東西，不要吃生的水果和蔬菜，或是這類的任何東西，還有要注意的事，就是飲水必須煮沸。

習 題 48

1. 他對於英國的鄉村生活一無所知；他竟認爲所有生活在鄉下的人，當然都是愚笨和悲慘的。

2. 我認爲善人的善良是當然的，當我發現善人的缺點和敗德時，我感到很有趣；當我看到惡人的善良時，我就爲之感動，而很願意對於他們的邪惡一聳我這寬大的肩膀。

3. 我是在小孩子的時候到那裏去的，一直在那裏長大。所以那裏的人並不怎樣重視我的存在。

習 題 49

1. 他說，「我對這世界什麼都不在乎，既不在乎將來的事，也不在乎人們的批評，更不在乎任何種類的確立的地位，或者甚至是文學家的聲名，那是我早年許多的夜裏睡不着覺所夢想的。

2. 當然他曾提議要送她回家，起初她是不肯接納的——她說那確是沒有需要，因爲從車站回到她父母家裏去，不過幾分鐘的路程，她獨自一人已經走慣了。

3. 我們島上的空氣曾是那般純潔芳香，我們用不着要什麼遮蓋也能露宿得很舒服的，但是我們不慣在露天底下睡覺，所以我們並未能十分欣賞頭上毫無遮蓋而躺下睡覺的那種想法。

習 題 50

1. 客人都到齊了，馬上可以開飯了。

2. 今天早上我們大家聚集一堂來毫無偏見地討論時下的問題。

3. 我的工作大體上都做完了，只剩下一些零星的事。

習 題 51

1. 誰都必然會看得出來，他們現在正遭遇到國家發展上的危機。

2. 如果我們照應當做的一樣愛我們同類的話，我們就一定要殷勤有禮地對待他們。

習 題 52

1. 你去看看那棵樹，看是不是樹上有果子成熟了。

2. 如果你不喜歡我寫的東西，你不妨去讀別人的。

習 題 53

1. 把這種討厭的歧見去掉之後，這兩個共和國之間的友好關係，便將變得毫無遺憾了，甚至當其中一個還是帝國時代就很友善的。

2. 如果你把它放在手上衡量一下，你就會感覺到這是够重量的，至於說到它的完美，那更是無懈可擊。

習 題 54

1. 如果你想要了解這個奇怪，而有幾分悲慘的故事的話，你至少對那背景得有一個印象——由四大強國來瓜分爲四的維也納，那個被破壞的可怕的都市。

2. 預定大學校長將在懇親會上致辭。

3. 「我眞個嚇倒了。她被你看中有多久了？請你告訴我，什麼時候我可以慶賀你們的訂婚呢？」

習 題 55

1. 有些作家提筆寫作，是因爲他們不得不說出一個故事，而不是因爲他們已有一個故事要說。

2. 我因生病遊蕩了一個月，所以我必得加倍努力，以補足失去的時間。

3. 她從來不表示意見，據推測是她無意見可表示。

4. 卽使從這個小車站去，也非驅車跑上好幾哩路不可。

習 題 56

1. 社會在任何時代都不會阻止一個人的成就的。

2. 如果你把能率的原理應用到你的事業上，沒有任何事物能阻止你去實現你的抱負。

習 題 57

1. 威脅利誘都不能使之作惡的人我是尊敬的。

2. 文學幫助在掙扎中的人們，來說服那叫做宇宙的怪物，要它提出一個較爲易解的啞謎。

習題 58

1. 他們看到纜索的情形大吃一驚。

2. 我是來埋葬凱撒的,不是來讚美他的。

3. 他並沒有看到他事業的成果就死去了。

4. 我們匆匆走過那裏,結果却是又回到原來的監獄裏了。

5. 如果現代的個人或現代的國民,不顧人類的尊嚴,再度追求這些瘋狂的競賽,那末我們活着時還可以看到對戰爭中每死一百萬人,就有一千萬人會要因此而死亡。

6. 許多年輕人在一度失戀之後,就感覺到人生是不值得活下去了,結果他們發現不到幾年之後,畢竟幸福是在等待着。

習題 59

1. 在我們開始調查那個之前,讓我們努力來理解我們所知道的事,以便充分加以利用,而分別主要的部分與附屬的部分。

2. 蔬菜生產不足,難以應付全國的需求。

習題 60

1. 相信他們自己的思想太過深奧,而不能明白易解地表現出來,這說法未免美過其實。這些作家不會想到原只怪他們自己的心靈未具正確的思想能力,這也是很自然的。

2. 只要我們不太傲慢而不肯自己說明或請求別人解釋,人生大部分的誤會就都會消除了。

3. 我讀過非常多的小說,在學校裏也學了不少的東西,所以對於戀愛的事懂得相當的多,但我想這只是年輕人的玩意。我以爲兒子有我這樣大的一個有鬍子的人,是不會有那種情感的。

習題 61

1. 我很快就注意到了,在她以外我所認識的人們的性質,她一人兼而有之,我很高興那些性質在她一個人身上都能發現出來。

2. 哲學家太愛作此假定,認爲事實的問題是可以用言辭上的考慮來解決的。

習題 62

1. 那樣地來偷竊東西,眞使我嚇倒了。

2. 愚笨的傢伙，居然以爲他是可以被赦的。

3. 別人猶可，你也這樣說眞是太出意外了。

習 題 63

1. 如果運輸頻繁，鐵路就能使運費更爲經濟，至於其火車的有規律，舒適和迅速，猶其餘事。

2. 事實上，所有值得稱爲大發現家的人，都曾一度被人看作夢想者，不被當作狂人看待已經很好了。

習 題 64

1. 在這種場合不曉得他要怎樣辦。

2. 一個人的家屋在何時會從他的頭上傾倒下來，是未可逆料的。

3. 他過去老是很容易興奮的，可是現在他簡直神經錯亂了；沒有法子再去說服他。

習 題 65

1. 如果有人不滿足他的職業或他的薪水的話，他只消去申請，就可以得到一塊農場，用來開始一種生產的新生活。

2. 誰會滿足於只要想望就可以得到的成功呢？

習 題 66

1. 想要由經驗而獲得利益的人，是決不認爲求助是可恥的。

2. 國魂應該高昇到使强國以欺凌弱小爲恥。

習 題 67

1. 凡是具有價值的東西都不是可以不勞而獲的。

2. 去做好一件很値得做的小事，就比發一筆大財好多了。

習 題 68

1 他不但不後悔他的過錯，反而感到得意。

2. 誠然，貧窮決非不幸，由於孜孜不息的自助，貧窮也許可能變成一種幸福的。

習 題 69

1. 他那時爲處理桌上堆積如山的工作非常忙碌。

2. 他忙於保守黨候補的競選。

習 題 70

1. 我們不應太快來責難說一切的妥協都是敗壞的道德。

2. 到家一看，我們發覺她只找了我們一會兒就放棄不再找，而獨自回家了。

習 題 71

1. 但裘蒂並不要，也不想忘記約翰。想到要跟另外一個人結婚，就和接受一個突然向她推擠過來的異教的新神一樣是決不可能的。

2. 陶樂斯不能說美，她的鼻子太高，身體矮胖；所以賈斯丁夫人除了指望她嫁給一個富裕而有適當職業的青年以外，更無奢望了。

3. 約翰比她要大八歲，多年來他很少把她放在心上，雖則他認爲當然他們畢竟是要結婚的；訂婚的證書當他還是一個小孩子，裘蒂還在襁褓的時候就簽定了。

習 題 72

1. 因爲缺乏細心使得放蕩的人爲之身敗名裂，好人亦復如此。

2. 寫作的技巧和其他藝術的技巧是同樣困難的，不過因爲誰都能讀懂或寫出一封信，使人想到任何人也能够好好地寫出一本書來。

習 題 73

1. 毀滅人的與其說是他們所犯的過錯，毋寧說是他們在犯過後的行爲擧止，卽持身之道。

2. 那警察左右雙方都沒有顧盼地從羣衆中走過去了。

3. 發生影響的與其說是時間，不如說是我們使用時間的方法。

習 題 74

1. 像我們的小島一樣如此小的範圍而能有這樣多的變化，是世界上任何地方所沒有的。

2. 在電車裏吸煙的習慣是最無禮貌的了。

3. 對於愛好文學的學生，最重要的是和批評家多多接近。

習 題 75

1. 得到別人恩惠的人是無論怎樣感謝也不爲過的。

2. 高聲朗誦與再三易稿的重要性，是無論怎樣評價也不爲過的。

3. 一本書可以比做鄰居；如果是好的，結識愈久愈好；如果是壞的，分手愈早愈好。

習 題 76

1. 正好像我們沒有經典的知識就不能了解中國文學一樣，所有學習英文的人，都應該懂得一點聖經。

2. 我們那怕是拿起一本普通的書，一份雜誌，或一張報紙，都會發見有提到聖經的地方，或引用它的字句的。

習 題 77

1. 有名的政治家沒有一個不是勤勵的人。

2. 沒有一個人家不是至少有一個病人受傷的。

3. 兩個人只要有半個鐘頭在一起的話，就一定有其中一個要顯明地凌駕另外一個的。

4. 在一年當中沒有任何一週，在世界上某個地方，不是爲英國市場而在收割小麥的。

習 題 78

1. 有少數的人要等到錢用完了才考慮到錢的事，而大多數的人，對於時間也是這樣。

2. 眞正的友誼就像健康一樣，其價値要到失去之後才知道的。

3. 生物學上主要事實的進化論，直到近代科學產生二百多年以後才建立起來。

習 題 79

1. 任何強大的東西，都不免有受到弱小侵害的危險。

2. 戰爭在物質上的破壞，無論怎樣的大，到現在也可以修復了，只要無延誤地恢復了和平。

習 題 80

1. 法律的目的不是要廢止或抑制自由，而是要保護和擴大自由。

2. 他們感到無聊煩的主要原因，是精神的單調，而不是環境的單調。

習 題 81

1. 他沒有理由要瞧不起自己，雖則他的服裝不够富麗時髦。

2. 一個靑年偶因身體有欠強壯，並不一定就是說他不適於過海上生活。

習 題 82

1. 他的好處不是因爲有任何美德，而是因爲他太懦弱不敢作惡。

2. 你的獎金不及別人的多，不是因爲你做事欠缺效率，而是因爲你缺勤太久。

習 題 83

1. 我們所誇耀的，不是因爲我們有更多的想法，而是因爲我們的想法比較更爲健全。

2. 我們之所以想要進入上流社會，並不是因爲我們想要佔有它，只是因爲想要讓人看見我們置身其間而已，我們對於上流的想法，原來也只在它的發放異彩一點上。

3. 如果我偶然注意到一個別的孩子比我知道得少，我就會推斷那並不是因爲我知道的多，而是因爲某種理由他不知道罷了。

習 題 84

1. 偉大的眞理都是明白的眞理。但不見得所有明白的眞理都是偉大的眞理。

2. 禮拜天禁止遊玩，我覺得這不失爲一個勉強可以忍受的消磨時間的方法。

習 題 85

1. 人的貧富不在他的財產而在他的品德。重視名譽過於黃金的人就是富人。

2. 這個世界上一半的不幸是由於羨慕別人，想要獲得別人的財富，而失去由享受自己現有財富的樂趣所產生的幸福而引起的。

習 題 86

1. 在長期乾旱中未死去的作物，却在接踵而來的洪水中淹沒了。

2. 我要講給你們聽，我在那種環境中怎樣獲得了大家認爲我在那方面所有的一點點能力。

3. 最可悲痛的光景之一，就是爲着大學課程而犧牲了僅有的健康和身體的一個靑年的光景。

習 題 87

1. 不到一分鐘風暴就向我們襲來了——不到兩分鐘天完全黑了，因爲這個以及迎面而來的水沫飛濺，突然變得黑暗不堪，我們同在一個漁船上都彼此看不見人了。

2. 一方面用威脅，一方面用懇求，他終於達到了他的目的。

3. 既要看護傷病的人，又要縫製沙包，有時一天縫好四打之多，她的時間便完全佔去了。

習 題 88

1. 還有，勤勉有着不但是可使身體休息，而且更重要的，是有可使心靈平安的傾向。

2. 這樣那個前途有望的青年，不但是違背了對他自己和對別人一切的諾言，而且最糟糕的是又傷透了他老父的心。

習 題 89

1. 佛洛依德對於心理學的關係，正像牛頓對於力學，達爾文對於生物學的關係一樣。

2. 他爲着安撫那狗下巴下面的神經，彎曲了他的一隻膝頭。這種鼓勵對於那狗，就像一支好的雪茄對於男人一樣。

習 題 90

1. 誰願僱用一個沒有自尊心的人？
2. 能够得到這樣一頭牛，我什麼都願給。
3. 去年的雪而今安在？

習 題 91

1. 走過一條大路時，不意遇到了你最初給我介紹了的我們那位表兄。
2. 今天他一大早起身，預備做點什麼呢？突然想到要去洗樓梯。

習 題 92

1. 我們也說不定會要和這個有趣的家庭愉快地結交的。
2. 他大概已盡了全力。

習 題 93

1. 如果他的能力可與他的脾氣相埒，他就成爲一個很好的國王了。

2. 許多成功的人如果當初他們能自由選擇職業的話，他們也許會選擇和現在使之贏得極好的地位的這種職業完全不同的另外一種職業。

習題 94

1. 鳥是人類的好朋友。如果沒有鳥，這個世界就會被昆蟲所佔領了。

2. 如果沒有甘地的話，印度的自由就要來得更遲，而且形式也要兩樣了。

3. 有愉快家庭的人們，如果不是天賦的話，他們決不會想到他們所有的室內的樂趣。

4. 如果不是他來救援，我一定早已死去了。

習題 95

1. 一個人倘可能及早地坦白承認他的無知，他便要終將由此獲益不淺。

2. 把莎翁所有的自然描寫部分，以及偶然觸及的田園的生活和外觀，完全去掉的話，將是一個何等大的損失。

3. 不要太接近他，否則他就會找你的岔子的。

習題 96

1. 從那路上一轉彎進去，我們便到了一個仙境，只消離開那裏一百碼的地方，就沒有一個人會想到有那樣一個仙境存在的。

2. 子彈射入我的左肩——只要再下去一點，我就早已進了天國。

習題 97

1. 不管怎樣死法，我都要死得像勇士之子一樣。

2. 想要立身處世的青年，不管遭遇什麼困難，都要抱定決心，非達到成功不止。

3. 不管你怎麼說，你之有今日，完全是你父親之賜。

習題 98

1. 不管那些青年人是體重一百零五磅，還是二百零五磅，他都把他們看作輕乙級（指體重在一百二十六磅與一百一十八磅之間的拳擊家）的人而教他們拳術。

2. 不管你怎樣富有經驗，怎樣能幹，你也決不能完全克服寫作技巧上的困難。等到你學會了寫作時，很可能你已經沒有東西可寫了。

習題 99

1. 無論選擇那條路，都走不到我的目的地。

2. 無論她怎樣去想，她絕對想不起來他所說的一個字。

習 題 100

1. 雖則在划船和航行上，法國人並不弱於英國人，但他們對這些運動的趣味就很有限了。

2. 如果世上果眞有什麼使靑年人比別的更要感激的事物，那就是在非常惡劣的環境下、來開始謀生時所必要的貧窮。

習 題 101

1. 無論是怎樣普通的動植物，都有研究的價値．如果理智地觀察的話，也會提供一個很有興趣的故事。

2. 不問是什麼職業，如果要想成功的話，就必須以獻身的精神去幹。

習 題 102

1. 他們要是冷淡的話，就會招致跟他們所想望的完全相反的結果也未可知，因爲等到危險來臨的時候，國內的事情就眞個要完全被壓倒了。

2. 一度你結了婚，你除了規規矩矩以外，你什麼自由也沒有了，甚至連自殺都不允許的。

習 題 103

1. 如果太陽消滅了的話，全世界就要很快地爲堅冰所封，可怕得令一切死盡滅絕。

2. 如果我們覺得吉拉德夫人的想法是對的，那末，我親愛的法官，我們就得停止你對他們的裁判，我也得停止我對他們的分析，而去追隨吉拉德夫人才對。

習 題 104

1. 如果是一個漂亮姑娘的話，他就會更加注意了。

2. 若是沒有歷史的話，作爲國民或是作爲個人，我們就無法了解我們在這世界上的存在了。

3. 他若拒絕前往就不對了。

4. 聽他說話，我們就會把他當作一個傻子。

5. 同樣的事情如果是發生在戰時，就會要造成很大的災難。

6. 如果他是生在太平盛世，他就早在文學界建立聲望了。

習 題 105

1. 一般都是懶惰的人抱怨他們沒有時間去做想做的事。

2. 從莊嚴到滑稽只有一步之差。

習題 106

1. 依照大自然的法則，溪流是要朝下面流去的，任何強而有力的人，也不可能加以阻止。

2. 工藝是必須有的技術，無論怎樣未開化的野蠻民族，也不得不學習手藝，無論怎樣文明的天才人物也不能放棄它。

習題 107

1. 躺在草上，他一直遙望天空。天色青青，他望得愈久，天就顯得愈高。

2. 我們一生的大部分都爲空想所佔據，我們愈富想像力，這種空想也愈加多采多姿，愈爲生動。

習題 108

1. 過度的耽溺，讀書也要變成一種惡習的——因爲不被一般人所確認，所以是一種更危險的惡習。

2. 我想我至今所發現的最有用的一件事，就是多麼容易說一聲「我不知道」。我從來沒有注意過這居然使得別人因此而瞧不起我。

習題 109

1. 他決不是一個看到自己的權力被人蔑視而一聲不響的人。

2. 哈斯丁好像是決不需要有何藉口的。

習題 110

1. 我覺得任何人不從華勃的辭典多多學習，是不能寫出很好的文章來的。

2. 許多食物因價錢不太便宜，窮人無法買來吃。

3. 願我們的生活能够垂範後昆。

習題 111

1. 爲着使他避免危險，我警告過他了。

2. 只要社會認爲你是大丈夫的話，不管你怎樣做，它也就不會對你怎樣要求了。

3. 他只要能把錢索回，犯罪者是誰，他都漠不關心。

習 題 112

1. 那是非常兇猛而狂暴的——使土人們畏之過於獅子。

2. 但是人的怕死是當然的。在人的一生中，隨時都不可避免地要想到死那回事，也是當然的。

習 題 113

1. 我父親去了巴黎，成爲英國駐法大使館中的律師，我眞不明白他爲什麼要去，除非是爲着追求未知的事物那也使他的兒子的我，將心身消耗殆盡的那種不安的情緒所吸引。

2. 書籍並沒有怎樣地使他着魔。每當他打開一本書時，他一定會遇到什麼東西，要控制他的思想，刺激他的想像，使他沉迷於幻想之中的，於是那天他就不再閱讀了。

習 題 114

1. 史買克在與其說是活着不如說是死了的狀態中，被抬進去，鎖在地窖中了。

2. 畢竟他並沒有傳染到那種熱病；他只是吓壞了，並未怎樣受到傷害。(意爲受驚較受傷更甚，等於說 He was frightened rather than hurt.)

3. 我注意到每當有人打電話找你，聽說你不在家時，他就要留下口信，說你一回家，就要你立刻打電話給他，因爲有要緊的事情，其實事情常是對他要緊，而不是對你要緊。

習 題 115

1. 許許多多的父母死去，留下來的孤兒，多得使孤兒院都照顧不了。

2. 我們大家都抱怨時間的短少，可是却又有許多時間我們不曉得要怎樣處理才好。

習 題 116

1. 他豈特是微笑，簡直是大笑了。

2. 他對於那結果滿意之至。

習 題 117

1. 一個沒有那船長一般鈍感的人，卽令聽到尼爾遜的話而感到迷惑，也許是會被寬恕的。

2. 學問在太多的場合只是普通常識的陪襯物，眞知灼見的代用品。書籍被當

作觀看大自然的眼鏡時，常加以利用的時候較少，反而被當作從視力微弱及氣質懶惰的人們，遮斷大自然那種強烈的光線和不斷變化的光景的目障，加以利用的時候較多。

習 題 118

1. 誰也不想在冬天去遊白峯，更沒有人願意在那種季節中去住在那裏。
2. 如果崇拜一顆星也有什麽意義的話，那末，崇拜英雄的意義就大得多了。

習 題 119

1. 我問她要不要叫一部計程車。她回答說，「不要，我寧肯走路，天氣太好了。」
2. 與其勸你把愛給與那個男人，我寧肯在冬天把那小金絲雀放到公園裏去。

習 題 120

1. 小偷一看到那個，馬上跳起來逃走了。
2. 他剛動身天就變得陰暗了，隨即又下起雨來了。
3. 門開處狗就衝向箱子那地方去了。
4. 一個人一旦開始愛他的工作，便是他進步的開端。

習 題 121

1. 他心情一點也不沉着地在人羣中來去地走着。
2. 我相信科學不過是有訓練和有組織的常識罷了。
3. 超過一定程度的體力勞動，是痛苦得可怕的，而體力勞動經常是使人生幾乎不能忍受地在過度地進行着。

習 題 122

1. 在這個場合名聲不如實際。(名不符實)
2. 睡眠是不可能的。因爲卽令他們斗膽留宿，他們也知道睡在地上，差不多一定會死的。
3. 把一種新的文明加在一種舊的文化之上，自然是一種艱鉅的事業，而日本從事於此是可佩服的。要實現這個成就而不損失任何一種文明的優點，那簡直是奇跡。

習 題 123

1. 他在那裏聽到很多的人聲，比平常更爲吵鬧。

2. 如果我所經歷的世路是一條達到成功的坦途，我也就無異議；如果是一條艱難的路，無論怎樣險阻，我都要使它化爲平易而達到我的目的。

3. 他無論怎樣聰明，都不免有錯。(智者千慮必有一失。)

習 題 124

1. 那汽車跑得很快。

2. 我希望你的眼睛永遠是那樣炯炯有光，因爲那有男子氣概。

習 題 125

1. 使他大驚和悲傷的，是他看見他那親愛的老母病重在牀，面色蒼白，幾乎沒有知覺了。

2. 寫作的通病之一，是短簡的字一樣行的時候，偏要用長的多音節的字。卽使是最偉大的作家，也常犯這毛病，使之蒙羞。

習 題 126

1. 看打足球而感到高興的人，單這一點就比不看的人高出一籌。

2. 自有歷史以來，人們常常對大自然的現象具有一些知識；像埃及人和中國人很久以前就有高度的文化，學得了很多的東西，西方人至今還不知道的他們大概早知道了。

3. 就那些對音樂沒有欣賞能力的人們來說，要他們學習音樂，簡直是浪費時間與金錢。

4. 正如歷史要能在現代的舞臺上投以一線光明才有用處一樣，過去的文學也只有當它對今日有意義的時候才有價值。

習 題 127

1. 只有他們有權改變這個，而且只能用一種特殊的方法。

2. 德國學者雖具有飲食和怠惰的惡習，却能長時間從事研究工作，而且直到高齡不衰，我盡力想要找出一個理由來，可是徒勞無功。

習 題 128

1. 幾乎沒有人要懷疑科學使現代對一般教育的要求加速了，同時使得教育本身更有效果。

2. 在高貴的社交界中做慣了當主人的角色，他接觸到的所有的人都爲他所吸引而受其支配；他待人接物的態度，旣有魅力，而又威嚴；而他那種異常的冷靜，在

這個半瘋狂的社會中，給了他另外一種特徵。

習 題 129

1. 他們做的有些事情，是因爲他們是人，有些事情是因爲他們是被誤導的人，由錯誤而不辨是非的人。

2. 這個方案和說明我們感情的起源的普通方法有所不同，因爲它把我們感情中的個人的乃至自私的東西，看做時間與習慣的產物，在這一點上是有不同的。

習 題 130

1. 誠然古代陸路旅行是困難的，旣無聊賴而又不舒服，不過却比較安全。

2. 生在貴族之家的人們，誠然有許多利益，不過爲那些利益所付出的代價也很高。

習 題 131

1. 他沒有被培養成爲軍人，也沒有想做軍人的傾向。

2. 新年立下的決心，就決心而論當然是很好的，單是明白寫在紙上，如果不是銘刻在心，付諸實行的話也是沒有用的。

3. 機智的人易於想像作爲一個機智的人是令人愉快的。

習 題 132

1. 藏書萬卷是一回事，能夠賢明地加以利用又是另外一回事。

2. 在人前是一套，在他背後又是一套，這種作法再危險也沒有了。

習 題 133

1. 如果你想要有一個朋友，禮查·史狄爾就正好做你的朋友。

2. 殺死那怪物的人就是我呀。

3. 我認出那個劇界明星，原來是我的一個老朋友。

習 題 134

1. 他走了很遠才想起那本書來。

2. 他們沒有走到好遠，就看到了一條大熊憤怒地朝向他們而來。(make toward 朝向。)

第 三 編

疑難句法及文章譯例

壹　英文類似句辨異

習　題

1. (a) 我在街上遇到一個年輕的男人。
   (b) 我在街上遇到一個年輕的女人。
   註　(b) 句中說的 a young person, 普通的意思多指年輕的女性而言，如 There's a young person to see you. (有一個年輕的女人要會你。)
2. (a) 他來到這城裏了。
   (b) 他回到這城裏了。
   註　(a) 句中的「他」對這城是一個陌生人，而 (b)句中的「他」，原是這城裏的人，或是對這城非常熟悉的人。
3. (a) 等我們吃飯的時候，我才來聽取你的意見吧。
   (b) 現在我們一面吃飯，我一面就來聽取你的意見吧。
   註　(a) 句是在開始吃飯以前說的。
4. (a) 他們要來。
   (b) 他們就要來了。
   註　(b) 是表示時間的迫切。
5. (a) 他似乎頗為遲鈍。
   (b) 他也許像是有一點兒遲鈍的樣子。
   註　(b) 句說得婉曲多了。
6. (a) 他們一直住在星洲。
   (b) 他們目下住在星洲。
   註　(a) 表示經常的居住，(b) 則有暫時的感覺，或根本是暫時性的，如我們從外地到星洲觀光，住在旅館中，則說 I am living in the hotel. 又 live

一個動詞有「居住」和「生活」二義，如云 Are your parents living?（你父母都健在嗎？）便是「生活」的意思，這句話一定要用現在分詞，不可說成 Do your parents live?

7. (a) 他推開了門。
   (b) 他試圖把門推開。
   注 英文動詞有他動與自動之分，同一動詞由他動變成自動時，意義常有改變，多是變得空虛而不實在了。如他動詞說 A cat *catches* mice.（貓抓老鼠。）自動詞說 A drowning man will *catch at* a straw.（將溺的人那怕是一根草也要去抓住求救。）

8. (a) 在一個晴天他出門了。
   (b) 有一天他出門了。
   注 (b) 句中的 fine 是一個虛字，沒有什麼意思的。說 one fine day 或 one fine morning 等句，多半用作一種意外事件或毋妄之災時的前奏，可能由法文 un beau jour 及 un beau matin (=in opinement 即英文說的 unexpectedly 意外地）直接譯成英文的。

9. (a) 她徹夜不睡坐待她丈夫回家。
   (b) 她徹夜不睡來看護她的丈夫。
   注 (a) 句的 sit up for，意爲「不睡來等待」，(b) 句的 sit up with，意爲「不睡來看護」。

10. (a) 我們確知人是要死的。
    (b) 我們確知那人是死了。
    注 (a) 句中的 that 是連詞，man 是指人類，而 (b) 句中的 that 是形容詞。

11. (a) 約翰不安的原因是考試落第。
    (b) 約翰的不安考試落第也是原因之一。
    注 (a) 意爲 His failure was the specific case. (b) 意爲 His failure was one of the causes—there are others. His poor health might be another.

12. (a) 首相在電視上出現。
    (b) 首相的演詞由電視加以廣播。
    注 參考：The symphony was broadcast *on* (or *over*) the radio.（交

聲樂由無線電廣播。）注意：在 television 前不要冠詞。

13. (a) 這是一個可信的故事。

(b) 這是一個可稱讚的成就。

注 credible＝believable. creditable＝praiseworthy.

14. (a) 他不是一個教師。

(b) 他不是一個好教師。

注 not a 比 no 的語氣要重些，(a) 句意爲「他不是以教書爲業的，也許是商人，也許是公務員，總之是做別的事情的人。」(b) 句意爲「縱然他現在以授徒爲業，可是他學問不好，教授無方，或是品行欠佳，不配做人師表。」類例如 He is not a businessman. (＝a statement of fact: the man's profession is not business). He is no businessman. (＝an ironical statement. The man may or may not be a businessman. Whether he is or not, he certainly is unskillful in business matters)。同樣 He is not a gentleman. (＝He is a workman 他是工人或是下等人)。He is no gentleman. (＝He has bad manners. 他的舉止粗鄙不像上等人)。He is not a lawyer. (＝that is, not his profession. 他的職業不是律師)。He is no lawyer. (＝not an efficient lawyer. 他不是能幹的律師)。

15. (a) 你想向我要求什麼？

(b) 你想和我接洽什麼？

注 (a) want something from somebody, 欲從某人得到某物。(b) want something with somebody, 欲向某人接洽某事。

16. (a) 他的書至多只有十本。

(b) 他的書不少於十本。

注 no less than＝as many as (至多，剛够)。not less than＝as many more (不少或多過)。同樣的還有 no better than＝as bad as, 例如 He is no better than a beggar. (他和乞丐一樣), not better than ＝perhaps worse than, 例如 He is not better than a beggar. (他不比乞丐好，也許比之更壞)。

17. (a) 家裏有電報來給我了。

(b) 家裏有電報來要我回去。

注 如果換成 active voice，則 (a) 便成 wire to me (打電報給我)，而 (b)便成 wire for me (電促我歸)。for = to get.

18. (a) 這是遠勝過林語堂的一種幽默。
    (b) 這是及不上林語堂的一種幽默。

19. (a) 他自信一定成功。
    (b) 我想他一定成功。

20. (a) 我們中間沒有幾個人知道那眞相的。
    (b) 我們中間只有幾個人知道那眞相的。
    (c) 我們中間知道那眞相的人不少。

注 few 意爲「差不多沒有」，無的成分多於有的成分。a few 意爲「只有二、三人」，有的成分多於無的成分。not a few 意爲「不少」即有很多。以上均係表數的，如表量則用 little, a little, not a little. 義與上同。

21. (a) 反之，他什麼也沒有說。
    (b) 反對的話他一句也沒有說。

注 on the contrary 意爲「反之」，副詞片語。to the contrary 意爲「與之相反的」，形容詞片語。

22. (a) 可惜你沒有去。
    (b) 幸虧你沒有去。

注 It is a pity = I regret. 遺憾。It is a mercy = I rejoice. 幸喜。

23. (a) 事竟如此使我覺得驚愕。
    (b) 我亟欲知道事情何以會這樣。

注 wonder that = be amazed at, 覺得驚愕，感到駭異。wonder + 疑問詞 = be curious about; be anxious to learn, 亟想知道。

24. (a) 那也許可以做。
    (b) 那不一定不能做。

注 (a) 含有 It is possible, (b) 含有 It is not impossible 的意味。might 是假想。

25. (a) 我希望我有他那樣富有。
    (b) 我希望成爲他那樣的富人。

注 (a) 在 wish 後接假設語氣，這是對現在的事實相反的假設，無法辦到的事。(b) 表示未來的願望，並不一定是做不到的事。

26. (a) 讓我們修理家園。
(b) 讓我們回家去吧。
注 repair 作他動詞用時，意爲「修理」，作自動詞用時，意爲「往（某處）」，「赴」=go.

27. (a) 他寫了一封信給我。
(b) 他替我寫了一封信。
注 for=in place of，代爲。

28. (a) 他投骨於犬。
(b) 他投犬以骨。
注 (a) 是好意，以骨頭給狗吃。(b) 是敵意，以骨頭來打狗。

29. (a) 燈放在桌子上面。
(b) 燈懸在桌子上空。

30. (a) 他擁有大宗財產。
(b) 他抱有危險思想。
注 is possessed of=has，擁有。is possessed with=is controlled by，受迷住，爲其所乘。

31. (a) 我想他不會有罪。
(b) 我覺得他好像有罪。
注 doubt if，意爲「難信」，「好像沒有」。suspect that，意爲「可疑」，「好像有」。suspect=imagine to be.

32. (a) 他老是來干涉我的事。
(b) 他老是來妨礙我的事。
注 interfere in，干涉。interfere with，妨害。

33. (a) 他以學者之名混過去了。
(b) 人皆視彼爲學者。
注 pass by=be currently known by a name of，以……之名混過。pass for=be accepted as; be thought of，被認爲，被視爲。他例如 His name is Wang but he passes by the name of Li.（人皆知其姓李，其實他是姓王。）Many a coward passed for a hero.（懦夫而充作勇士者比比皆是。）

34. (a) 空氣由氧和氮組成。

(b) 幸福存於滿足之中。

(c) 他的言行一致。

注 consist of＝be composed of 由……而組成。consist in＝lie in＝is in, 在, 存於……之中。consist with＝be in accordance with, 與……一致。

35. (a) 他打算說什麼？

(b) 他預定要說的是什麼？

注 be about to＝be going to, 爲較文言的說法。be to, 表示預定。

36. (a) 我看見那裏有很多的人。

(b) 我看見那裏有很多大人物。

注 a great many 後接複數名詞。many a great 後接單數名詞。

37. (a) 我沒有聽見她歌唱過。

(b) 她作的歌我沒有聽見人唱過。

注 (a) 句中的 her 爲賓語, sing 爲原形不定詞所構成的賓格補語。(b) 句中的 her 爲所有格, song 爲名詞, her 的賓語。

38. (a) 我們租的船以時間計算。

(b) 我們只租了一小時的船。

39. (a) 誰的兄弟帶你去遊公園的？

(b) 你帶誰的兄弟去遊公園的？

注 (a) 句的主語爲 brothers, (b) 句的主語爲 you.

40. (a) 那些寶石有許多被盜。

(b) 那些寶石的大部分被盜。

41. (a) 他被視爲天才。

(b) 他被崇爲天才。

注 look upon as＝regard as, 視爲。look up to as＝respect as, 作爲……而崇仰。

42. (a) 我必得注意那件事。

(b) 我必得調查那件事。

注 look to＝attend to, 注意, 照顧。look into＝investigate, 調查。

43. (a) 我並不想出洋。

(b) 我不反對出洋。

注 "not care+to-Infinitive"=not like+to-Infinitive, 不想做。"not mind+Gerund"=have no objection to+Gerund, 不反對。

44. (a) 明天會有一些客人來。
(b) 明天我要請一些客人來。
注 (a) 是無意志的，(b) 是有意志的。

45. (a) 那島周圍五哩。
(b) 那島直徑五哩。
注 around=in circumference, 周圍。across=in diameter, 直徑。

46. (a) 我學過五年的英文。
(b) 我從五年前起開始學英文。
注 (a) 意爲到現在爲止我一共學了五年。(b) 意爲從五年前開始學起，至今未停，一直在學。

47. (a) 他到過紐約。
(b) 他去了紐約。
注 (a) have been=have gone somewhere and come back 或 have come and gone away again, 例如 I have been to (=visited) Paris three times. (我到過巴黎三次。) (b) =he is now in New York or on the way there. 他已去了或正在去的途中。

48. (a) 他們在花園裏玩耍。
(b) 他們說這話只是戲言。
注 at play, 遊戲，嬉戲。in play, 玩笑，戲謔。

49. (a) 他至急地做了那個。
(b) 他慌忙地做了那個。
注 in haste, 迅速，趕忙，急遽。in a hurry, 匆匆，倉促，慌忙。英文的 in a hurry 另外還有兩種慣用的說法 (collq.): (1) =easily (容易地)，例如: You won't find a better specimen than that in a hurry. (你一下子不容易找到更好的標本。) (2) =willingly (願意地)，例如: I shan't ask him to dinner again in a hurry. (我不會願意再請他吃飯的。)

50. (a) 我沒有什麼可寫的。
(b) 我沒有筆寫。

(c) 我沒有紙寫。

注 (a) write 爲他動詞, nothing 爲其賓語。(b) (c) write 爲自動詞, nothing 仍爲賓語。

51. (a) 沒有什麼可看的。

(b) 看不見什麼。

注 (a) 意爲 nothing worth seeing. (b) 意爲 nothing visible.

52. (a) 這樣的人很難得尋獲。

(b) 這樣的人差不多不能够找到。

53. (a) 我懸念其結果。

(b) 我亟欲知其結果。

注 anxious about 「懸念」, 「憂慮」。anxious + Infinitive, 意爲「切望」, 「渴望」。

54. (a) 我未嘗注意到他。

(b) 我並未把他放在眼下。

注 (a) 是無意的, (b) 是有意的。

55. (a) 她在街上遇見了一個朋友。

(b) 她在街上遇見一樁事故。

注 meet with = come across; experience, 是一個自動詞, 所以附有介詞, 普通對遇見事物而言, 卽遭遇, 如云 meet with fortune. (success, failure, obstruction, kindness, rebuff, etc.)。但對人則通常是用他動詞, 所以不要附加介詞, 卽可直接接賓語, 除非意外地遇見什麼人時才用自動詞, 如 Such a man is rarely to be met with. (這樣的人眞是少見。)

56. (a) 此中有無困難呢？

(b) 此中有點困難吧？

注 (a) 是在完全不知有無困難時問的。(b) 是在認爲有點困難時問的。

57. (a) 我和他一樣很欽佩她。

(b) 我很欽佩她, 也很欽佩他。

58. (a) 我想在這個月底付款。

(b) 我想經過一個月再付款。

59. (a) 我到達時還未開會。(正要開會)

(b) 我到達時正開會。(剛剛開會)

注 in time, 意爲「及時」, 時間比規定的略早, on time, 意爲「準時」, 再遲則來不及了。如火車準時開行, 則說 The train leaves exactly on time. 還有 in time 除 not late;early enough 的含義外, 又有 sooner or later; after the passing of an indefinite period of time, 例如 You will learn how to do it in time. (你慢慢就會知道做的。)

60. (a) 我想這不會是眞的。

(b) 我看這恐怕不會是眞的。

貳 常易譯錯的文句

習 題

I. 中 譯 英

1. What way shall I take to get to the park? (正)

注 How shall I go 是問怎樣去法, 如坐計程汽車去, 坐公共汽車去, 或坐三輪車去之類。問路應說 What way 才得。

2. The lecture begins at two o'clock on Friday. (正)

The lecture starts at two o'clock on Friday. (正)

3. The scenery of China is very fine. (正)

注 scenery 是集合名詞, 不可用複數。

4. They have no houses to live in. (正)

5. He likes Hemingway better than Faulkner. (正)

6. This watch wants repairing. (正)

7. The family goes to church at 9 o'clock. (正)

注 把全家的人看做一個整體, 即一家人, 應該採用單數動詞。「去做禮拜」, 英文應說 go to church, 如果加了冠詞說成 go to the church, 便不是去做禮拜, 而只是去參觀禮拜堂的建築。同樣「上學讀書」是 go to school, 如說 go to the school, 便是指校舍而言, 與讀書無關。

8. I was quite well that year, but ill the year before. (正)

9. It is impossible to raise the sunken ship. (正)

注 sunk 只能作敍述用法, 要 sunken 才可作限定用法。

10. Come in the morning instead of in the evening. (正)

11. His daughter married a rich man. (正)

His daughter was married to a rich man. (正)

註　中國話的「嫁」或「娶」，英文都是 marry。此外「主婚」也是 marry，例如 She is married to a foreigner. (她嫁給一個外國人。) He married a wife last year. (他在去年娶了妻。) He has been married two years. (他結婚兩年了。) He wished to marry his daughter to a peer. (他希望把女兒嫁一個貴族。) The clergyman married Mary Jones to John Smith. (牧師主持瑪利和約翰的婚禮。)

12. Why are you at home on such a fine day? (正)

Why are you at home in such fine weather? (正)

13. Make haste, or you will be behind time. (正)

註　命令句接順意的說法用 and，接逆意的說法用 or.

14. The night is falling and the road is coming to an end. (正)

註　我們說的「日」英文應譯作「夜」。中文的「日暮」除譯作 The night is falling 外，又可譯成 the night is closing in，或 night is coming [on]，或 it is getting dark。中文的「途窮」，除如上照字面譯出的以外，又可譯爲 no road ahead，或意譯爲 straitened, in poor circumstances 等。

15. I have been ill for a week. (正)

I have been ill since last Monday. (正)

註　ago 只能用於有過去動詞的句中，它不能與現在完成時態同用。

16. Do you remember all the interesting stories you read when you were a boy? (正)

註　副詞子句應置於它所修飾的動詞附近。這句中的副詞子句 when you were a boy，是修飾動詞 read 的，所以應緊接在 read 之後。

17. Looking out of our windshield, we could see the pagoda in the distance. (正)

18. The ears of a hare are longer than those of a cat. (正)

19. Have you been to America? (正)

註　have gone 不能用於第一人稱和第二人稱，只能用於第三人稱，意爲「去了」。

20. He has been here once or twice. (正)
21. I saw him yesterday. (正)
注 現在完成時態不能與表過去的字連用。
22. I found the food very good, and enjoyed eating it. (正)
23. I think of going home very soon. (正)
I think I will go home very soon. (正)
24. A man who is unable to write a letter, is incapable of holding an office of such importance. (正)
25. He seems to have an aversion to speaking the truth. (正)
26. The Chinese are a hard-working and industrious people. (正)
27. May I use your telephone? (正)
28. He was elected a councilman. (正)
注 總統,市長,主席等獨一無二的職位,不用冠詞,其他如議員等,同樣的職位有許多名存在,故必須加不定冠詞,以示其中之一。
29. Mr. Wong returned to Singappore. (正)
Mr. Wong went back to Singapore. (正)
30. This report must be presented by the 6th of next month. (正)
31. Please remind me to give it back. (正)
Please remind me to return it. (正)
32. I ordered ten books from New York. (正)
33. I'm sure I can make myself understood in English. (正)
34. I'm sure I can make you understand what I mean. (正)
35. The motor car ran in the direction of the park. (正)
The motor car ran towards the park. (正)
36. I place no reliance upon his honesty. (正)
I have no confidence in his honesty. (正)
37. He entrusted a large sum of money to me. (正)
He entrusted me with a large sum of money. (正)
注 "entrust+物+to+人" 或 "entrust+人+with+物"。
38. Children are always in some mischief or other. (正)
Children are always in one mischief or another. (正)
39. I sympathize deeply with him in his sorrow. (正)

注　"sympathize＋with＋人＋in＋事"。

40. He apologized to me for his mistake. (正)

注　"apologize＋to＋人＋for＋事"。

41. Somebody said so, but I forgot who it was. (正)

42. He has no other desire than to make a fortune. (正)

He has no desire but to make a fortune. (正)

43. Her dress does not conform with the fashion. (正)

注　conform to (custom), 從(俗), 依照(習慣), 是有意志的, 至於 conform with (custom), (與習慣)相合, 是無意志的。例如 Conform to the custom of the land, 入國從俗。Your conduct does not conform with the custom. 你的行爲不合習慣。

44. As you know, life is often compared to a voyage. (正)

注　同種類的東西相比用 compare with, 不同種類的東西相比, 則要用 compare to, 例句中 life 與 voyage 完全不同種類, 故用 compare to 方合, 再看下例 Famous as she is, she cannot be compared with him as a writer of tragedies. (她雖有名, 但作爲一個悲劇作者是不能和他相比的。)

45. Her expenditures do not correspond to her income. (正)

注　correspond to (something), 相當, 相稱, 相配。correspond with (each other), 一致, 符合。例如 The punishment should correspond to the offence. (刑罰應與犯罪相當。) This house exactly corresponds with my needs. (這房子正符合我的需要。) 又 correspond with, 可作通信解, 如 We have corresponded with each other for several years. (我們通信有好幾年了。)

46. I condoled with him on his father's death. (正)

注　"condole＋with＋人＋on＋事"。

47. How many students came? (正)

注　問句中有了疑問詞時, 就不要再加 do 了。

48. These are the people who, they say, are fools. (正)

These are the people whom they call fools. (正)

49. Taiwan is much larger than Singapore. (正)

注　very 只能用於形容詞的原級, 如係比較級則要用 much, far, by far

the 等字樣。

50. It takes me five days to return home by steamer. (正)

51. He entered at the back door. (正)

He came in at the back door. (正)

注 「出去」也要說 go out at the door.

52. The old man had his son die. (正)

注 "have+物+過去分詞", 如 have the box removed. 又 "have+人+原形不定詞", 如 have the servant remove the box".

53. This sewing machine is of Chinese make. (正)

注 說何國製造而用 make 時, 必須帶有 of 的字樣, 如 of Chinese (English, American, Japanese) make, 但如用 made 時則說 Chinese made 或 made in China, 不要再加 of, 如說 manufacture 也是要有 of 的, 如 of Chinese manufacture (中國製造)。

54. I never saw so tall a man before. (正)

I never saw such a tall man before. (正)

注 用 so 或 such 時冠詞的位置不同, 應加注意。

55. He has the good sense to quit when he found the thing too difficult to do. (正)

注 用 ability 也是一樣, 如 He has the ability to speak English clearly.

56. Marco Polo was born in 1254 into a Venetian merchant family.(正)

注 誕生於什麼人家, 即俗稱投生於某家, 故英文要用 into, 不用 at. 他例如 No man is born into this world whose work is not born with him. (James Russel Lowell)。如果是指由什麼人即父母而生, 則要用 of, 例如 He was born of Chinese parents (of humble parentage, of poor fisherfolk in Holland 等)。但家庭在這種意義之下卽可用 of, 例如 He was born of a wealthy (noble, good) family. 又 But in every child born of man lurks some of greatness—waiting for the food. (H. G. Wells) (但是每個孩子都潛伏着有將來偉大的種子只等待加以培養。) 生於什麼人家, 有時又可譯成 to 字, 例如 She was born to the purple; diamonds suited her. (她生於貴族之家, 所以鑽石是適合她的。) 這個 to 是指的對象, 如 Two children

were born to them. (他們生有兩個孩子。) Mark Twain was born to Samuel Langhorne Clemens, in Florida, Mo. November 30, 1835. (馬克吐溫以1835年十一月三十日，於米蘇里州佛羅利達市，作爲桑米郎洪克來門斯的兒子而出生的。)

57. He has taken the vase off the table. (正)
58. The preface to "A Short History of China" is a short history of China. (正)
59. The early education in our country grows very rapidly. (正)
60. It is due to the outstanding professors on the various faculties that the University has won a worldwide fame. (正)

II. 英 譯 中

1. 我的皮鞋穿破了。(正)

注 這句話的意思是「因爲穿得太久的結果，破爛不堪。」(My shoes are badly worn as the result of long wear.) 他例如 He was plainly the worse for drink. (顯明地他是喝醉了酒。) I am none the worse for a single failure. (一度失敗我並不灰心。)

2. 大家聽了他說的話都感憤怒。(正)

注 原意爲馬羈的 bridle 一字，雖引申可作「控制」解，如 Try to bridle your temper. (設法控制你的脾氣。)但用作自動詞時，就作「昂首」(表示憤怒、傲慢或輕視)解，如 bridle up, bridle with anger, bridle at somebody's remarks 等。例如 She bridles at the least slight. (她略爲受到一點藐視就要昂首發怒。)

3. 學英文要盡力避免講理論而不務實際。(正)

注 形容詞的 shy 普通作「羞怯的」解，如 I am shy of doing it. (我怕作此事。) 又可作「畏縮的」解，如 The boatmen were shy of the rapids. (船夫畏懼險灘。)但此字因在動詞 fight 後，就有「避開」，「敬遠」(avoid, keep aloof from) 之意。

4. 寧肯割斷舌不願塞住口的不止是婦女與法國人而已。(正)

注 作「咬」字解的 bite，過去式爲 bit，過去分詞爲 bitten，但作「裝馬口鐵」，「抑制」，「約束」解的 bit，過去和過去分詞都是 bitted。這個